

"INTER FOLIA FRUCTUS."

THE
CLARENDON
HISTORICAL SOCIETY'S
REPRINTS.

SERIES II. 1884—86.

"History is but the unrolled Scroll of Prophecy."

—JAMES A. GARFIELD.

EDINBURGH:
PRIVATELY PRINTED FOR THE SOCIETY.

*This edition is limited to 120 large paper, and 400 small paper copies,
for Subscribers only.*



INDEX.

	PAGE
I. The Journal of King Edward VI., - - - -	I
II. Lex Talionis (1647), - - - -	87
III. Gallienus Redivivus (The Massacre of Glencoe), 1695 -	99
IV. The Declarations concerning the Birth of the Prince of Wales (1688), - - - -	129
V. Memoirs of the Chevalier de St. George (1712), - -	159
VI. The Remarkable Meeting at Windsor in the year 1648, -	211
VII. A Dialogue between a Whig and a Jacobite (1716), -	225
VIII. The Execution of Mary, Queen of Scots (1586), -	251
IX. Twenty Lookes over all the Roundheads (1643), -	263
X. Memoirs of George Leyburn (1722), - - - -	273
XI. The Character of a Modern Whig (1681), - - -	355
XII. A Letter from General Monck and his Army to the Par- liament (1659), - - - -	363

SUPPLEMENT.

Notes descriptive of a Curious Pack of Cavalier Playing Cards, (<i>circa</i> 1660), by Edmund Goldsmid, F.R.H.S., F.S.A., (Scot.) -	373
[Illustrated with thirteen copper-plates, containing the 52 Cards in FACSIMILE.]	



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

<http://www.archive.org/details/s2clarendonhisto00claruoft>

"INTER FOLIA FRUCTUS."

The Journal of King
Edward's Reign,
written with his own hand.

From the Original in the Cotton Library.
(Nero. c. 10.)

~~~~~  
"History is but the unrolled scroll of Prophecy."  
JAMES A. GARFIELD.  
~~~~~

PRIVATELY PRINTED
FOR THE CLARENDON HISTORICAL SOCIETY.
1884.

*This Edition is limited to 120 large paper and 400 small paper copies,
issued only to members.*



The Journal of King Edward's Reign.*



THE Year of our Lord 1537, was a Prince born to King *Henry* the 8th, by *Jane Seimour* then Queen; who within few days after the Birth of her Son, died, and was buried at the Castle of *Windsor*. This Child was Christned by the Duke of *Norfolk*, the Duke of *Suffolk*, and the Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*. Afterwards was brought up till he came to six Years old among the Women. At the sixth Year of his Age he was brought up in Learning by Master Doctor *Cox*, who was after his Almoner, and *John Cheeke* Master of Arts, two well-learned Men, who sought to bring him up in learning of Tongues, of the Scripture, of Philosophy, and all Liberal Sciences. Also *John Bellmaine* Frenchman, did teach him the *French* Language. The tenth Year not yet ended, it was appointed he should be created Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwal*, and Count Palatine of *Chester*: At which time, being the Year of our Lord 1547, the said King died of a Dropsie as it was thought. After whose death incontinent came *Edward* Earl of *Hartford*, and Sir *Anthony Brown* Master of the Horse, to convoy this Prince to *Enfield*, where the Earl of *Hartford* declared to him, and his younger Sister *Elizabeth*, the Death of their Father.

Here he begins anew again.

After the Death of King *Henry* the 8th, his Son *Edward*, Prince of *Wales*, was come to at *Hartford*, by the Earl of *Hartford*, and Sir *Anthony Brown* Master of the Horse; for whom before was made great preparation that he might be created Prince of *Wales*, and after-

* The original is in the British Museum.

ward was brought to *Enfield*, where the Death of his Father was first shewed him ; and the same day the Death of his Father was shewed in *London*, where was great lamentation and weeping : and suddenly he proclaimed King. The next day, being the of * He was brought to the *Tower of London*, where he tarried the space of three weeks ; and in the mean season the Council sat every day for the performance of the Will, and at length thought best that the Earl of *Hartford*, should be made Duke of *Somerſet*, Sir *Thomas Scimour* Lord *Sudley*, the Earl of *Effex* Marquess of *Northampton*, and divers Knights should be made Barons, as the Lord *Sheffield*, with divers others. Also they thought best to chuse the Duke of *Somerſet* to be Protector of the Realm, and Governour of the King's Person during his Minority ; to which all the Gentlemen and Lords did agree, because he was the King's Uncle on his Mothers ſide. Also in this time the late King was buried at *Windsor* with much ſolemnity, and the Officers broke their Staves, hurling them into the Grave ; but they were reſtored to them again when they came to the *Tower*. The Lord *Lisle* was made Earl of *Warwick*, and the Lord Great Chamberlainſhip was given to him ; and the Lord *Sudley* made Admiral of *England* : all theſe things were done, the King being in the *Tower*. Afterwards all things being prepared for the Coronation, the King being then but nine Years old, paſſed through the City of *London*, as heretofore hath been uſed, and came to the Palace of *Weſtminſter* ; and the next day came into *Weſtminſter-Hall*. And it was asked the People, Whether they would have him to be their King ? Who answered ; Yea, yea : Then he was crowned King of *England*, *France*, and *Ireland*, by the Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury*, and all the reſt of the Clergy and Nobles ; and Anointed, with all ſuch Ceremonies as were accuſtomed, and took his Oath, and gave a General Pardon, and ſo was brought to the Hall to Dinner on Shrove-ſunday, where he ſat with the Crown on his Head, with the Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury*, and the Lord Protector ; and all the Lords ſat at Boards in the Hall beneath, and the Lord Marſhal's Deputy, (for my Lord of *Somerſet* was Lord Marſhal) rode about the Hall to make room ; then came in Sir *John Dimock* Champion, and made his Challenge, and ſo the King drank to him, and he had the Cup. At night the King returned to his Palace at *Weſtminſter*, where there was Juſts and Barriers ; and afterward Order was taken for all his Servants being with his Father, and being with the Prince, and the Ordinary and Unordinary were appointed. In the mean ſeaſon Sir

* Blank in original.

Andrew Dudley, Brother to my Lord of *Warwick*, being in the *Paunfie*, met with the *Lion*, a principal Ship of *Scotland*, which thought to take the *Paunfie* without resistance ; but the *Paunfie* approached her, and she shot, but at length they came very near, and then the *Paunfie* shooting off all one side, burst all the overlop of the *Lion*, and all her Tackling, and at length boarded her and took her ; but in the return, by negligence, she was lost at *Harwich-Haven*, with almost all her Men.

In the month of * *May* died the French King called *Francis*, and his Son called *Henry*, was proclaimed King. There came also out of *Scotland* an Ambassador, but brought nothing to pass, and an Army was prepared to go into *Scotland*. Certain Injunctions were set forth, which took away divers Ceremonies, and Commissions sent to take down Images, and certain Homilies were set forth to be read in the Church. Dr. *Smith* of *Oxford* recanted at *Pauls* certain Opinions of the Mefs, and that Christ was not according to the Order of *Melchisedeck*. The Lord *Seimour* of *Sudley* married the Queen, whose name was *Katherine*, with which Marriage the Lord Protector was much offended.

There was great preparation made to go into *Scotland*, and the Lord Protector, the Earl of *Warwick*, the Lord *Dacres*, the Lord *Gray*, and Mr. *Brian*, went with a great number of Nobles and Gentlemen to *Barwick* ; where the first day after his coming, he mustered all his Company, which were to the number of 13000 Footmen, and 5000 Horsemen. The next day he marched on into *Scotland*, and so passed the *Pease* ; then he burnt two Castles in *Scotland*, and so passed a streight of a Bridg, where 300 Scots Light-Horsemen set upon him behind him, who were discomfited. So he passed to *Musselburgh*, where the first day after he came, he went up to the Hill, and saw the Scots, thinking them, as they were indeed at least, 36000 Men ; and my Lord of *Warwick* was almost taken, chasing the Earl of *Huntley*, by an Ambush, but he was rescued by one *Bertivell*, with twelve Hagbutters on Horseback, and the Ambush ran away.

The 10th day of September, the Lord Protector thought to get the Hill, which the Scots seeing, passed the Bridg over the River at *Musselburgh*, and strove for the higher Ground, and almost got it ; but our Horsemen set upon them, who although they stayed them, yet were put to flight, and gathered together again by the Duke of *Somerfet*

* Should be *March*.

Lord Protector, and the Earl of *Warwick*, and were ready to give a new Onset. The Scots being amazed with this, fled theirwayes, some to *Edinburgh*, some to the Sea, and some to *Dalkeith*; and there were slain 10000 of them, but of Englishmen 51 Horsemen, which were almost all Gentlemen, and but one Footman. Prisoners were taken, the Lord *Huntley*, Chancellor of *Scotland*, and divers other Gentlemen; and slain of Laids 1000. And Mr. *Brian*, *Sadler*, and *Vane*, were made Bannerets.

After this Battel *Broughtie-craig* was given to the Englishmen, and *Hume*, and *Roxburgh*, and *Heymouth*, which were Fortified, and Captains were put in them, and the Lord of *Somerset* rewarded with 500 *l.* Lands. In the mean season, *Stephen Gardiner* Bishop of *Winchester*, was, for not receiving the Injunctions, committed to Ward. There was also a Parliament called, wherein all Chaunteries were granted to the King, and an extream Law made for Vagabonds, and divers other things. Also the Scots besieged *Broughty-craig*, which was defended against them all by Sir *Andrew Dudley* Knight, and oftentimes their Ordnance was taken and marred.





Y E A R I I.

A Triumph was, where six Gentlemen did challenge all Comers, at Barriers, Jufts, and Tournay ; and alfo that they would keep a Fortrefs with thirty, with them againft an hundred, or under, which was done at *Greenwich*.

Sir *Edward Bellingam* being fent into *Ireland* Deputy, and Sir *Anthony St. Leiger* revoked, he took *O-Canor*, and *O-Mor*, bringing the Lords that rebelled into fubjection ; and *O-Canor* and *O-Mor* leaving their Lordships, had apiece an 100 *l.* Penfion.

The Scots befieged the Town of *Haddington*, where the Captain, Mr. *Willford*, every day made iffues upon them, and flew divers of them. The thing was very weak, but for the Men, who did very manfully. Oftentimes Mr. *Holcroft* and Mr. *Palmer* did Viſtual it by force, paſſing through the Enemies ; and at laſt the *Rhinegrave* unawares fet upon Mr. *Palmer*, which was there with near a thouſand and five hundred Horfemen, and diſcomfited him, taking him, Mr. *Bowes* Warden of the Weſt-Marches, and divers other, to the number of 400, and flew a few. (Upon *St. Peter's* day the Biſhop of *Wincheſter* was committed to the *Tower*.) Then they made divers brags, and they had the like made to them. Then went the Earl of *Shrewsbury* General of the Army, with 22000 Men, and burnt divers Towns and Fortrefſes, which the Frenchmen and Scots hearing, levied their Siege in the month of September ; in the levying of which, there came one to *Tiberio*, who as then was in *Haddington*, and ſetting forth the weakneſs of the Town, told him, That all Honour was due to the Defenders, and none to the Affailers ; ſo the Siege being levied, the Earl of *Shrewsbury* entred it, and viſtualled, and reinforced it. After his departing by night, there came into the Outer Court, at *Haddington*, 2000 Men armed, taking the Townſmen in their Shirts ;

who yet defended them, with the help of the Watch, and at length, with Ordnance, issued out upon them, and slew a marvellous number, bearing divers Assaults, and at length drove them home, and kept the Town safe.

A Parliament was called, where an Uniform Order of Prayer was institute, before made by a number of Bishops and learned Men gathered together in *Windsor*. There was granted a Subsidy, and there was a notable Disputation of the Sacrament in the Parliament-House. Also the Lord *Sudley*, Admiral of *England*, was condemned to Death, and died in *March* ensuing. Sir *Thomas Sharrington* was also condemned for making false Coin, which he himself confessed. Divers also were put in the *Tower*.





Y E A R I I I .

HUME-CASTLE was taken by Night, and Treason, by the Scots. Mr. *Willford*, in a Skirmish, was left of his Men, sore hurt and taken. There was a Skirmish at *Broughty-craig*, wherein Mr. *Lutterell*, Captain after Mr. *Dudley*, did burn certain Villages, and took *Monsieur de Toge* Prisoner. The Frenchmen by night assaulted *Boulingberg*, and were manfully repulsed, after they had made Faggots with Pitch, Tar, Tallow, Rosin, Powder, and Wildfire, to burn the Ships in the Haven of *Bolein*, but they were driven away by the *Bollonors*, and their Faggots taken.

In Mr. *Bowes* Place, who was Warden of the West Marches, was put the Lord *Dacres*; and in the Lord *Gray's* Place, the Earl of *Rutland*; who after his coming entred *Scotland*, and burnt divers Villages, and took much Prey. The People began to rise in *Wiltshire*, where Sir *William Herbert* did put them down, over-run, and slew them. Then they rose in *Suffex*, *Hampshire*, *Kent*, *Gloucestershire*, *Suffolk*, *Warwickshire*, *Essex*, *Hartfordshire*, a piece of *Leicestershire*, *Worcestershire*, and *Rutlandshire*, where by fair Persuasions, partly of honest Men among themselves, partly by Gentlemen, they were often appeased; and because certain Commissions were sent down to pluck down Inclosures, they did rise again. The French King perceiving this, caused War to be proclaimed; and hearing that our Ships lay at *Jersey*, sent a great number of his Gallies, and certain Ships, to surprize our Ships; but they being at anchor, beat the French, that they were fain to retire with the loss of 1000 of their Men.

At the same time the French King passed by *Bullein* to *New-Haven*, with his Army, and took *Blacknefs*, by Treason, and the *Almain* Camp; which done, *New-Haven* surrendered. There were also in a Skirmish, between 300 English Footmen, and 300 French Horsemen, six Noblemen slain. Then the French King came with his Army to

Bollein, which they seeing, razed *Boulingberg* ; but because of the Plague, he was compelled to retire, and *Chastillon* was left behind, as Governour of the Army. In the mean season, because there was a rumour that I was dead, I passed through *London*.

After that they rose in *Oxfordshire*, *Devonshire*, *Norfolk*, and *Yorkshire*. To *Oxford*, the Lord *Gray* of *Wilton* was sent with 1500 Horsemen and Footmen, whose coming, with the assembling of the Gentlemen of the Country, did so abash the Rebels, that more than half of them ran theirways, and other that tarried, were some slain, some taken, and some hanged. To *Devonshire*, the Lord Privy-Seal was sent, who with his Band, being but small, lay at *Honington*, whiles the Rebels besieged *Exeter*, who did use divers pretty Feats of War, for after divers Skirmishes, when the Gates were burnt, they in the City did continue the Fire till they had made a Rampier within ; also after, when they were undermined, and Powder was laid in the Mine, they within drowned the Powder and the Mine, with Water they cast in ; which the Lord Privy-Seal having thought to have gone to enforce them a by-way, of which the Rebels having spial, cut all the Trees betwixt *St. Mary Outrie* and *Exeter* ; for which cause the Lord Privy-Seal burnt that Town, and thought to return home : The Rebels kept a Bridg behind his Back, and so compelled him, with his small Band, to set upon them, which he did, and overcame them, killing 600 of them, and returning home without any loss of Men. Then the Lord *Gray*, and *Spinola*, with their Bands, came to him, and afterward *Gray*, with 200 of *Redding*, with which Bands he being reinforced, came to raise the Siege at *Exeter*, for because they had scarcity of Victual ; and as he passed from *Honington*, he came to a little Town of his own, whither came but only two ways, which they had reinforced with two Bullwarks made of Earth, and had put to the defence of the same about 2000 Men ; and the rest they had laid, some at a Bridg called *Honington-Bridg*, partly at a certain Hedg in a High-Way, and the most part at the Siege of *Exeter*. The Rereward of the Horsemen, of which *Travers* was Captain, set upon the one Bullwark, the Waward and Battail on the other ; *Spinola's* Band kept them occupied at their Wall : At length *Travers* drove them into the Town, which the Lord Privy-Seal burnt. Then they ran to a Bridg thereby, from whence being driven, they were in a Plain about 900 of them slain.

The next day they were met about other 2000 of them, at the entry of a High-Way, who first desired to talk, and in the mean season

fortified themselves ; which being perceived, they ran theirways, and that same Night the City of *Exeter* was delivered of the Siege. After that they gathered at *Launston*, to whom the Lord Privy-Seal, and Sir *Will. Herbert* went, and overthrew them, taking their chief Heads and executing them. Nevertheless some sailed to *Bridgewater*, and went about Sedition, but were quickly repressed. Hitherto of *Devonshire*. At this time the Black Gally was taken. Now to *Norfolk* ; The People suddenly gathered together in *Norfolk*, and increased to a great number, against whom the Lord Marques of *Northampton* was sent, with the number of 1060 Horsemen, who winning the Town of *Norwich*, kept it one day and one night ; and the next day in the morning, with the loss of 100 Men, departed out of the Town, among whom the Lord *Sheffield* was slain. There were taken divers Gentlemen, and Servingmen, to the number of thirty ; with which Victory, the Rebels were very glad ; but afterward hearing that the Earl of *Warwick* came against them, they began to stay upon a strong plot of Ground upon a Hill near to the Town of *Norwich*, having the Town confederate with them. The Earl of *Warwick* came with the number of 6000 Foot, and 1500 Horsemen, and entred into the Town of *Norwich*, which having won, it was so weak that he could scarcely defend it ; and oftentimes the Rebels came into the Streets, killing divers of his Men, and were repulsed again ; yea, and the Townsmen were given to Mischief themselves : So having endured their Assaults three days, and stopped their Victuals, the Rebels were constrained, for lack of Meat, to remove ; whom the Earl of *Warwick* followed with 1000 Almains, and his Horsemen, leaving the English Footmen in the Town, and overcame them in plain Battel, killing 2000 of them, and taking *Ket* their Captain, who in *January* following was hang'd at *Norwich*, and his Head hanged out ; *Ket's* Brother was taken also, and punished alike. In the mean season *Chastilion* besieged the Peer of *Boloin* made in the Haven, and after long Battery, 20000 shot or more, gave assault to it, and were manfully repulsed ; nevertheless, they continued the Siege still, and made often Skirmishes, and false Assaults, in which they won not much. Therefore seeing they profited little that way, they planted Ordnance against the Mouth of the Haven that no Victual might come to it ; which our Men seeing, set upon them by night and slew divers Frenchmen, and dismounted many of their Peeeces ; nevertheless the French came another time and planted their Ordnance toward the Sand-side of the Sand-hills,

and beat divers Ships of Victualers at the Entry of the Haven, but yet the Englishmen, at the King's Adventure, came into the Haven and refreshed divers times the Town. The Frenchmen seeing they could not that way prevail, continued their battery but finally, on which before they had spent 1500 Shot in a day, but loaded a Galley with Stones and Gravel, which they let go in the Stream to sink it; but ere it sunk, it came near to one Bank, where the *Bulloners* took it out, and brought the Stones to reinforce the Peer. Also at *Guines* was a certain Skirmish, in which there was about an 100 Frenchmen slain, of which some were Gentlemen and Noblemen. In the mean season in *England* rose great Stirs, like to increase much if it had not been well foreseen. The Council, about nineteen of them, were gathered in *London*, thinking to meet with the Lord Protector, and to make him amend some of his Disorders. He fearing his state, caused the Secretary, in My Name, to be sent to the Lords, to know for what Cause they gathered their Powers together; and if they meant to talk with him, that they should come in a peaceable manner. The next morning, being the 6th of *October* and *Saturday*, he commanded the Armour to be brought down out of the Armoury of *Hampton-Court*, about 500 Harnesses, to Arm both his and my men, with all the Gates of the House to be Rampeir'd, People to be raised: People came abundantly to the House. That night, with all the People, at nine or ten of the Clock of the night, I went to *Windfor*, and there was Watch and Ward kept every night. The Lords sat in open Places of *London*, calling for Gentlemen before them, and declaring the Causes of Accusation of the Lord Protector, and caused the same to be proclaimed. After which time few came to *Windfor*, but only Mine own Men of the Guard, whom the Lords willed, fearing the Rage of the People so lately quieted. Then began the Protector to treat by Letters, sending Sir *Philip Hobbey*, lately come from his Ambassage in *Flanders*, to see to his Family, who brought in his return a Letter to the Protector, very gentle, which he delivered to him, another to Me, another to my House, to declare his Faults, Ambition, Vain-Glory, entering into rash Wars in my Youth, negligent looking on *New-Haven*, enriching of himself of my Treasure, following of his own Opinion, and doing all by his own Authority, &c. Which Letters were openly read, and immediately the Lords came to *Windfor*, took him, and brought him through *Holborn* to the *Tower*. Afterward I came to *Hampton-Court*, where they appointed, by My consent, six Lords of the Council to be Attendant on Me, at least two and four

Knights ; Lords, the Marquess of *Northampton*, the Earls of *Warwick* and *Arundel*, the Lords, *Ruffel St. John*, and *Wentworth* ; Knights, Sir *Andr. Dudley*, Sir *Edw. Rogers*, Sir *Tho. Darcy*, and Sir *Tho. Wroth*. After I came through *London* to *Westminster*. The Lord of *Warwick* made Admiral of *England*. Sir *Thomas Cheiney* sent to the Emperor for Relief, which he could not obtain. Master *Wotton* made Secretary. The Lord Protector, by his own Agreement and Submission, lost his Protectorship, Treasureship, Marshalship, all his Moveables, and more, 2000 *l.* Land, by Act of Parliament. The Earl of *Arundel* committed to his House, for certain Crimes of suspicion against him, as plucking down of Bolts and Locks at *Westminster*, giving of My Stuff away, &c. and put to fine of 12000 *l.* to be paid 1000 *l.* Yearly ; of which he was after relieved.

Also Mr. *Southwell* committed to the *Tower* for certain Bills of Sedition, written with his Hand, and put to fine of 500 *l.* Likewise Sir *Tho. Arundel*, and six, then committed to the *Tower* for Conspiracies in the West Places. A Parliament, where was made a manner to Consecrate, Priests, Bishops, and Deacons. Mr. *Paget* surrendring his Comptrolership, was made Lord *Paget* of *Beaufort*, and cited into the Higher House by a Writ of Parliament. Sir *Anthony Wingfield*, before Vicechamberlain, made Comptroller. Sir *Thomas Darcy* made Vicechamberlain. *Guidott* made divers Errands from the Constable of *France* to make Peace with us ; upon which were appointed four Commissioners to Treat, and they after long Debatement made a Treaty as followeth.

Anno 1549. Mart. 24.

Peace concluded between *England*, *France*, and *Scotland* ; by our English side, *John* Earl of *Bedford*, Lord Privy Seal, Lord *Paget de Beaufort*, Sir *William Petre* Secretary, and Sir *John Mason*. On the French side, *Monsieur de Roquepot*, *Monsieur Castillon*, *Guilluart de Mortier*, and *Boucherel de Sany*, upon these Conditions, That all Titles, Tribute, and Defences, should remain ; That the Faults of one Man, except he be punished, should not break the League. That the Ships of Merchandize shall pass to and fro : That Pirates shall be called back, and Ships of War. That Prisoners shall be delivered of both sides. That we shall not war with *Scotland*. That *Bollein*, with the pieces of New Conquest, and two Basilisks, two Demy-Cannons, three Culverines, two Demy-Culverins, three Sacres, six Faucons,

94 Hagbutts, a Crook, with Wooden Tailles, and 21 Iron Pieces ; and *Lauder*, and *Dunglass*, with all the Ordnance save that that came from *Haddington*, shall, within six months after this Peace proclaimed, be delivered ; and for that the French to pay 200000 Scutes within three days after the delivery of *Bollein*, and 200000 Scutes on our *Lady Day* in Harveft next ensuing ; and that if the Scots raizd *Lauder*, and we should raze *Roxburg* and *Heymouth*. For the performance of which, on the 7th of *April*, should be delivered at *Guifnes* and *Ardres*, these Hostages.

Marquess <i>de Means</i> .	My Lord of <i>Suffolk</i> .
Monfieur <i>Trimoville</i> .	My Lord of <i>Hartford</i> .
Monfieur <i>D'anguen</i> .	My Lord <i>Talbot</i> .
Monfieur <i>Montmorency</i> .	My Lord <i>Fitzwarren</i> .
Monfieur <i>Henandiere</i> .	My Lord <i>Martavers</i> .
<i>Vicedam de Chartres</i> .	My Lord <i>Strange</i> .

Also that at the delivery of the Town, Ours should come home, and at the first Payment three of theirs ; and that if the Scots raze *Lauder* and *Dunglass*, We must raze *Roxburg* and *Heymouth*; and none after fortify them, with comprehension of the Emperor.

25. This Peace, *Anno* 1550, proclaimed at *Calais* and *Bollein*.

29. In *London*, Bonafires.

30. A Sermon in Thanksgiving for Peace, and *Te Deum* sung.

31. My Lord *Somerfet* was delivered of his Bonds, and came to Court.

April.

2. The Parliament prorogued to the second day of the Term in *October* ensuing.

3. *Nicholas Ridley*, before of *Rockester*, made Bishop of *London*, and received his Oath.

Thomas Thirlby, before of *Westminster*, made Bishop of *Norwich*, and received his Oath.

4. The Bishop of *Chichester*, before a vehement affirmer of Transubstantiation, did preach against it at *Westminster* in the preaching place.

Removing to *Greenwich* from *Westminster*.

6. Our Hostages passed the Narrow Seas between *Dover* and *Calais*.

7. Monfieur *de Fermin*, Gentleman of the King's Privy Chamber, passed from the French King by *England* to the Scotch Queen, to tell her of the Peace.

An Ambassador came from *Gustave* the Swedish King, called *Andrew*, for a surer Amity touching Merchandize.

9. The Hostages delivered on both the sides, for the Ratification of the League with *France* and *Scotland*; for because some said to Monsieur *Rochfort* Lieutenant, that Monsieur *de Guise*, Father to the Marquess of *Means*, was dead, and therefore the delivery was put over a day.

8. My Lord *Warwick* made General Warden of the North, and Mr. *Herbert* President of *Wales*; and the one had granted to him 1000 Marks Land, the other 500; and Lord *Warwick* 100 Horsemen at the King's Charge.

9. Licences signed for the whole Council, and certain of the Privy Chamber to keep among them 2340 Retainers.

10. My Lord *Somerſet* taken into the Council. *Guidotti* the beginner of the talk for Peace, recompensed with Knightdom, 1000 Crowns Reward, 1000 Crowns Pension, and his Son with 250 Crowns Pension.

Certain Prisoners for light Matters dismissed; agreed for delivery of French Prisoners taken in the Wars. *Peter Vane* sent Ambassador to *Venice*. Letters directed to certain Irish Nobles, to take a blind Legat coming from the Pope, calling himself Bishop of *Armagh*. Commissions for the delivery of *Buloin*, *Lauder*, and *Dunglask*.

6. The *Flemings* Men of War would have passed our Ships without vailing Bonet; which they seeing, shot at them, and drove them at length to vail Bonet, and so depart.

11. Monsieur *Trimaul*, Monsieur *Vicedam de Char*, and Monsieur *Henaudie*, came to *Dover*, the rest tarried at *Calais* till they had leave.

13. Order taken, that whosoever had Benefices given them, should preach before the King in or out of Lent, and every *Sunday* there should be a Sermon.

16. The three Hostages aforeſaid came to *London*, being met at *Debtford* by the Lord *Gray of Wilton*, Lord *Bray*, with divers other Gentlemen, to the number of 20, and Servingmen an 100, and so brought into the City, and lodged there, and kept Houses every Man by himself.

18. Mr. *Sidney* and Mr. *Nevel* made Gentlemen of the Privy Chamber. Commission given to the Lord *Cobham* Deputy of *Calais*, *William Petre* chief Secretary, and Sir *John Mason* French Secretary, to see the French King take his Oath, with certain Instruction; and that Sir *John Mason* should be Ambassador Leigier.

Commission to Sir *John Davies* and Sir *William Sharrington*, to receive the first Paiment, and deliver the Quittance.

19. Sir *John Mason* taken into the Privy Council, and *William Thomas* made Clerk of the fame.

Whereas the Emperors Ambassadors desired leave, by Letters Patent that my Lady *Mary* might have Mafs; it was denied him. And where he said we broke the League with him, by making Peace with *Scotland*, it was answered, That the French King, and not I, did comprehend them, saving that I might not invade them without occasion.

10. *Lauter* being besieged of the Scots, the Captain hearing that the Peace was Proclaimed in *England*, delivered it, as the Peace did will him, taking Sureties, that all the Bargains of the Peace should be kept.

18. Monsieur *de Guise* died.

20. Order taken for the Chamber, that three of the Outer Privy-Chamber Gentlemen should always be here, and two lie in the Palace, and fill the Room of one of the four Knights; that the Squires should be diligent in their Office; and five Grooms should be always present, of which one to watch in the Bed-Chamber.

21. The Marquess *de Means*, the Duke *de Anguien*, and the Constable's Son, arrived at *Dover*.

23. Monsieur *Trimoville*, and the Vicedam of *Chartres*, and Monsieur *Henaudy*, came to the Court, and saw the Order of the Garter, and the Knights, with their Sovereign, receive the Communion.

24. Certain Articles touching a freighter Amity in Merchandize sent to the King of *Sweeden*, being these.

First; *If the King of Sweden sent bullion, he should have our commodities and pay no Toll.*

Secondly; *He should bring Bullion to none other Prince.*

Thirdly; *If he brought Ozymus, and Steel, and Copper, &c. he should have our Commodities, and pay Custom as an Englishman.*

Fourthly; *If he brought any other, he should have free entercourse, paying Custom as a Stranger, &c.*

It was answered, to the Duke of *Brunswick*, that whereas he offered Service with 10000 Men of his Land, that the War was ended; and for the Marriage of my Lady *Mary* to him, there was talk for her Marriage with the Infant of *Portugal*, which being determined, he should have answer.

25. Lord *Clinton* Captain of *Bulloin*, having sent away before all his Men saving 1800, and all his Ordnance, saving that the Treaty did

reserve, issued out of the Town with these 1800, delivering it to Monsieur *Chastillon*, receiving of him the six Hostages English, an Acquittance for delivery of the Town, and safe Conduct to come to *Calais*; whither when he came, he placed 1800 in the Emperors Frontiers.

27. The Marquefs *du Means*, Count *d' Anguien*, and the Constable's Son, were received at *Black-Heath* by my Lord of *Rutland*, my Lord *Gray of Wilton*, my Lord *Gray*, my Lord *Lisle*, and divers Gentlemen, with all the Pensionaries, to the number of an hundred, beside a great number of Servingmen.

It was granted, that my Lord of *Somerſet* should have all his moveable Goods and Leases, except those that be already given.

The King of *Sweden's* Ambaffador departed home to his Master.

29. The Count *d' Anguien*, Brother to the Duke of *Vendosme*, and next Heir to the Crown after the King's Children; the Marquefs *de Means*, Brother to the Scotch Queen; and Monsieur *Montmorency*, the Constable's Son came to the Court. where they were received with much Musick at Dinner.

26. Certain were taken that went about to have an Insurrection in *Kent*, upon *May* day following; and the Priest, who was the chief Worker, ran away into *Essex*, where he was laid for.

30. *Dunglafs* was delivered as the Treaty did require.

May.

2. *Joan Boacher*, otherways called *Jean of Kent*, was burnt for holding, *That Christ was not Incarnate of the Virgin Mary*; being condemned the Year before, but kept in hope of Conversion; and the 30th of *April*, the Bishop of *London*, and the Bishop of *Ely*, were to perswade her, but she withstood them, and reviled the Preacher that preached at her Death.

The first payment was payed at *Calais*, and received by Sir *Thomas Dennis*, and Mr. *Sharrington*.

4. The Lord *Clinton*, before Captain of *Bollein*, came to Court, where after Thanks, he was made Admiral of *England*, upon the Surrender of the Earl of *Warwick's* Patent; He was also taken into the Privy-Council, and promised further Reward. The Captain also, and Officers of the Town, were promised Rewards. Monsieur *de Brislay* passed also by the Court to *Scotland*, where at *Greenwich* he came to the King, telling him, That the French King would see that if he lacked any Commodity that he had, he would give it him; and likewise would the Constable of *France*, who then bore all the Swing.

5. The Marquess *de Means* departed to *Scotland* with Monsieur *de Brislay*, to acquaint the Queen of the death of the Duke of *Gusse*.

6. The Master of *Ayrskin*, and Monsieur *Morret's* Brother came out of *Scotland* for the Acceptation of the Peace, who after had Passport to go into *France*.

7. The Council drew a Book for every Shire, who should be Lieutenants in them, and who should tarry with Me ; but the Lieutenants were appointed to tarry till *Chastilions*, *Sarcy*, and *Boucherels* coming, and then to depart.

9. Proclamation was made, That the Souldiers should return to Mansions ; and the Mayor of *London* had charge to look through all the Wards, to take them and send them to their Countries.

The Debt of 30000 *l.* and odd Money, was put over an Year, and there was bought 2500 Cinquetales of Powder.

11. Proclamation was made, That all Wooll-winders should take an Oath that they would make good Cloth there, as the Lord Chancellor would appoint them, according to an Act of Parliament made by *Edward* the Third.

7. The Lord *Cobham*, the Secretary *Petre*, and Sir *John Mason* came to the French King to *Amiens*, going on his Journey, where they were received of all the Nobles, and so brought to their Lodgings, which were well dressed.

10. The French King took the Oath for the Acceptation of the Treaty.

12. Our Ambassadors departed from the French Court, leaving Sir *John Mason* as Legier.

14. The Duke of *Somerfet* was taken into the Privy-Chamber, and likewise was the Lord Admiral.

15. It was appointed that all the Light-Horsemen of *Bollein*, and the Men of Arms, should be payed their Wages, and be led by the Lord Marquess of *Northampton*, Captain of the Pensioners ; and all the Guard of *Bollein* under the Lord Admiral. Also that the chiefeft Captains should be sent, with 600 with them, to the strengthening of the Frontiers of *Scotland*.

The comprehension of Peace with *Scotland* was accepted so far as the League went, and Sealed.

16. The Master of *Ayrskin* departed into *France*.

17. Removing from *Westminster* to *Greenwich*.

18. The French King came to *Bollein* to visit the Pieces lately deli-

vered to him, and to appoint an Order, and staying things there ; which done he departed.

19. *Peter Vane* went as Ambassador to *Venice*, and departed from the Court with his Instructions.

20. The Lord *Cobham* and Sir *William Petre*, come home from their Journey, deivering both the Oath, and the Testimonial of the Oath, witnessed by divers Noblemen of *France* : also the Treaty sealed with the Great Seal of *France* : and in the Oath was confessed, That I was Supream Head of the Church of *England* and *Ireland*, and also King of *Ireland*.

23. Monsieur *Chastillon*, and *Morier*, and *Boucherel*, accompanied with the Rhinegrave, *Dandelot* the Constable's second Son, and *Che-nault*, the Legier, came to *Duresm* Place, where in their Journey they were met by Mr. Treasurer, and sixty Gentlemen, at *Woolwich*, and also saluted with great Peals, at *Woolwich*, *Deptford*, and the *Tower*.

24. The Ambassadors came to me present'g the Legier ; and also delivering Letters of Credence from the French King.

25. The Ambassadors came to the Court, where they saw Me take the Oath for the Acceptation of the Treaty ; and afterwards dined with Me : and after Dinner saw a Pastime of ten against ten at the Ridg, whereof on the one side were the Duke of *Suffolk*, the Vice-dam, the Lord *Lisle*, and seven other Gentlemen appa-rallel'd in Yellow. On the other, the Lord *Strange*, Monsieur *Henandoy*, and the eight other in blew.

26. The Ambassadors saw the baiting of the Bears and Bulls.

27. The Ambassadors, after they had hunted, sat with me at Supper.

28. The same went to see *Hampton-Court*, where they did Hunt, and the same night return'd to *Duresm-place*.

25. One that by way of Marriage had thought to assemble the People, and so make an insurrection in *Kent*, was taken by the Gentlemen of the Shire, and afterward punished.

29. The Ambassadors had a fair Supper made them by the Duke of *Somerset* ; and afterward went into the *Thames*, and saw both the Bear hunted in the River, and also Wild-fire cast out of Boats, and many pretty Conceits.

30. The Ambassadors took their leave and the next day departed.

June.

3. The King came to *Skein*, where was a marriage made between the Lord *Lisle* the Earl of *Warwick*'s Son, and the Lady *Ann* Daughter to the Duke of *Somerset* ; which done, and a fair Dinner made, and

Dancing finished, the King and the Ladies went into two Anti-Chambers made of Boughs, where first he saw six Gentlemen of one side, and six of another, run the course of the Field twice over. Their names here do follow.

The Lord *Edward*.

Sir *John Apleby*, &c.*

And afterwards came three Masters of one side, and two of another which ran four Courses apiece. Their names be ; †

Last of all came the *Regunete*, with three *Italians*, who ran with all the Gentlemen four Courses, and afterward fought at Tournay ; and so after dinner returned to *Westminster*.

4. Sir *Robert Dudley* third Son so the Earl of *Warwick*, married Sir *John Robert's* Daughter ; after which Marriage there were certain gentlemen that did strive who should first take away a Gooses Head which was hanged alive on two crosse Posts.

5. There was Tilt and Tournay on foot, with as great staves as they run withal on Horseback.

6. Removing to *Greenwich*.

8. The Gifts of My Progress were set forth, which were these ; From *Greenwich* to *Westminster*, from *Westminster* to *Hampton-Court*, from *Hampton-Court* to *Windsor*, from *Windsor* to *Guilford*, from *Guilford* to *Oatland*, from *Oatland* to *Richmond*, &c.

Also the Vicedam made a great Supper for the Duke of *Somerset* and the Marquess of *Northampton*, with divers Masques and other Conceits.

9. The Duke of *Somerset*, Marquess of *Northampton*, Lord Treasurer, *Bedford*, and the Secretary *Petre*, went to the Bishop of *Winchester* to know to what he would stick. He made answer, That he would obey and set forth all things set forth by Me and my Parliament ; and if he were troubled in Conscience, he would reveal it to the Council, and not reason openly against it.

The first Payment of the Frenchmen, was laid up in the *Tower* for all Chances.

10. The Books of my Proceedings were sent to the Bishop of *Winchester*, to see whether he would set his Hand to it, or promise to set it forth to the People.

11. Order was given for Fortifying and Victualling *Cales* for four months ; and also Sir *Henry Palmer* and Sir—*Alec*, were sent to the Frontiers of *Scotland*, to take a view of all the Forts there, and to report to the Council where they thought fit to fortify.

* Rest omitted.

† None given.

12. The Marquefs *de Means* came from *Scotland* in Post, and went his way into *France*.

13. Commissions were signed to Sir *William Herbert*, and thirty other, to Intreat of certain Matters in *Wales*, and also Instructions to the same, how to behave himself in the Presidentship.

14. The Surveyor of *Calais* was sent to *Calais*, first to raze the Walls of *Risbank* toward the Sand-hills, and after to make the Wall maffy again, and the round Bullwark to change to a pointed one, which should run twenty foot into the Sea, to beat the Sand-hills, and to raze the Mount. Secondly, to view *Maubeug*, to make an high Bullwark in the midft, with Flankers, to beat through all the streight; and also four Sluces to make *Calais* haven better. Afterwards he was bid to go to *Guifnes*, where first he should take away the three-corner'd Bullwark to make the outward Wall of the Keep, and to fill the space between the Keep and the said outward Wall with the foresaid Bullwark, and to raise the Old Keep that it might defend the Town. Also he was bid to make *Parson's* Bullwark, where it is now, round, without Flankers, both pointed, and also with fix Flankers to bear hard to the Keep.

Atwood and *Lambert* were sent to take view of *Allderney*, *Silly*, *Jernsey*, *Gernsey*, and the Isle of *Gitto*.

The Duke of *Somerfet*, with five others of the Council, went to the Bishop of *Wincheſter*; to whom he made this answer; *I having deliberately ſeen the Book of Common-Prayer, although I would not have made it ſo my ſelf, yet I find ſuch things in it as ſatisfieth my Conſcience, and therefore I will both execute it my ſelf, and alſo ſee other my Pariſhioners to do it.*

This was ſubſcribed by the foresaid Counſellors, that they heard him ſay theſe words.

16. The Lord Marquefs, Mr. *Herbert*, the Vicedam, *Henaudie*, and divers other Gentlemen, went to the Earl of *Warwick's*, where they were honourably received; and the next day they ran at the Ring a great number of Gentlemen.

19. I went to *Debtſford*, being bidden to Supper by the Lord *Clin-ton*; where before Supper I ſaw certain Men ſtand upon the end of a Boat, without holding of any thing, and ran one at another, till one was caſt into the Water. At Supper Monſieur *Vicedam* and *Henaudie* ſupped with me. After Supper was there a Fort made upon a great Lighter on the *Thames* which had three Walls, and a Watch-Tower; in the midft of which Mr. *Winter* was Captain, with forty or fifty

other Souldiers in Yellow and Black. To the Fort also appertained a Gallery of Yellow Collour, with Men and Ammunition in it for defence of the Castle : Wherefore there came four Pinaces with their Men in White, handfomely dressed ; which intending to give assault to the Castle, first drove away the Pinace, and after with Clods, Squibs, Canes of Fire-Darts made for the nonce, and Bombards, assaulted the Castle ; and at length came with their Pieces, and burst the outer Walls of the Castle, beating them off the Castle into the second Ward, who after issued out and drove away the Pinaces, sinking one of them, out of which, all the Men in it, being more than twenty, leaped out and swam in the *Thames* ; Then came the Admiral of the Navy, with three other Pinaces, and won the Castle by Assault, and burst the top of it down, and took the Captain and under Captain. Then the Admiral went forth to take the Yellow Ship, and at length clasped with her, took her, and assaulted also her top, and won it also by compulsion, and so returned home.

20. The Mayor of *London* caused the Watches to be encreased every night, because of the great Frays, and also one Alderman to see good Rule kept every night.

22. There was a privy search made through all *Suffex* for all Vagabonds, Gipsies, Conspirators, Prophefiers, all Players, and such like.

24. There were certain in *Effex* about *Rumford*, went about a Conspiracy, which were taken, and the Matter stayed.

25. Removing to *Greenwich*.

23. Sir *John Yates*, Sheriff of *Effex*, went down with Letters to see the Bishop of *London's* Injunctions performed, which touched plucking down of Supercaltaries, Altars, and such like Ceremonies and Abuses.

29. It was appointed that the *Germans* should have the *Austin-Friars* for their Church to have their Service in, for avoiding of all Sects of *Anabaptists*, and such-like.

17. The French Queen was delivered of a third Son, called *Monfieur d' Angoulesme*.

13. The Emperor departed from *Argentin* to *Augusta*.

30. *John Poynt* made Bishop of *Rocheſter*, and received his Oath.
July.

5. There was Mony provided to be sent into *Ireland*, for payment of the Souldiers there ; and also Orders taken for the dispatch of the Strangers in *London*.

7. The Master of *Arskin* passed into *Scotland* coming from *France*. Also the *French* Ambaſſador did come before Me, first after shewing

the birth of *Monsieur d' Angouleme*; afterward declaring, That whereas the French King had for my sake let go the Prisoners at *St. Andrews*, who before they were taken, had shamefully murdered the Cardinal, he desired that all Scots that were Prisoners might be delivered. It was answered, That all were delivered. Then he moved for one called the Arch-Bishop of *Glasgow*; who since the Peace, came disguised without Passport, and so was taken. It was answered, That we had no Peace with *Scotland*, such, that they might pass our Countrey, and the Master of *Erskin* affirmed the same.

8. It was agreed that the 200 that were with Me, and 200 that were with Mr *Herbert*, should be sent into *Ireland*; Also that the Mint should be set a work that it that it might coin 24000 *l.* a Year, and so bear all my Charges in *Ireland* for this Year, and 10000 *l.* for my Coffers.

9. The Earl of *Warwick*, the Lord Treasurer, Sir *William Herbert*, and the Secretary *Petre*, went to the Bishop of *Winchester* with certain Articles signed by Me and the Council, containing the confessing of his Fault, the Supremacy, the establishing of Holy Days, the abolishing of six Articles, and divers other, whereof the Copy is in the Council Chest; whereunto he put his hand, saving to the confession.

10. Sir *William Herbert* and Secretary *Petre* were sent unto him, to tell him, I marvelled that he would not put his hand to the Confession. To which he made answer, that he would not put his Hand to the Confession, for becaufe he was Innocent and also the Confession was but the Preface of Articles.

11. The Bishop of *London* the Secretary *Petre*, Mr. *Cecil*, and *Goderrick*, were commanded to make certain Articles according to the Laws, and to put in the Submission.

12. It was appointed, That under the Shadow of preparing for the Sea-Matters, there should be sent 5000 *l.* to the Protestants to get their good Will.

14. The Bishop of *Winchester* did deny the Articles that the Bishop of *London* and the other had made.

13. Sir *John Yates* was sent into *Essex* to stop the going away of the Lady *Mary*, becaufe it was credibly informed that *Scipperus* should steal her away to *Antwerp*; divers of her Gentlemen were there, and *Scipperus* a little before came to see the Landing-places.

16. It was appointed that the two hundred with the Duke of *Somerset*, and two hundred with the Lord Privy-Seal, and four hundred with Master *St. Legier*, should be sent to the Sea-Coast.

17. It was agreed, that on *Wednesday* next, We should go in one day to *Windsor* and dine at *Sion*.

18. It was thought best that the Lord *Bowes* should tarry in his Wardenship still, and the Earl of *Warwick* should tarry here and be recompensed.

19. The Bishop of *Winchester* was sequestred from his Fruits for three months.

20. *Hooper* was made Bishop of *Glocester*. The Merchants were commanded to stay as much as they could their Vent into *Flanders*, because the Emperour had made many streight Laws against them that professed the Gospel.

21. A Muster was made of the *Boullonois*, who were fully payed for all past, and a month to come. Sir *John Wallop*, *Francis Hall* and Doctor *Coke*, were appointed Commissioners to appoint the Limits between Me and the French King.

23. Removing to *Windsor*.

22. The Secretary *Petre*, and the Lord Chancellour, were appointed to go to the Lady *Mary*, to cause her to come to *Oking*, or to the Court.

25. It was appointed that half the French King's Paiment should be bestowed on paying 10000 *l.* at *Calais*, 9000 *l.* in *Ireland*, 10000 *l.* in the North, 2000 *l.* in the Admiralty, so that every Crown might go for one of our Nobles.

27. Because the Rumour came so much of *Scipperus* coming, it was appointed that they of the Admiralty should set my Ships in readiness.

26. The Duke of *Somerfet* went to set Order in *Oxfordshire*, *Suffex*, *Wiltshire*, and *Hampshire*.

28. The Lady *Mary*, after long communication, was content to come *Leez* to my Lord Chancellour, and then to *Hunsden*; but she utterly denied to come to the Court or *Oking* at that time.

31. The Earl of *Southampton* died.

14. *Andrew Dory* took the City of——— in *Africa*, from the Pirat *Dragutte*, who in the mean season burnt the Country of *Genoa*.

8. The Emperour came to *Ausburgh*.

August.

4. Mr. *St. Legier* was appointed, by Letters Patents, to be Deputy there; and had his Commission, Instructions, and Letters to the Nobles of *Ireland* for the same purpose.

5. The same Deputy departed from the Castle of *Windsor*.

6. The Duke of *Somerſet* departed to *Redding* to take an Order there.

7. It was appointed, that of the Mony delivered to Me by the French King, there ſhould be taken 100000 Crowns to pay 10000 *l.* at *Calais*, 10000 in the North, and 2000 in the Admiralty, and 8000 in *Ireland*.

8. *Monſieur Henaudy* took his leave to depart to *Calais*, and ſo upon the Paiment, to be delivered Home ; and *Tremoville* being ſick, went in a Horſe-Litter to *Dover*.

9. The French Ambaſſador came to *Windſor*, to ſue for a Paſſport for the Dowager of *Scotland* ; which being granted, ſo ſhe came like a Friend ; he required 300 Horſe to paſs, with 200 Keepers, which waſ not wholly granted, but only that 200 Horſe, with an 100 Keepers in one Company, coming into this Realm, as ſhould be appointed, ſhould, without let, paſs into *France*, and not return this way.

11. The *Vicedam* of *Chartres* ſhewed his Licence to tarry here, with a Letter written to the ſame purpoſe.

10. The Ambaſſadour of *France* departed not a little contented with his gentle Anſwers.

12. Removing to *Guilford*.

13. The Parliament was Prorogued to the 20th of *February* next following.

Mr. Cook Maſter of Requeſts, and certain other Lawyers, were appointed to make a ſhort Table of the Laws and Acts that were not wholly unprofitable, and preſent it to the Board.

The Lord Chancellor fell ſore ſick, with forty more of his Houſe, ſo that the Lady *Mary* came not thither at that time.

14. There came divers Adverſements from *Chamberlain*, Ambaſſadour with the Queen of *Hungary*, that their very Intent was to take away the Lady *Mary*, and ſo to begin an Outward War, and an Inward Conſpiracy ; inſomuch that the Queen ſaid *Scipperus* was but a Coward, and for fear of one Gentleman that came down, durſt not go forth with his Enterpriſe to my Lady *Mary*.

16. The Earl of *Maxwell* came down to the North-Border with a good Power to overthrow the *Gremes*, who were a certain Family that were yielded to Me ; but the Lord *Dacre* ſtood before his Face with a good band of Men, and ſo put him from his Purpoſe, and the Gentlemen, called *Gremes*, skirmiſhed with the ſaid Earl, ſlaying certain of his Men.

17. The Council appointed, among themſelves, That none of

them should speak in any Man's behalf for Land to be given, Reversion of Offices, Leases of Manours, or extraordinary Annuities, except for certain Captains who served at *Bollein*, their answer being deferred till *Michaelmas* next.

18. A Proclamation that till *Michaelmas* all Strangers that sued for Pensions should go their way.

20. Removing to *Oking*.

15. The second Paiment of the French was paid, and *Henaudie* and *Tremoville* delivered.

21. 8000 *l.* of the last Payment was appointed to be paid to the Dispatch of *Calais*, and 5000 at the North.

24. 10000 *l.* was appointed to be occupied to win Money to pay the next Year, pay the outward Pays; and it was promised that the Money should double every month.

26. Removing to *Oatlands*.

27. *Andrea Doria* gave a hot Assault to the Town of ——— in *Africa* kept by the Pirat called *Drogute*, but was repulsed by the Townsmen.

29. The Pirat gave a hot Assault to *Andrea Dorea* by Night, and flew the Captain of *Thames*, with divers other notable Men.

31. The Duke *Maurice* made answer to the Emperour, That if the Council were not free, he would not come at it.

September. -

2. *Maclamore* in *Ireland* before a Rebel, by the means of Mr. *Babersson*, surrendered himself and gave Pledges.

6. Mr *Wotton* gave up his Secretaryship, and Mr. *Cecil* got it of him.

8. Removing from *Nonsuch*.

13. Removing to *Oatlands*.

22. A Proclamation was set forth, by the which it was commanded;

1. That no kind of Victual, no Wax, Tallow, Candles, nor no such thing should be carried over, except to *Calais*, putting in Sureties to go thither. 2. That no Man should buy or sell the self-same things again except Broakers, who should not have more than ten quarters of Grain at once. 3. That all Justices should divide themselves into Hundreds, Rapes, and Wapentakes, to look in their Quarters what superfluous Corn were in every Barn, and appoint it to be sold at a reasonable price. Also that one of them must be in every Market to see the Corn brought. Furthermore, whoever shipped over any Thing afore said to the Parts beyond Sea, or *Scotland*, after eight days following the publication of the Proclamation, should forfeit his Ship, and

the Ware therein, half to the Lord of the Franchise, and half to the finder thereof; who so bought to sell again after the day afore said, should forfeit all his Goods, Farms, and Leases, to the use, one half of the Finder, the other of the King; who so brought not in Corn to Market as he was appointed, should forfeit 10 *l.* except the Purveyours took it up, or it were sold to his Neighbours.

25. Letters sent out to the Justices of the Peace for the due execution thereof.

18. *Andrea Doria* had a repulse from the Town of* in *Africa*, and lost many of his Men, and the Captain of *Thames*, and nevertheless left not yet the Siege.

24. Order was given for the Victualing of *Calais*.

26. The Lord *Willoughby*, Deputy of *Calais*, departed and took his journey thitherward.

28. The Lord Treasurer sent to *London* to give Order for the preservation of the City, with help of the Mayor.

Whereas the Emperor required a Council, they were content to receive it, so it were free and ordinary, requiring also that every Man might be restored to his Right, and a general Peace proclaimed. They desired also, that in the mean season no Man might be restrained to use his fashion of Religion.

18. The Emperor made Answer, That the Council should be to the Glory of God, and Maintenance of the Empire at *Trent*; He knew no Title to any of his Territories, Peace he desired, and in the mean season would have them observe the Interim and last Council of *Trent*; he would also that they of *Breme* and *Hamburgh*, with their Associates, should leave their Seditions, and obey his Decrees.

21. *George Duke of Mecklenburgh* came with 8000 Men of War to the City of *Magdeburgh*, being Protestant; against whom went forth the Count of *Mansfield*, and his Brother, with 6000 Men, and eight Guns, to drive him from Pillage; but the other abiding the Battel, put the Count to flight, took his Brother Prisoner, and slew 3000 Men, as it is reported.

October.

4. Removing to *Richmond*.

5. The Parliament Prorogued to the 20th of *January*.

6. The French King made his entry into *Roan*.

10. It was agreed that *York*, Master of one of the *Mints* at the *Tower*, should make his Bargain with Me; viz. To take the Profit of

* *Afradisum*.

Silver rising of Bullion that he himself brought, should pay all my Debts, to the Sum of 1200000 *l.* or above, and remain accountable for the Overplus, paying no more but 6 *s.* and 6 *d.* the ounce, till the Exchange were equal in *Flanders*, and after 6 *s.* and 2 *d.* Also that he should declare all his Bargains to any should be appointed to oversee him, and leave off when I would: For which I should give him 15000 *l.* in Prest, and leave to carry 8000 *l.* over-Sea to abate the Exchange.

16. Removing to *Westminster*.

19. Prices were set of all kind of Grains, Butter, Cheese, and Poultry-Ware, by a Proclamation.

20. The Frenchmen came to *Sandefeld* and *Fins-wood*, to the number of 800, and there on my Ground did spoil my Subjects that were relieved by the Wood.

26. The French Ambassadour came to excuse the foresaid Men, saying, They thought it not meet that that Wood should be spoiled of us, being thought and claimed as theirs, and therefore they lay there.

24. There were 1000 Men embarked to go to *Calais*, and so to *Guignes*, and *Hammes*, *Risbumbée*, *Newmanbridge*, the Cause and the Bullwarks, with Victual for the same.

November.

19. There were Letters sent to every Bishop to pluck down the Altars.

20. There were Letters sent down to the Gentlemen of every Shire, for the observation of the last Proclamation touching Corn, because there came none to the Markets, commanding them to punish the Offenders.

29. Upon the Letters written back by the same, the second Proclamation was abolished.

December.

15. There was Letters sent for the taking of certain Chaplains of the Lady *Mary* for saying Mass, which she denied.

19. *Borthwick* was sent to the King of *Denmark*, with privy Instructions for the Marriage of the Lady *Elizabeth* to his Son.

20. There was appointed a Band of Horsemen divided amongst the Nobles.

An 100 to the Duke of *Somerset*.

50 to my Lord Marq. *Northampton*.

Lord Marquess of *Dorset*.

To the Earl of *Warwick*.

Earl of *Wiltshire*.

Lord *Wentworth*.

Lord Privy-Seal.

Lord Admiral.

Lord *Paget*.

Mr. *Herbert*.

Mr. *Sadler*.

Mr. *Darcy*.

Mr. Treasurer.

24. Removing to *Greenwich*.

26. Peace concluded between the Emperor and the Scots.

January.

6. The Earl of *Arundel* remitted of 8000 *l.* which he ought to have payed for certain Faults he had committed within 12 Years.

7. There was appointed, for because the Frenchmen did go about practice in *Ireland*, that there should be prepared four Ships, four Barques, four Pinaces, and twelve Victualers, to take three Havens; of which two were on the South-side toward *France*, and one in *James Canes* the Scottish Country, and also send and break the foresaid Conspiracies.

10. Three Ships being sent forth into the Narrow Seas, took certain Pirats, and brought them into *England*, where the most part was hanged.

27. *Monsieur de Lansac* came from the French King by way of request, to ask that *Coumilitis*, the fishing of the *Tweed*, *Edrington*, the Ground debatable, and the Scotch Hostages that were put here in the King my Father's days, should be delivered to the Scots, that they might be suffered to Traffique, as though they were in Peace, and that all Interest of the foresaid Houses should be delivered to the Scots. Also that those Prisoners which were bound to pay their Ranfoms before the Peace last concluded, should not enjoy the benefit of the Peace.

18. The Lord *Cobham* was appointed to be General Lieutenant in *Ireland*.

30. Letters written to Mr. *St. Lieger* to repair to the South parts of *Ireland* with his Force.

February.

3. Mr. *Croftis* appointed to go into *Ireland*, and there with *Rogers* and certain Artificers, to take the Havens aforesaid, and begin some Fortification.

5. Divers Merchants of *London* were spoken withal for provision of Corn out of *Danfick*, about 40000 Quarters.

10. *Mountford* was commanded to go to provide for certain proportions of Victual for the Ships that should go into *Ireland*.

11. Also for Provision to be sent to *Barwick* and the North parts.
16. *Whaley* was examined, for perfwading divers Nobles of the Realm to make the Duke of *Somerset* Protector at the next Parliament, and stood to the denial, the Earl of *Rutland* affirming it manifestly.
13. The Bishop of *Winchester*, after a long Trial, was deposed of his Bishoprick.
20. Sir *William Pickering* Kt. was dispatched to the French King for Answer to *Monfieur de Lansac*, to declare, That although I had right in the foresaid Places, yet I was content to surrender them, under Conditions to be agreed on by Commissioners on both sides; and for the last Articles I agreed without condition.
25. The Lord Marques *Dorset* appointed to be Warden of the North-Borders, having three Sub-Wardens, the Lord *Ogle*, &c. in the East, and the Lord *Coniers* in the West. Also Mr. *Auger* had the charge for victualling *Calais*.
28. The Learned Man *Bucerus* died at *Cambridg*; who was two days after buried in St. *Mary's* Church at *Cambridg*; all the whole Univerfity, with the whole Town, bringing him to the Grave, to the number of 3000 Perfons. Also there was an Oration of Mr. *Haddon* made very eloquently at his Death, and a Sermon of* after that Master *Redman* made a third Sermon; which three Sermons made the People wonderfully to lament his Death. Last of all, all the Learned Men of the Univerfity made their Epitaphs in his praife, laying them on his Grave.

March.

3. The Lord *Wentworth* Lord Chamberlain, died about ten of the Clock at Night, leaving behind him sixteen Children.
1. Sir *John York* made great lofs about 2000 *l.* weight of Silver, by Treason of English Men which he brought for Provision of the Mints. Also *Judd* 1500, and also *Tresham* 500; fo the whole came to 4000 *l.*

February.

20. The Frenchmen came with a Navy of 160 Sail into *Scotland*, loaden with provision of Grain, Powder, and Ordnance; of which sixteen great Ships perished on *Ireland* Coast, two loaden with Artillery, and fourteen with Corn.
- Also in this month the Deputy there fet at one, certain of the West Lords that were at variance.

March.

10. Certain new Fortifications were devised to be made at *Calais*;

* Dr. *Parker*.

That at *Graveling* the Water should be let in in my Ground, and so should fetch a compass by the fix Bulwarks to *Guifnes*, *Hammes*, and *Newnambridg*; and that there should be a Wall of eight foot high, and fix broad of Earth, to keep out the Water, and to make a great Marth about the Territories of *Calais* 37 miles long. Also for Flankers at the Keep of *Guifnes*, willed to be made a three-cornered Bullwark at the Keep to keep it. Furthermore, at *Newmanbridg*, a maffy Wall to the French-side there, as was a Green. Besides, at the West Gittie there should be another Gittie, which should defend the Victuallers of the Town always from Shot from the Sand-hills.

5. Mr. *Archer* had 2000 *l.* in Mony, wherewith he provided out of *Flanders* for *Calais* 2000 Quarters of Barley, 500 of Wheat.

18. The Lady *Mary*, my Sister, came to me to *Westminster*, where after Salutations, she was called, with my Council, into a Chamber; where was declared how long I had suffered her Maſs, in hope of her reconciliation, and how now being no hope, which I perceived by her Letters, except I saw some short amendment I could not bear it. She answered, That her Soul was God's, and her Faith she would not change, nor dissemble her Opinion with contrary doings. It was said I constrained not her Faith, but willed her not as a King to Rule, but as a Subject to obey; and that her Example might breed too much inconvenience.

19. The Emperor's Ambassador came with a short Message from his Master of War, if I would not suffer his Cousin, the Princeſs, to use her Maſs. To this was no answer given at this time.

20. The Bishops of *Canterbury*, *London*, *Rochester*, did consider to give licence to sin, was sin; to suffer and wink at it for a time might be born, so all haste possible might be used.

23. The Council having the Bishops Answers, seeing my Subjects taking their vent in *Flanders*, might put the whole Realm in danger. The *Flemings* had Cloth enough for a Year in their hand, and were kept far under the danger of the Papiſts; the 1500 Cinquetales of Powder I had in *Flanders*, the Harnesſs they had for preparation of the Gendarmory, the goods my merchants had there at the *Woolfleet*, decreed to send an Ambaſſadour to the Emperor, Mr. *Wotton*, to deny the matter wholly, and perſwade the Emperor in it, thinking, by his going, to win some time for a preparation of a Mart, convenience of Powder, Harnesſs, &c. and for the Surety of the Realm. In the mean season to punish the Offenders, first of my Servants that heard Maſs, next of hers.

24. Sir *Anthony Brown* sent to the *Fleet* for hearing *Mafs*, with Serjeant *Morgan*, Sir *Clement Smith*, which a Year before heard *Mafs*, chidden.

25. The Ambassadour of the Emperor came to have his Answer, but had none, saving that one should go to the Emperor within a month or two to declare the Matter.

22. Sir *William Pickering* came with great thanks from the French King.

27. Removing to *Greenwich*.

31. A Challenge made by Me, that I, with sixteen of my Chamber, should run at Base, Shoot, and run at the Ring with any seventeen of my Servants Gentlemen in the Court.

Mr. *Crosted* arrived in *Ireland*, and came to *Waterford* to the Deputy, consulting for Fortification of the Town.

April.

1. The first day of the Challenge at Base, or Running, the King won.

3. *Monsieur de Lansac* came again from the French King to go to *Scotland*, for appointing his Commissioners on the Scotch side, who were the French Ambassador in *Scotland*, the Bishop of* the Master of *Erskin*, &c.

Thomas Darcy made Lord *Darcy* of *Chich.* and Lord Chamberlain; for maintenance whereof he had given 100 Merks to his Heirs generally, and 300 to his Heirs Males.

6. I lost the Challenge of Shooting at Rounds, and won at Rovers.

7. There were appointed Commissioners on my side, either the Bishop of *Litchfield* if he had no Impediment, or *Norwich*, Mr. *Bowes*, Mr. *Bekwith*, and Sir *Thomas Chaloner*.

8. Sir *John Yates* made Vicechamberlain, and Captain of the Guard and 120 l. Land.

5. *Poinet* Bishop of *Rocheſter* received his Oath for the Bishoprick of *Wincheſter*, having 2000 Merk Land appointed to him for his Maintenance.

7. A certain *Arrian* of the Strangers, a Dutch Man, being excommunicated by the Congregation of his Countrymen, was after long disputation condemned to the Fire.

9. The Earl of *Wiltſhire* had 50 more in my Lord Marqueſs *Dorſet's* Place, Warden in the North, and my Lord of *Rutland* in my Lord *Wentworth's* Place other fifty.

* Blank in original.

10. Mr. *Wotton* had his Instructions made to go withal to the Emperor, to be as Ambassador Legier in Mr. *Morison's* place, and to declare this Resolution, That if the Emperor would suffer my Ambassadour with him, to use his Service, then I would his; if he would not suffer Mine, I would not suffer his. Likewise, that my Sister was my Subject, and should use my Service appointed by Act of Parliament.

Also it was appointed to make 20000 pound weight for necessity somewhat baser, to get gains 16000 *l.* clear, by which the debt of the Realm might be payed, the Country defended from any sudden Attempt, and the Coin amended.

11. Mr. *Pickering* had his Instructions and Dispatch to go into France as Ambassadour Legier there, in Mr. *Majon's* Place, who desired very much to come home; and Mr. *Pickering* had Instructions to tell the French King of the appointing of my Commissioners in Scotland aforesaid.

2. They of *Magdeburg* having in January last past taken in a conflict the Duke of *Mecklenburg*, and three other Earls, did give an Onset on Duke *Maurice*, by Boats on the River, when it overflowed the Country, and slew divers of his Men, and came home safe, receiving a great portion of Victual into the Town.

15. A Conspiracy opened of the *Essex-men*, who within three days after minded to declare the coming of Strangers, and so to bring People together to *Chelmsford*, and then to spoil the Rich Men's Houses if they could.

16. Also of *Londoners*, who thought *Woodcock** to rise on May-day against the Strangers of the City, and both the Parties committed to Ward.

23. The French King, and the Lord *Clinton*, chosen into the Order of the Garter, and appointed that the Duke of *Somerfet*, the Marquess of *Northampton*, the Earl of *Wiltshire*, and the Earl of *Warwick* should peruse and amend the Order.

24. The Lords sat at *London*, and banqueted one another this day, and three days after, for to shew agreement amongst them, whereas Discord was bruited, and somewhat to look to the punishment of Tale-bearers, and apprehending of evil Persons.

25. A bargain made with the Foulcare for about 60000 *l.* that in May and August should be payed for the defraying of it. 1. That the

* Here the sense is not perfect.

Foulcare should be put off for 10 in the 100. 2. That I should buy 12000 Marks weight, at 6 s. the ounce, to be delivered at *Antwerp*, and so conveyed over. 3. I should pay 100000 Crowns for a very fair Jewel of his, four Rubies marvelous big, one Orient and great Diamond, and one great Pearl.

27. *Mallet*, the Lady *Mary's* Chaplain, apprehended and sent to the *Tower of London*.

30. The Lord Marquess of *Northampton* appointed to go with the Order, and further Commission of Treaty, and that in Post; having joined with him in Commission, the Bishop of *Ely*, Sir *Philip Hobbey*, Sir *William Pickering*, and Sir *John Mason* Knights, and two other Lawyers, *Smith* that was Secretary, &c.

May.

2. There was appointed to go with my Lord Marquess, the Earls of *Rutland*, *Worcester*, and *Ormond*; the Lords *Lisle*, *Fitzwater*, and *Bray*, *Barguenny*, and divers other Gentlemen, to the number of thirty in all.

3. The challenge at running at the Ring performed; at the which first came the King, sixteen Footmen, and ten Horsemen, in black Silk Coats, pulled out with white Taffety; then all the Lords, having three Men likewise apparelled; and all Gentlemen their Footmen in white Fustian, pulled out with black Taffety. The other side came all in yellow Taffety; at length the yellow Band took it thrice in 120 courses, and my Band touched often, which was counted as nothing, and took never, which seemed very strange, and so the Prize was of my Side lost. After that Tournay followed, between six of my Band and six of theirs.

4. It was appointed that there should be but four Men to wait on every Earl that went with my Lord Marquess of *Northampton*, three on every Lord, two on every Knight or Gentleman: Also that my Lord Marquess should in his Diet be allowed for the loss in his Exchange.

5. The Muster of the Gendarmoury appointed to be the first of *June* if it were possible, if not the 8th.

6. The Testourn cried down from 12 d. to 9 d. and the Groat from 4 d. to 3 d.

9. One *Stewart* a Scotchman meaning to poison the young Queen of *Scotland*, thinking thereby to get Favour here, was, after he had been a while in the *Tower* and *Newgate*, delivered on my Frontiers at *Calais* to the French, for to have him punished there according to his deserts.

10. Divers Lords and Knights sent for to furnish the Court at the coming of the French Ambassadour, that brought hither the order of St. Michael.

12. A Proclamation proclaimed, to give warning to all those that keep any Farms, multitudes of Sheep, above the number limited in the Law, viz. 2000; decayed Tenements and Towns, Regratters, Forefalling Men that sell dear, having plenty enough, and put Plough Ground to Pasture, and Carriers over-Sea of Victual, that if they leave not these Enormities, they shall be streightly punished very shortly, so that they should feel the smart of it; and to command execution of Laws made for this purpose before.

14. There mustered before Me an hundred Archers, two Arrows apiece, all of the Guard; afterward shot together, and they shot at an inch Board, which some pierced quite, and stuck in the other Board; divers pierced it quite thorow with the Heads of their Arrows, the Boards being very well-seasoned Timber. So it was appointed there should be ordinarily 100 Archers, and 100 Halbertiers, either good Wrestlers, or casters of the Bar, or Leapers, or Runners, or tall Men of Personage.

15. Sir Philip Hobbey departed toward France, with ten Gentlemen of his own, in Velvet Coats and Chains of Gold.

16. Likewise did the Bishop of Ely depart with a Band of Men well furnished.

20. A Proclamation made that whosoever found a Seditious Bill, and did not tear and deface it, should be a partaker of the Bill, and punished as the Maker.

21. My Lord Marques of Northampton had Commission to deliver the Order, and to treat of all things, and chiefly of Marriage for Me to the Lady Elizabeth his Daughter. First to have the Dote 12000 Marks a Year, and the Dowry at least 800000 Crowns. The Forfeiture 100000 Crowns at the most if I performed not, and paying that to be delivered; and that this should not impeach the former Covenants with Scotland, with many other Branches.

22. He departed himself in Post.

24. An Earthquake was at Croidon and Blechinglee, and in the most part of Surrey, but no harm was done.

30. Whereas before Commandment was given that 160000 *l.* should be Coined of three ounces in the Pound fine, for discharge of Debts, and to get some Treasure, to be able to alter all, now it was stopped, saving only 80000 *l.* to discharge my Debts, and 10000 Mark weight

that the *Foulcare* delivered in the last Exchange, at four ounces in the pound.

31. The Mufters deferred till after *Midsummer*.

June.

2. It was appointed that I should receive the Frenchmen that came hither at *Westminster*, where was made preparation for the purpose, and four garnish of new Vessels taken out of Church Stuff, as Miters, and Golden Missals, and Primers, and Crosses, and Reliques of *Pleffay*.

4. Provision made in *Flanders* for Silver and Gold Plate, and Chains to be given to these Strangers.

7. A Proclamation set forth, that Exchange, or Re-exchange, should be made under the Punishment set forth in King *Henry* the Seventh's Time, duly to be executed.

10. *Monsieur Mareschal* departed from the Court to *Bulloigne* in Post, and so hither by Water in his Galleys and Foists.

In this Month, and the Month before was great business for the City of *Parma*, which Duke *Horatio** had delivered to the French King, for the Pope ascited him, as holding it *in capite* of him, whereby he could not alienate it without the Pope's Will; but he came not at his Day, for which cause the Pope and Imperialists raised 8000 Men, and took a Castle on the same River side. Also the French King sent *Monsieur de Thermes*, who had been his General in *Scotland*, with a great piece of his Gendarmory into *Italy*, to help Duke *Horatio*. Furthermore the Turks made great preparation for War, which some feared would at length burst out.

21. I was elected of the Company of St. *Michael* in *France* by the French King and his Order.

13. Agreement made with the Scots for the Borders, between the Commissioners aforesaid, for both the Parties.

In this month *Dragute*, a Pirat, escaped (*Andrea Doria*, who had closed him in a Creek) by force of his Galley-Slaves, that digged another way into the Sea, and took two of *Andrea's* Galleys that lay far into the Sea.

14. Pardon given to those Irish Lords that would come in before a certain day limited by the Deputy; with Advertifement to the Deputy to make sharp War with those that would resist; and also should administer my Laws every-where.

* It should be *Octavio*.

18. Because of my Charges in Fortifications at *Calais* and *Barwick* should be payed, it was agreed, that beside the Debt of the Realm 80000 *l.* there should be 40000 *l.* coined, three ounces Fine, nine of Allay; and 5000 pound weight should be coined in a Standard of seven ounces Fine at the least.

17. *Soperantio* came as Ambassadour from *Venice*, in *Daniel Barbaro's* Place.

16. I accepted the Order of *Monseigneur Michael* by promise to the French Ambassadour.

17. My Lord Marques of *Northampton* came to *Nants* with the Commissioners, and all those Noblemen and Gentlemen that came over-Sea with him.

20. Upon Advertisement of *Scipperus* coming, and rigging of certain Ships in *Holland*; also for to shew the Frenchmen pleasure at their coming, all the Navy that lay in *Gillingham-water* was appointed to be rigged, and furnished with Ordnance, and lay in the river of *Thames*, to the intent, that if *Scippetus* came afterward, he might be met with, and at least the Frenchmen should see the force of my Navy.

22. The Lady *Mary* sent Letters to the Council, marvelling at the Imprisonment of Dr. *Mallet*, her Chaplain, for saying of Mass before her Household, seeing it was promised the Emperor's Ambassadour she should not be molested in Religion, but that she and her Household should have the Mass said before them continually.

24. They answered, That because of their Duties to King, Countrey, and Friends, they were compelled to give her answer, That they would see, not only him, but also all other Mass-Sayers, and breakers of Order, straitly punished. And that as for promise they had, nor would give none to make her free from the punishment of the Law in that behalf.

18. *Chastillon* came to my Lord Marques, and there banqueted him by the way at two times between *Nantes* and *Chasteau Brian*, where the King lay.

15. *Mendoza*, a Gentleman of the King's Chamber, was sent to him to conduct him to the Court.

19. My Lord Marques came to *Chasteau-Brian*, where half a mile from the Castle there met him——* with an hundred Gentlemen, and brought him to the Court booted and spur'd to the French King.

20. The French King was invested with the Order of the Garter in

* Blank in original.

his Bed-Chamber, where he gave a Chain to the Garter worth 200 *l.* and his Gown dressed with Auglets worth 25 *l.* The Bishop of *Ely* making an Oration, and the Cardinal of *Lorrain* making him Answer. At Afternoon the Lord Marquess moved the French King to the Marriage of the Scots Queen to be consummate, for whose hearing he appointed two Commissioners.

21. The Cardinal of *Lorrain*, and of *Chastillon*, the Constable, the Duke of *Guise*, &c. were appointed Commissioners on the part of *France* who absolutely denied the first motion for the Scotch Queen, saying, Both they had taken too much Pains, and spent too many Lives for her. Also a conclusion was made for her Marriage to the Dolphin. Then was proponed the Marriage of the Lady *Elizabeth*, the French King's eldest daughter; to which they did most chearfully assent. So after they agreed neither Party to be bound in Conscience nor Honour, till she were twelve Years of Age and upwards. Then they came to the Dote, which was first asked 1500000 Scutes of *France*, at which they made a mock; after for *donatio propter nuptias*, they agreed that it should be as great as hath been given by the King my Father to any Wife he had.

22. Our Commissioners came to 1400000 of Crowns, which they refused, then to a Million, which they denied; then to 800000 Crowns, which they said they would not agree to.

23. Then our Commissioners asked what they would offer? First they offered 100000 Crowns, then 200000, which they said was the most, and more than ever was given. Then followed great Reasonings, and showing of Precedents, but no nearer they would come.

24. They went forward unto the Penalties if the Parties misliked, after that the King's Daughter were twelve and upwards, which the French offered 100000, 50000 Crowns, or promise, that she should be brought, at her Father's Charge, three months before she were twelve, sufficiently Jewelled and stuffed. Then bonds to be delivered alternately at *London*, and at *Paris*, and so forth.

26. The Frenchmen delivered the foresaid answers written to my Commissioners.

July.

1. Whereas certain Flemish Ships, twelve Sail in all, six tall Men of War, looking for eighteen more Men of War, went to *Diep*, as it was thought, to take *Monsieur le Marechal* by the way; order was given, that six Ships being before prepared, with four Pinnaces and a Brigantine, should go both to conduct him, and also to defend, if any thing

should be attempted against *England*, by carrying over the Lady *Mary*.

2. A Brigantine sent to *Diep*, to give knowledg to *Monsieur le Marechal* of the *Flemings* coming ; to whom all the *Flemings* vailed their Bonnet. Also the French Ambassador was advertised; who answered, That he thought him sure enough when he came into our Streams, terming it so.

2. There was a Proclamation signed for shortening of the fall of the Mony to that day ; in which it should be proclaimed, and devised, that it should be in all places of the Realm within one day proclaimed.

3. The Lord *Clinton* and *Cobham* was appointed to meet the French at *Gravesend*, and so to convoy him to *Duresne-place*, where he should lie.

4. I was banqueted by the Lord *Clinton* at *Debtford*, where I saw the *Primrose* and the *Mary Willoughby* launched.

The Frenchmen landed at *Rie*, as some thought, for fear of the *Flemings* lying at the *Lands-end*, chiefly because they saw our Ships were let by the Wind that they could not come out.

6. Sir *Peter Mutas*, at *Dover*, was commanded to come to *Rie* to meet *Monsieur le Marechal*, who so did ; and after he had delivered his letters, written with Mine own Hand, and made my Recommendations he took orders for Horses and Carts for *Monsieur le Marechal* in which he made such Provision as was possible to be for the suddain.

7. *Monsieur le Marechal* set forth from *Rie*, and in his Journey Mr. *Culpepper*, and divers other Gentlemen, and their Men, to the number of 1000 Horses, well furnished, met him, and so brought him to *Maidston* that Night.

Removing to *Westminster*.

8. *Monsieur le Marechal* came to Mr. *Bakers*, where he was very well feasted and banqueted.

9. The same came to my Lord *Cobhams* to Dinner, and at night to *Gravesend*.

Proclamation made that a Testourn should go at 9 d. and a Groat at 3d. in all Places of the Realm at once.

At this time came the Sweat into *London*, which was more vehement than the Old Sweat ; for if one took cold, he died within three hours ; and if he escaped, it held him but nine or ten hours at the most : also if he slept the first six hours, as he should be very desirous to do, then he roved, and should die roving.

11. It grew so much, for in *London* the 10th day there died 100 in

the Liberties, and this day 120; and also one of my Gentlemen, another of my Grooms fell sick and died, that I removed to *Hampton-Court* with very few with Me.

The same night came the Marechal, who was saluted with all my Ships being in the *Thames*, fifty and odd, all with shot well furnished, and so with in the Ordnance of the *Tower*. He was met by the Lord *Clinton* Lord Admiral, with forty Gentlemen, at *Gravesend*, and so brought to *Duresme-place*.

13. Because of the infection at *London*, he came this day to *Richmond*, where he lay with a great Band of Gentlemen, at least 400, as it was by divers esteemed, where that night he hunted.

14. He came to Me at *Hampton-Court* at nine of the Clock, being met by the Duke of *Somerset* at the Wall-end, and so conveyed first to Me; where, after his Master's Recommendations and Letters, he went to his Chamber on the Queen's-side, all hanged with Cloth of Arras, and so was to the Hall, and all my Lodging. He dined with Me also. After Dinner, being brought into an Inner-Chamber, he told Me, he was come, not only for delivery of the Order, but also for to declare the great Friendship the King his Master bore Me; which he desired I would think to be such to Me as a Father beareth to his Son, or Brother to Brother. And although there were divers persuasions, as he thought, to dissuade Me from the King his Master's Friendship, and Witle's Men made divers Rumours, yet he trusted I would not believe them. Furthermore, that as good Ministers on the Frontiers do great good, so ill much harm. For which cause he desired no Innovation should be made on things that had been so long in controversy by Hand-strokes, but rather by Commissioners talk. I answered him, That I thanked him for his Order, and also his Love, &c. and I would shew like Love in all Points. For Rumours, they were not always to be believed, and that I did sometime provide for the worst, but never did any harm upon their hearing. For Ministers, I said, I would rather appease these Controversies with words, than do any thing by force. So after he was conveyed to *Richmond* again.

17. He came to present the Order of *Monseigneur Michael*; where-after with Ceremonies accustomed, he had put on the Garments, he, and *Monseigneur Gye* likewise of the Order, came one at my right Hand, the other at my left to the Chappel, where-after the Communion celebrated, each of them kissed my Cheek. After that they dined with Me, and talked after Dinner, and saw some Pastime and so went home again.

18. A Proclamation made against Regratters, and Forefallers, and the words of the Statute recited, with the Punishment of the Offenders. Also Letters were sent to all Officers and Sheriffs for the executing thereof.

19. Another Proclamation made for punishment of them that would blow Rumours of abasing and enhauning of the Coin to make things dear withal.

The same night *Monsieur le Marechal St. Andre* supped with Me; after Supper saw a dozen courtes, and after I came and made Me ready.

20. The next Morning he came to Me to mine Arraying, and saw my Bed-Chamber, and went a hunting with Hounds; and saw Me shoot, and saw all my Guards shoot together. He dined with Me, heard Me play on the Lute, Ride; came to Me to my study, supped with Me, and so departed to *Richmond*.

19. The Scots sent an Ambassador hither for receiving the Treaty, sealed with the Great Seal of *England*, which was delivered him. Also I sent Sir *Thomas Chaloner*, Clerk of my Council, to have the Seal of them, for Confirmation of the last Treaty at *Northampton*.

17. This day my Lord Marques and the Commissioners coming to treat of the Marriage, offered by later Instructions 600000 Crowns, after 400000 *l*, and so departed for an hour. Then seeing they could get no better, came to the French Offer of 200000 Crowns, half to be paid at the Marriage, half six months after that.

Then the French agreed that her Dote should be but 10000 Marks of Lawful Money of *England*.

Thirdly, It was agreed that, if I died, she should not have the Dote, saying, They did that for Friendships-sake without president.

19. The Lord Marques having received and delivered again the Treaty sealed, took his leave, and so did all the rest.

At this time there was a bickering at *Parma* between the French and the Papists, for *Monsieur de Thermes*, *Petro Strozzi*, and *Fontivello*, with divers other Gentlemen to the number of thirty, with 1500 Souldiers, entered *Parma*, *Gonzaga* with the Emperors and Popes Band lay near the Town. The French made Sallies, and overcame, slaying the Prince of *Macedonia*, and the *Seignieur Baptista* the Pope's Nephew.

22. Mr. *Sidney* made one of the four chief Gentlemen.

23. *Monsieur le Marechal* came to Me, declaring the King his Masters well-taking my readines to this Treaty; and also how much his Master was bent that way. He presented *Monsieur Bois Dolphin*

to be Ambassador here, as my Lord Marquess the 19th day did present Mr. *Pickering*.

26. *Monsieur le Marechal* dined with Me. After Dinner saw the strength of the English Archers. After he had so done, at his departure I gave him a Diamond from my finger, worth, by estimation, 150 *l.* both for Pains, and also for my Memory. Then he took his leave.

27. He came to a hunting to tell me the News, and shew the Letter his Master had sent him, and doubtless of *Monsieur Termes* and *Marignans* Letters, being Ambassador with the Emperor.

28. *Monsieur le Marechal* came to Dinner to *Hide-Park*, where there was a fair House made for him, and he saw the Courting there.

30. He came to the Earl of *Warwick's*, lay there one night, and was well received.

29. He had his Reward, being worth 3000 *l.* in Gold, of Currant Money. *Monsieur de Gye* 1000 *l.* *Monsieur Chenault* 1000 *l.* *Monsieur Movillier* 500 *l.* the Secretary 500 *l.* and the Bishop *Peregrueux** 500 *l.*

August.

3. *Monsieur le Marechal* departed to *Bolleign*, and had certain of my Ships to conduct him thither.

9. Four and twenty Lords of the Council met at *Richmond*, to commune of my Sister *Mary's* matter; who at length agreed, That it was not meet to be suffered any longer, making thereof an Instrument signed with their Hands, and sealed, to be on Record.

11. The Lord Marquess, with the most part of his Band, came home, and delivered the Treaty Sealed.

12. Letters sent for *Rochester*, *Inglefield*, and *Walgrave* to come the 13th day, but they came not till another Letter was sent to them the 13th day.

14. My Lord Marquess's Reward was delivered at *Paris*, worth 500 *l.* my Lord of *Ely's* 200. Mr. *Hobbeys* 150; the rest all about one scantling.

14. *Rochester*, &c. had commandment neither to hear nor to suffer any kind of Service, but the Common and Orders set forth at large by Parliament, and had a Letter to my Lady's House from my Council for their Credit, another to her self from me. Also appointed that I should come and sit at Council when great Matters were debating, or when I would.

This last month *Monsieur de Termes*, with 500 Frenchmen, came to

* *Perigueux.*

Parma, and entred safely ; afterward certain issued out of the Town, and were overthrown, as *Scipiaro*, *Dandelot*, *Petro*, and others, were taken, and some slain ; after they gave a Skirmish, entred the Camp of *Gonzaga*, and spoiled a few Tents, and returned.

15. Sir *Robert Dudley* and *Barnabe* sworn two of the six ordinary Gentlemen. The last month the Turks Navy won a little Castle in Sicily.

17. Instructions sent to Sir *James Croftes* for divers purposes, whose Copy is in the Secretary's hands. The Testourn cried down from 9 *d.* to 6 *d.* the Groat from 3 *d.* to 2 *d.* the 2 *d.* to 1 *d.* the Penny to an Half-penny, the Half-penny to a Farthing, &c.

1. *Monsieur Termes* and *Scipiaro* overthrew three Ensigns of Horsemen at three times ; took one dispatch sent from *Don Fernando* to the Pope concerning this War, and another from the Pope to *Don Fernando* ; Discomfited four Ensigns of Footmen ; took the Count *Camillo* of *Castilion*, and slew a Captain of the Spaniards.

22. Removing to *Windsor*.

23. *Rochester*, &c. returned, denying to do openly the charge of the Lady *Mary's* House for displeasing her.

26. The Lord Chancellor, Mr. Comptroller, the Secretary *Petre*, sent to do the same Commission.

27. Mr. *Coverdale* made Bishop of *Exeter*.

28. *Rochester*, &c. sent to the *Fleet*.

The Lord Chancellor, &c. did that they were commanded to do to my Sister and her house.

31 *Rochester*, &c. committed to the *Tower*.

The Duke of *Somerset* taking certain that began a new Conspiracy for the destruction of the Gentlemen at *Okingam* two days past, executed them with Death for their Offence.

29. Certain Pinaces were prepared to see that there should be no conveyance over-Sea of the Lady *Mary* secretly done. Also appointed that the Lord Chancellor, Lord Chamberlain, the Vice-chamberlain and the Secretary *Petre* should see by all means they could, whether she used the Mass ; and if she did that, the Laws should be executed on her Chaplains. Also that when I came from this Progress to *Hampton-Court*, or *Westminster*, both my Sisters should be with Me, till further Order were taken for this purpose.

September.

3. The French Ambassador came to declare, first how the Emperor wronged divers of his Masters Subjects and Vassals ; arrested also his

Merchants, and did cloakedly begin War, for he besieged *Mirandula* round about with Forces he had made in the French King's Country. Also he stayed certain French Ships going a fishing to the *New-found-land*. Furthermore, he set out a dozen of Ships, which bragged they would take the Dowager of *Scotland*, which thing staid her so long at *Diep*. Whereupon his Master had taken the whole Fleet of *Antwerp*, conveying it to his Countrey into his Ports, by 20 Ships he had set forth under Baron *de la Garde*. Also minded to send more help to *Piedmont* and *Mirandula*. For this cause he desired that on my Coasts the Dowager might have safe passage, and might be secured by my Servants at the Sea-Coast if any chance should happen.

He was willed to put it in writing; he shewed how the Turks Navy, having spoiled a piece of *Sicily*, went to *Malta*, and there took an Isle adjacent called *Gozo*; from thence they went to *Tripoly*. In *Transilvania*, *Rosko-Bassa* was leader of the Army, and had spoiled it wholly.

In *Hungary* the Turks had made a Fort by the Mines to get them. *Magdeburg* was freshly victualled, and Duke *Maurice* came his way, being suspected that he had conspired with them there.

4. It was answered, to the French Ambassador, That the Dowager should in all my Ports be defended from Enemies, Tempest, and likewise also Thanks were given for the News.

5. The Emperor's Ambassador came to require, That my Sister *Mary's* Officers should be restored to their Liberty, and she should have her Maids till the Emperor was certified thereof.

It was answered, That I need not to answer except I list, because he spake without Commission, which was seen by the shortness of the time since the committing of her Officers, of which the Emperor could not be advertised. He was willed no more to move these Piques, in which he had been often answered, without Commission. He was answered, That the Emperor was by this time advertised, although the Matter pertained not to him. Also that I had done nothing but according to a King's Office herein, in observing the Laws that were so Godly, and in punishing the Offenders. The Promise to the Emperor was not so made as he pretended, affirmed by Sir *Philip Hobbey* being at that time their Ambassador.

6. Deliberation touching the Coin. *Memorandum*, That there were divers Standards, nine ounces fine, a few eight ounces fine, as ill as four, because although that was fine, yet a Shilling was reckoned for two Shillings, six ounces, very many four ounces, many also three

ounces, 130000 *l.* now of late. Whereupon agreed that the Testourn being called to fix Pence, four with help of fix should make ten fine, eight fine with help of nine, being fewer than those of eight, should make ten ounces fine, the two ounces of Allay should quit the charges of Minting; and those of three-pence, being but few, should be turned to a Standard of four of Farthings, and Half-pence, and Pence, for to serve for the poor People, because the Merchants made no Exchange of it, and the Sum was not great. Also to bear the Charges, for because it was thought that few or none were left of nine ounces fine, eight ounces were naught, and six ounces were two ways devised, one without any craft, the other was not fully fix, of which kind was not a few.

9. A Proclamation set forth touching the Prices of Cattel, of Hogs, Pigs, Beeves, Oxen, Muttons, Butter, and Cheese, after a reasonable price, not fully so good cheap as it was when the Coin was at the perfectest, but within a fifth part of it, or thereabouts.

10. I removed to *Farnham*.

12. A Proclamation set forth touching the Coin, That whereas it was so that Men for Gain melted down the Nine-pence Testourn continually, and the Six-pence; also there should no Person in any wife melt it down, upon pain to incur the Penalty of the Laws.

13. A Letter directed to the Lord Treasurer, the Lord Great Master, and the Master of the Horse, to meet at *London*, for the ordering of my Coin, and the payment of my Debts; which done, to return, and make report of their Proceedings.

11. War proclaimed in *Britain* between the Emperor and the French, in these terms, **Charles Roy d'Espagne, et Duc de Milan**, leaving out Emperor.

10. Four Towns taken by the French Souldiers that were the Emperor's in *Piedmont Guerra*: from *Amiens* also the Emperor's Country there was spoiled, and 120 Castles or Fortresses taken.

Proclamation made in *Paris* touching the Bulls, that no Man should go for them to *Rome*.

Other Ships also taken by *Prior de Capua* Merchants, to the number of a dozen; *Prior de Capua* had 32 Gallies.

19. The French Ambassador sent this News also, That the Turks had taken *Tripoly*.

20. The Secretary *Cecil*, and Sir *Philip Hobbey*, sent to *London* to help the Lord Treasurer, &c. in the Matters of the Bishops of *Chichester*, *Worcester*, and *Durresme*, and examination of my Sisters Men.

18. Removing to *Windsor*.

20. The Lords at *London* having tryed all kinds of Stamping, both of the Fineness of 9, 8, 6, 4, and 3, proved that without any loss, but sufferable, the Coin might be brought to eleven ounces fine: For whereas it was thought before, that the Testourn was, through ill Officers and Ministers corrupted, it was tried, that it had the valuation just by eight sundry kinds of melting, and 400 *l.* of *Sterling* Mony, a Testourn being but Six-pence, made 400 *l.* 11 ounces fine of Mony *Sterling*.

22. Whereupon they reported the same, and then it was concluded that the Testourn should be eleven ounces fine, the proportion of the Pencees according to the Gold; so that five Shillings of Silver should be worth five of Gold.

23. Removing to *Oatlands*.

24. Agreed that the Stamp of the Shilling and Six-pence should be on one side, a King painted to the Shoulders in Parliament-Robes, with a Chain of the Order. Five Shillings of Silver, and half five Shillings, should be a King on Horse-back, armed with a naked Sword hard to his Breast. Also that *York's* Mint, and *Throgmorton's* in the *Tower*, should go and work the fine Standard. In the City of *York* and *Canterbury* should the small Mony be wrought of a baser State. Officers for the same were appointed.

A piece of *Barwick* Wall fell, because the Foundation was shaken by working of a Bullwark.

28. The Lord Marques of *Dorset* grieved much with the disorder of the Marches toward *Scotland*, surrendered the Wardenship thereof to bestow where I would.

27. The Wardenship of the North given to the Earl of *Warwick*.
Removing to *Hampton-Court*.

28. Commissioners appointed for sitting on the Bishop of *Chichester* and *Worcester*; three Lawyers, and three Civilians.

10. The Imperialists took the Suburbs of *Heading*, and burnt them.

26. The Passport of the Dowager of *Scotland* was made for a longer time, till *Christmas*; and also if she were driven, to pass quietly by Land into *Scotland*.

20. *Monsieur d'Angoulême* was born; and the Duke of *Vendôme* had a Son by the Princess of *Navarr* his Wife.

30. The Feast of *Michaelmas* was kept by Me in the Robes of the Order.

October.

1. The Commission for the making of five Shillings, half five Shillings, Groats, and Six-pences, eleven ounces fine, and Pence, with Half-pence, and Farthings, four ounces fine, was followed and signed.

5. *Jarnac* came in Post for declaration of two things; the one, that the Queen had a third Son of which she was delivered, called *Le Duc d'Angoulesme*, of which the King prayed Me to be God-father. I answered, I was glad of the News, and that I thanked him for that I should be God-father, which was a token of good Will he bare me. Also that I would dispatch for the accomplishment thereof, the Lord *Clinton* the Lord Admiral of *England*. He said, he came also to tell a second Point of the good success of his Masters Wars; He told how the last month in *Shampaign*, beside *Sedan*, 1000 Horse Imperialists, with divers Hungarians, *Martin Vanrossy* being their Captain and Leader, entred the Country; and the Alarm came, the Skirmish began so hot that the French Horse, about two or three hundred Men of Arms, came out and took *Vanrossy's* Brother, and slew divers. Also how in *Piedmont*, since the taking of the last four Towns, three other were taken, *Monrechia*, *Saluges* and the Town of *Burges*. The Turks had come to *Naples*, and spoiled the Country, and taken *Ostium* in the mouth of *Tyberis*. Also in *Sicily* he had taken a good Haven and a Town.

6. *Jarnac* departed, *having lying** in the Court under my Lodging. The Night before the Bishops of *Worcester* and *Chichester* were deposed for Contempts.

7. There were appointed to go with the Lord Admiral, Mr. *Nevil*, Mr. *Barnabie*, Gentlemen of the Chamber; Sir *William Stafford*, Sir *Adrian Poinings*, Sir *John Norton*, Sir *John Teri*, Knights; and Mr. *Brook*.

8. Letters directed to the Captains of Gendarms, that they should muster the 8th of *November*, being the Sunday after *Hallow-Eve* day.

11. *Henry* Marquess of *Dorset*, created Duke of *Suffolk*; *John* Earl of *Warwick*, created Duke of *Northumberland*; *William* Earl of *Wiltshire*, created Marquess of *Winchester*; Sir *William Herbert*, created Earl of *Pembroke*, and Lord of *Cardiff*; Mr. *Sidney*, Mr. *Nevil*, Mr. *Cheek*, all three of the Privy-Chamber, made Knights; also Mr. *Cecil* one of the two Secretaries.

13. Proclamation signed touching the calling in of Testourns and Groats, that they that list might come to the Mint and have fine Silver of Twelve-pence for two Testourns.

* *Sic.*

3. *Prior de Capua* departed the French King's Service, and went to his Order of Knights in *Malta*, partly for displeasure to the Count *Villars* the Constable's Brother-in-Law, partly for that *Malta* was assailed often by the Turks.

7. Sir *Thomas Palmer* came to the Earl of *Warwick*, since that time Duke of *Northumberland*, to deliver him his Chain, being a very fair one (for every Link weighed an ounce) to be delivered to *Jarnac*, and so to receive as much ; whereupon in my Lords Garden he declared a Conspiracy, How at *St. George's* day last, my Lord of *Somerset*, who then was going to the North, if the Master of the Horse, Sir *William Herbert*, had not assured him on his Honour that he should have no hurt, went to raise the People, and the Lord *Gray* went before to know who were his Friends. Afterward a Device was made to call the Earl of *Warwick* to a Banquet, with the Marquess of *Northampton*, and divers others, and to cut off their Heads. Also he found a bare Company about them by the way to set upon them.

11. He declared also, that Mr. *Vane* had 2000 men in readines ; Sir *Thomas Arundel* had assured my Lord, that the *Tower* was safe ; Mr. *Partridge* should raise *London*, and take the Great Seal with the Apprentices of *London* ; *Seymour* and *Hammond* should wait upon him, and all the Horse of the Gendarms should be slain.

13. Removing to *Westminster*, because it was thought this Matter might easilier and surelier be dispatched there, and likewise all other.

14. The Duke sent for the Secretary *Cecil* to tell him he suspected some ill. Mr *Cecil* answered, That if he were not guilty, he might be of good courage ; if he were, he had nothing to say, but to lament him. Whereupon the Duke sent him a Letter of Defiance, and called *Palmer*, who after denial made of his Declaration, was let go.

16. This morning none was at *Westminster* of the Conspirators. The first was the Duke, who came later than he was wont of himself. After Dinner he was apprehended. Sir *Thomas Palmer* on the Tarras walking there, *Hammond* passing by Mr. Vice-chamberlain's Door, was called in by *John Piers* to make a match at Shooting, and so taken. *Nudegates* was called for as from my Lord his Master, and taken ; likewise were *John Seymour* and *David Seymour*. *Arundel* also was taken, and the Lord *Gray* coming out of the Country. *Vane* upon two sendings of my Lord in the morning, fled at the first sending ; he said, My Lord was not stout, and if he could get home, he cared for none of them all, he was so strong. But after he was found by *John Piers* in a Stable of his Mans at Lambeth under the Straw.

These went with the Duke to the *Tower* this Night, saving *Palmer*, *Arundel*, and *Vane*, who were kept in Chambers here apart.

17. The Dutches, *Crane* and his Wife, with the Chamber-keeper, were sent to the *Tower* for devising these Treasons. *James Wingfield* also for casting of Bills seditiously; also Mr. *Partridge* was attaqued, and Sir *James Holcroft*.

18. Mr. *Banister* and Mr *Vaughan* were attaqued and sent to the *Tower*, and so was Mr. *Stanhope*.

19. Sir *Thomas Palmer* confessed that the Gandarms, on the Muster-day, should be assaulted by 2000 Footmen of Mr. *Vane's*, and my Lord's hundred Horse; besides his Friends which stood by, and the idle People which took his part. If he were overthrown, he would run through *London*, and cry, **Liberty, Liberty**, to raise the Apprentices, and R; if he could, he would go to the *Isle of Wight*, or to *Pool*.

22. The Dowager of *Scotland* was by Tempelt driven to Land at *Portsmouth*, and so she sent word she would take the benefit of the safe Conduet to go by Land and to see Me.

23. She came from *Portsmouth* to Mr. *Whites* House.

24. The Lords sat in the *Star-Chamber*, and there declared the Matters and Accusations laid against the Duke, meaning to stay the minds of the People.

25. Certain German Princes, in the beginning of this month, desired Aid in Cause of Religion 400000 Dollars, if they should be driven to make shift by necessity, and offered the like also, if I entred into any War for them; whereupon I called the Lords, and considered, as appeareth by a Scroll in the Board at *Westminster*, and thereupon appointed that the Secretary *Petre*, and Sir *William Cecil* another Secretary, should talk with the Messenger to know the matter precisely, and the Names of those would enter the Confederacy.

28. The Dowager came to Sir *Richard Cotton's* House.

29. She came from Sir *Richard Cotton's* to the Earl of *Arundel* to Dinner, and brought to Mr. *Brown's* House, where met her the Gentlemen of *Suffex*.

30. She came and was conveyed by the same Gentlemen to *Guildford*, where the Lord *William Howard*, and the Gentlemen of *Surrey* met her.

All this month the Frenchmen continued spoiling of the Emperor's Frontiers, and in a Skirmish at *Ast* they slew 100 Spaniards.

31. A Letter directed to Sir *Arthur Darcy* to take the charge of the

Tower, and to discharge Sir *John Markham* upon this, that without making any of the Council privy, he suffered the Duke to walk abroad, and certain Letters to be sent and answered between *David Seimour* and Mrs. *Poinings*, with other divers Suspicions.

17. There were Letters sent to all Emperors, Kings, Ambassadors, Noblemen, Men, and Chief Men, into Countries, of the late Conspiracy.

31. She came to *Hampton-Court*, conveyed by the same Lords and Gentlemen aforefaid; and two miles and a half from thence, in a Valley, there met her the Lord Marquess of *Northampton*, accompanied with the Earl of *Wiltshire*, Son and Heir to the Lord High Treasurer; Marquess of *Winchester*; the Lord *Fitzwater*, Son to the Earl of *Suffex*; The Lord *Evers*, the Lord *Bray*, the Lord *Robert Dudley*, the Lord *Garet*, Sir *Nicholas Throgmorton*, Sir *Edward Rogers*, and divers other Gentlemen, besides all the Gentlemen Pensioners, Men of Arms and Ushers, Sewers and Carvers, to the number of 120 Gentlemen, and so she was brought to *Hampton-Court*. At the Gate thereof met her the Lady Marquess of *Northampton*, the Countess of *Pembroke*, and divers other Ladies and Gentlewomen, to the number of fixty; and so she was brought to her lodging on the Queen-side, which was all hanged with Arras, and so was the Hall, and all the other Lodgings of Mine in the House very finely dressed; and for this night, and the next day, all was spent in Dancing and Pastime, as though it were a Court, and great presence of Gentlemen resorted thither.

26. Letters were written, for because of this Buiness, to defer the Musters of Gendarmory till the —* day of *December*.

November.

1. The Dowager perused the House of *Hampton-Court*, and saw some courting of Deer.

2. She came to the Bishop's Palace at *London*, and there she lay, and all her Train lodged about her.

3. The Duke of *Suffolk*, the Earl of *Warwick*, *Wiltshire*, and many other Lords and Gentlemen were sent to her to welcome her and to say, on My behalf, That if she lacked any thing she should have it for her better Furniture; and also I would willingly see her the day following.

The 26th of October.

Crane confessed the most part, even as *Palmer* did before, and more

* Blank in original.

also, how that the place where the nobles should have been banqueted, and their Heads striken off, was the Lord *Pager's* House, and how the Earl of *Arundel* knew of the Matter as well as he, by *Stanhop* who was a Messenger between them ; also some part, how he went to *London* to get Friends once in *August* last, feigning himself sick. *Hammond* also confessed the Watch he kept in his Chamber at Night. *Bren* also confessed much of this matter. The Lord *Strange* confessed how the Duke willed him to stir me to marry his third Daughter, the Lady *Jane*, and willed him to be his Spie in all Matters of my Doings and Sayings, and to know when some of my Council spoke secretly with Me ; this he confessed of himself.

November.

4. The Duke of *Suffolk*, the Lord *Fitzwater*, the Lord *Bray*, and divers other Lords and Gentlemen, accompanied with his Wife the Lady *Francis*, the Lady *Margaret*, the Dutchesse of *Richmond* and of *Northumberland*, the Lady *Jane* daughter to the Duke of *Suffolk* ; the Marquess of *Northampton* and *Winchester* ; the Countesses of *Arundel*, *Bedford*, and *Huntingdon*, and *Rutland* ; with 100 other Ladies and Gentlewomen went to her, and brought her through *London* to *Westminster*. At the Gate there received her the Duke of *Northumberland*, Great Master, and the Treasurer, and Comptroller, and the Earl of *Pembrook*, with all the Sewers, and Carvers, and Cup-bearers, to the number of thirty. In the Hall I met her, with all the rest of the Lords of my Council, as the Lord Treasurer, the Marquis of *Northampton*, &c. and from the outer-Gate up to the Presence-Chamber, on both sides, stood the Guard. The Court, the Hall, and the Stairs, were full of Servingmen ; the Presence-Chamber, Great-Chamber, and her Presence-Chamber, of Gentlemen. And so having brought her to her Chamber, I retired to Mine. I went to her to Dinner ; she dined under the same Cloth of State, at my left Hand ; at her rereward dined my Cousin *Francis*, and my Cousin *Margaret* ; at Mine sat the French Ambassadour. We were served by two Services, two Sewers, Cupbearers, Carvers, and Gentlemen. Her Master *Hofstel* came before her Service, and my Officers before Mine. There were two Cupboards, one of Gold four Stages high, another of massy Silver six Stages : In her great Chamber dined at three Boards the Ladies only. After Dinner, when she had heard some Musick, I brought her to the Hall, and so she went away.

5. The Duke of *Northumberland*, the Lord Treasurer, the Lord Marquess of *Northampton*, the Lord Privy-Seal, and divers others, went

to see her, and to deliver a Ring with a Diamond, and two Nags, as a Token from Me.

6. The Duke of *Northumberland*, with his Band of a hundred, of which forty were in Black-Velvet, white and black Sleeves, sixty in Cloth, the Earl of *Pembroke* with his Band, and fifty more, The Earl of *Wiltshire*, with 58 of his Father's Band, all the Pensioners, Men of Arms, and the Country, with divers Ladies, as my Cousin *Margaret*, the Dutcheffes of *Richmond* and *Northumberland*, brought the Queen to *Shoreditch*, through *Cheapside* and *Cornhill*; and there met her Gentlemen of *Middlesex* an 100 Horse, and so she was conveyed out of the Realm, met in every Shire with Gentlemen.

8. The Earl of *Arundel* committed to the *Tower*, with Master *Stroodly*, and St. *Alban* his Men, because *Crane* did more and more confesse of him.

7. A Frenchman was sent again into *France*, to be delivered again to the eight Frenchmen at the Borders, because of a murder he did at *Diep*, and thereupon he fled hither.

14. Answer was given to the *Germans*, which did require 400000 Dollars, if need so required, for maintenance of Religion.

First, that I was very well inclined to make Peace, Amity, or Bargain with them I knew to be of mine Religion; for because this Messenger was sent only to know my Inclination and Will to enter, and not with full Resolution of any Matters.

Secondly, I would know whether they could get unto them any such strength of other Princes as were able to maintain the War, and to do the Reciproque to Me if need should require; and therefore willed those three Princes, Duke *Maurice* of *Saxon*, the Duke of *Mecklenburgh*, and the Marquess *John* of *Brandenburgh*, from which he was sent, to open the matter to the Duke of *Prussia*, and to all Princes about them, and somewhat to get the good Will of *Hamburgh*, *Lubeck*, *Bremen*, &c. shewing them an inkling of the matter.

Thirdly, I would have the matter of Religion made more plain, lest when War should be made for other Quarrels, they should say it were Religion.

Fourthly, He should come with more ample Commission from the same States to talk of the sum of Money, and other Appurtenances. This Answer was given, lest if I assented wholly at the first, they would declare mine Intent to the Stadts and whole Senates, and so to come abroad, whereby I should run into danger of breaking the League with the Emperor.

16. The Lord Admiral took his leave to go into *France* for christening of the French King's Son.

18. *Foffey*, Secretary to the Duke *Maurice*, who was here for matter above-specified.

20. A Proclamation appointed to go forth, for that there went one before this time, that set prices of Beef, Oxen, and Muttons, which was meant to continue but to *November*; when-as the Parliament should have been to abrogate that, and to appoint certain Commissioners to cause the Graiers to bring to the Market, and to sell at prices reasonable. And that certain Overseers should be besides to certify of the Justices doings.

23. The Lord Treasurer appointed High-Steward for the Arraignment of the Duke of *Somerset*.

At this time Duke *Maurice* began to shew himself a Friend to the Protestants, who before that time had appeared their Enemy.

21. The foresaid Proclamation proclaimed.

17. The Earl of *Warwick*, Sir *Henry Sidney*, Sir *Henry Nevil*, and Sir *Henry Yates*, did challenge all Commers at Tilt the third of *January*, and at Tornay the sixth of *January*; and this challenge was proclaimed.

28. News came that *Maximilian* was coming out of *Spain*, nine of his galleys with his Stuff, and 120 Gennets, and his Treasure, was taken by the French.

24. The Lord Admiral entred *France*, and came to *Bulloign*.

26. The Captain of *Portsmouth* had word and commandment to bring the Model of the Castle and Place, to the intent it might be fortified, because *Baron de la Gard* had seen it, having an Engineer with him, and as it was thought had the Plott of it.

30. 22 Peers and Nobles, besides the Council, heard Sir *Thomas Palmer*, Mr. *Hammond*, Mr. *Crane*, and *Nudigate*, swear that their Confessions were true; and they did say, that that was said without any kind of compulsion, Force, Envy, or Displeasure, but as favourably to the Duke as they could swear to with safe Consciences.

24. The Lord Admiral came to *Paris*.

December.

1. The Duke of *Somerset* came to his Trial at *Westminster-Hall*; The Lord Treasurer sat as High-Steward of *England*, under the Cloth of

State, on a Bench between two Posts, three degrees high. All the Lords to the number of 26, viz.

Dukes.	<i>Huntingdon.</i>	<i>Evers.</i>
<i>Suffolk.</i>	<i>Rutland.</i>	<i>Latimer.</i>
<i>Northumberland.</i>	<i>Bath.</i>	<i>Bourough.</i>
	<i>Suffex.</i>	<i>Souch.</i>
	<i>Worcester.</i>	<i>Stafford.</i>
Marquess.	<i>Pembroke.</i>	<i>Wentworth.</i>
<i>Northampton.</i>	<i>Vif. Hereford.</i>	<i>Darcy.</i>
	Barons.	<i>Sturton.</i>
Earls.	<i>Burgavenny.</i>	<i>Windsor.</i>
<i>Derby.</i>	<i>Audley.</i>	<i>Cromwell.</i>
<i>Bedford.</i>	<i>Wharton.</i>	<i>Cobham.</i>
		<i>Bray.</i>

These sat a degree under, and heard the Matter debated.

First, After the Indictments were read, five in number, the Learned Counsel laid to my Lord of *Somerset*, *Palmer's* Confession. To which he answered, That he never minded to raise the North, and declared all the ill he could devise of *Palmer*, but he was afraid for Bruites, and that moved him to send to Sir *William Herbert*. Replied it was again, that the worse *Palmer* was, the more he served his purpose. For the Banquet, he swore it was untrue, and required more Witnesses. Whence *Crane's* Confession was read, He would have had him come Face to Face. For *London*, he meant nothing for hurt of any Lord, but for his own Defence. For the Gendarmoury, it were but a mad matter for him to enterprise with his 100 against 900. For having Men in his Chamber at *Greenwich*, confessed by *Partridge*, it seemed he meant no harm, because when he could have done harm he did it not. My Lord *Strange's* Confession, he swore it was untrue, and the Lord *Strange* took his Oath it was true. *Nudigate's*, *Hammond's*, and *Alexander Seimour's* Confessions he denied, because they were his Men.

The Lawyers rehearsed, how to raise Men at his House for an ill Intent, as to kill the Duke of *Northumberland*, was Treason, by an Act, *Anno tertio* of my Reign, against Unlawful Assemblies, for to devise the Death of the Lords was Felony. To mind resisting his attachment was Felony; To raise *London* was Treason, and to Assault the Lords was Felony. He answered, He did not intend to raise *London*, and swore, that the Witnesses were not there. His assembling of Men was but

for his own defence. He did not determine to kill the Duke of *Northumberland*, the Marquess, &c. but spoke of it, and determined after the contrary, and yet seemed to confess he went about their Death.

The Lords went together. The Duke of *Northumberland* would not agree that any searching of his Death should be Treason. So the Lords acquitted him of High-Treason, and condemned him of Treason Felonious, and so he was adjudged to be hang'd.

He gave thanks to the Lords for their open Trial, and cried Mercy of the Duke of *Northumberland*, the Marquess of *Northampton*, and the Earl of *Pembroke*, for his ill meaning against them, and made suit for his Life, Wife, Children, Servants, and Debts, and so departed without the Ax of the *Tower*. The People knowing not the Matter, shouted half a dozen of times so loud, that from the Hall-Door it was heard at *Charing-Cross* plainly, and rumours went that he was quit of all.

The Peace concluded by the Lord Marquess, was ratified by Me before the Ambassadour, and delivered to him Signed and Sealed.

3. The Duke told certain Lords that were in the *Tower*, that he had hired *Bertivill* to kill them; which thing *Bertivill* examined on, confessed, and so did *Hammond* that he knew of it.

4. I saw the Musters of the new Band-men of Arms; 100 of my Lord Treasurers; 100 of *Northumberland*, 100 *Northampton*, 50 *Huntington*, 50 *Rutland*, 120 of *Pembroke*, 50 *Darcy*, 50 *Cobham*, 100 Sir *Thomas Cheyney*, and 180 of the Pensioners and their Bands, with the old Men of Arms, all well-armed Men; some with Feathers, Staves, and Pensils of their colours; some with Sleeves and half-Coats; some with Bards and Staves, &c. The Horses all fair and great, the worst would not have been given for less than 20*l*. there was none under fourteen handfull and an half the most part, and almost all Horses with their Guider going before them. They passed twice about St. *James's Field*, and compassed it round, and so departed.

15. Then were certain Devices for Laws delivered to my Learned Council to Pen, as by a Schedule appeareth.

18. It was appointed I should have six Chaplains ordinary, of which two ever to be present, and four always absent in preaching: one Year two in *Wales*, two in *Lancashire* and *Darby*; next Year two in the Marches of *Scotland*, two in *Yorkshire*; the third Year, two in *Devonshire*, two in *Hampshire*; fourth Year, two in *Norfolk* and *Essex*, and two in *Kent* and *Sussex*, &c. These six to be *Bill, Harle, Perne, Grindall, Bradford*.*

* The other name dashit.

20. The Bishop of *Duresme* was for concealment of Treason written to him, and not disclosed at all till the Party did open him, committed to the *Tower*.

21. *Richard* Lord *Rich* Chancellor of *England*, considering his sickness, did deliver his Seal to the Lord-Treasurer, the Lord great Master, and the Lord Chamberlain, sent to him for that purpose, during the time of his sickness, and chiefly of the Parliament.

5. The Lord-Admiral came to the French King, and after was sent to the Queen, and so conveyed to his Chamber.

6. The Lord Admiral christned the French King's Child, and called him, by the King's commandment, *Edward Alexander*. All that day there was Musick, Dancing, and Playing with Triumph in the Court; but the Lord Admiral was sick of a double *Quartane*, yet he presented *Barnabe* to the French King, who took him to his Chamber.

7. The Treaty was delivered to the Lord-Admiral, and the French King read it in open Audience at Mass, with Ratification of it. The Lord Admiral took his leave of the French King, and returned to *Paris* very sick.

The same day the French King shewed the Lord Admiral Letters that came from *Parma*, how the French Men had gotten two Castles of the Imperialists; and in the defence of the one, the Prince of *Macedonia* was slain on the Walls, and was buried with triumph at *Parma*.

22. The Great Seal of *England* delivered to the Bishop of *Ely*, to be Keeper thereof during the Lord *Rich*'s sickness.

The Band of 100 Men of Arms, which my Lord of *Somerset* of late had, appointed to the Duke of *Suffolk*.

23. Removing to *Greenwich*.

24. I began to keep Holy this *Christmays*, and continued till *Twelve-tide*.

26. Sir *Anthony St. Legier*, for Matters laid against him by the Bishop of *Dublin*, was banished my Chamber till he had made answer, and had the Articles delivered him.

28. The Lord Admiral came to *Greenwich*.

30. Commission was made out to the Bishop of *Ely*, the Lord Privy-Seal, Sir *John Gates*, Sir *William Petre*, Sir *Robert Bower*, and Sir *Walter Mildmay*, for calling in my Debts.

January.

1. Orders were taken with the Chandlers of *London*, for selling their Tallow-Candles, which before some denied to do; and some were punished with Imprisonment.

3. The Challenge that was made in the last Month, was fulfilled.

The Challengers were.

Sir Henry Sidney.

Sir Henry Nevel.

Sir Henry Gates.

Defendants.

The Lord Williams.

The Lord Fitzwater.

The Lord Ambrose.

The Lord Roberts.

The Lord Fitzwarren.

Sir George Howard.

Sir William Stafford.

Sir John Parrat.

Mr. Norice.

Mr. Digby.

Mr. Warcop.

Mr. Courtney.

Mr. Knolls.

The Lord Bray.

Mr. Paston.

Mr. Cary.

Sir Anthony Brown.

Mr. Drury.

These in all ran six Courses a-piece at Tilt against the Challengers, and accomplished their Courses right-well, and so departed again.

5. There were sent to *Guifnes* Sir Richard Cotton, and Mr. Bray, to take view of *Calais*, *Guifnes*, and the Marches; and with the advice of the Captain and Engineers, to devise some amendment, and thereupon to make me Certificate, and upon mine answer to go further to the Matter.

4. It was appointed, that if Mr. Stanhop left *Hull*, then that I should no more be charged therewith, but that the Town should take it, and should have 40 *l.* a Year for the repairing of the Castle.

2. I received Letters out of *Ireland*, which appear in the Secretary's Hand, and thereupon the Earldom of *Thozomount* was by Me given from *O-Brians* Heirs, whose Father was dead, and had it for term of Life, to *Donnas* Baron of *Ebrekan*, and his Heirs Males.

3. Also Letters were written of Thanks to the Earls. of *Desmond* and *Clanrikard*, and to the Baron of *Dunganan*.

3. The Emperor's Ambaffador moved me several times that my Sister *Mary* might have Mafs, which with no little reasoning with him was denied him.

6. The foresaid Challengers came into the Tournay, and the foresaid Defendants entred in after, with two more with them, Mr. *Terill*, and Mr. *Robert Hopton*, and fought right well, and so the Challenge was accomplished.

The same night was first of a Play, after a Talk between one that was called *Riches*, and the other *Youth*, whether of them was better.

After some pretty Reasoning, there came in six Champions of either side.

On *Youth's* side came.

My Lord *Fitzwater*.
My Lord *Ambrose*.
Sir *Anthony Brown*.
Sir *William Cobham*.
Mr. *Cary*.
Mr. *Warcop*.

On *Riches* side.

My Lord *Fitzwarren*.
Sir *Robert Stafford*.
Mr. *Courtney*.
Digby.
Hopton.
Hungerford.

All these fought two to two at Barriers in the Hall. Then came in two apparelled like *Almains*, the Earl of *Ormond* and *Jaques Granada*, and two came in like Friars, but the *Almains* would not suffer them to pass till they had fought; the Friars were Mr. *Drury* and *Thomas Cobham*. After this followed two Masques, one of Men, another of Women. Then a Banquet of 120 Dishes. This day was the end of *Christmas*.

7. I went to *Debtford* to dine there, and broke up the Hall.

8. Upon a certain Contention between the Lord *Willowby*, and Sir *Andrew Dudley* Captain of *Guifnes*, for their Jurisdiction, the Lord *Willowby* was sent for to come over, to the intent the Controversy might cease, and Order might be taken.

12. There was a Commission granted to the Earl of *Bedford*, to Mr. Vicechamberlain, and certain others, to call in my Debts that were owing Me, and the days past; and also to call in these that be past when the days be come.

17. There was a Match run between six Gentlemen of a side at Tilt.

Of one Side.

The Earl of *Warwick*.
The Lord *Roberts*.
Mr. *Sidney*.
Mr. *Novel*.
Henry Gates.
Anthony Digby.

These wan by four Taintes.

Of the other Side.

The Lord *Ambrose*.
The Lord *Fitzwater*.
Sir *Francis Knollis*.
Sir *Anthony Brown*.
Sir *John Parrat*.
Mr. *Courtney*.

18. The French Ambassador moved, That We should destroy the Scotch part of the Debatable Ground as they had done Ours. It was answered: 1, The Lord *Coniers* that made the Agreement, made it none otherwise but as it should stand with his Superiour's Pleasure:

whereupon the same Agreement being misliked, because the Scotch part was much harder to overcome, word was sent to stay the Matter. Nevertheless the Lord *Maxwell* did, upon malice to the English Debatables, over-run them; whereupon was concluded, That if the Scots will agree it, the Ground should be divided; if not, then shall the Scots waste their debatables, and we Ours, commanding them by Proclamation to depart.

This day the Stiliard put in their Answer to a certain Complaint that the Merchant-Adventurers laid against them.

19. The Bishop of *Ely*, *Custos Sigilli*, was made Chancellor, because as *Custos Sigilli*, he could execute nothing in the Parliament that should be done, but only to Seal ordinary things.

21. Removing to *Westminster*.

22. The Duke of *Somerset* had his Head cut off upon *Tower-hill*, between eight and nine a Clock in the morning.

16. Sir *William Pickering* delivered a Token to the Lady *Elizabeth*, a fair Diamond.

18. The Duke of *Northumberland* having under him 100 Men of Arms, and 100 Light-Horse, gave up the keeping of 50 Men at Arms to his Son the Earl of *Warwick*.

23. The Sessions of Parliament began.

24. *John Gresham* was sent over into *Flanders*, to shew to the *Foulcare*, to whom I owed Mony, that I would defer it; or if I paid it, pay it in English, to make them keep up their French Crowns, with which I minded to pay them.

25. The Answer of the Stiliard was delivered to certain of my Learned Council to look on and oversee.

27. Sir *Ralph Vane* was condemned of Felony in Treason, answering like a Ruffian.

Paris arrived with Horses, and shewed how the French King had sent Me six Cortalls, two Turks, a Barbary, two Gennets, a stirring Horse, and two littles* Mules, and shewed them to Me.

29. Sir *Thomas Arundel* was likewise cast of Felony in Treason, after long controversie, for the Matter was brought in Trial by seven of the Clock in the morning.

28. At noon the Inquest went together; they sat shut up in a House together, without Meat or Drink, because they could not agree all that Day and all that Night.

29. This day in the morning they did cast him.

* Sic.

February.

2. There was a King of Arms made for *Ireland*, whose Name was *Ulster*, and his Province was all *Ireland*; and he was the fourth King of Arms, and the first Herald of *Ireland*.

The Emperor took, the last month and this, a Million of pounds in *Flanders*.

It was appointed that Sir *Philip Hobbey* should go to the Regent, upon pretence of ordering of Quarrels of Merchants, bringing with him 63000*l.* in French Crowns to be paid in *Flanders* at *Antwerp*, to the *Schortz* and their Family, of Debts I owed them, to the intent he might dispatch them both under one.

5. Sir *Miles Partridge* was condemned of Felony for the Duke of *Somerfet's* Matter, for he was one of the Conspirators.

8. Fifty Men at Arms appointed to Mr. *Sadler*.

9. *John Beaumont*, Master of the *Rolls*, was put in Prison for forging a false Deed from *Charles Grandon* Duke of *Suffolk*, to the Lady *Ann Powis*, of certain Lands and Leases.

10. Commission was granted out to 32 Persons, to examine, correct, and set forth the Ecclesiastical Laws.

The Persons Names were these.

The Bishops.

Canterbury.
Ely.
London.
Winchester.
Exeter.
Bath.
Glocester.
Rockester.

The Divines.

Taylor of Lincoln.
Tylor of Hadlee.
Mr. Cox, Almoner.
Sir John Cheek.
Sir Anthony Cook.
Petrus Martyr.
Joannes Alasco.
Parker of Cambridge.

Civilians.

Mr. Secretary *Petre.*
Mr. Secretary *Cicil.*
Mr. *Traherne.*
Mr. *Red.*
Mr. *Coke.*
May, Dean of Pauls.
Skinner.

Lawyers.

Justice *Broomley.*
Justice *Hales.*
Gosnald.

Goodrick.
Stamford.
Carel.

Lucas.
Gawdy.

10. Sir *Philip Hobbey* departed with somewhat more Crowns than came to 53500 and odd Livers, and had authority to borrow, in my Name, of *Lazarus Toker* 10000*l.* Flemish, at 7 per Cent. for six months, to make up the Pay, and to employ that that was in Bullion, to bring over with him; also to carry 3000 Merks weight upon a Licence the Emperor granted the *Scheitz* which they did give me. After that to

depart to *Bruges*, where the Regent lay, and there to declare to he the griefs of my Subjects.

11. There was delivered of Armour, by *John Gresham* Merchant, 1100 pair of Corflets and Horfemen-harnesses, very fair.

14. It was appointed that the *Jesus* of *Lubeck*, a Ship of 800 Tun, and the *Mary Goufton* of 600 Tun, should be let out for a Voyage to Merchantmen for a 1000 *l.* they at the Voyage to *Levants-end* to answer the Tackling, the Ship, the Ordnance, Munition, and to leave it in that case they took it. Certain others of the worst of my Ships were appointed to be sold.

9. A Proclamation was made at *Paris*, that the Bands of the *Dolphine*, the Duke of *Vendosme*, the Count *d'Anguien*, the Constable of *France*, the Duke *de Guise*, and *d'Aumale*, the Count *de Sancerres*, the Marefchal *S. Andrew*, *Monsieur de Jarnac* and *Tavannes*, should, the 15th day of *March*, assemble at *Troyes* in *Champaign* to resist the Emperor. Also that the French King would go thither in Person, with 200 Gentlemen of his Household, and 400 Archers of his Guard.

16. The French King sent his Secretary *de Lausbespine* to declare this Voyage to him,* and to desire him to take pains to have Mr. *Pickering* with him to be a Witness of his Doings.

19. Whereupon it was appointed, that he should have 2000 Crowns for his Furnishment, besides his Diet, and *Barnabe* 800.

20. The Countess of *Pembrook* died.

18. The Merchant-Adventurers put in their Replication to the Stiliards Answer.

23. A Decree was made by the Board, that upon knowledg and information of their Charters they had found : First, That they were no sufficient Corporation. 2. That their Number, Names, and Nation, was unknown. 3. That when they had forfeited their Liberties, King *Edward* the 4th did restore them on this condition, That they should colour no Strangers Goods, which they had done. Also that whereas in the beginning they shipped not past 8 Clothes, after 100, after 1000, after that 6000 ; now in their Name was shipped 44000 Clothes in one Year, and but 1100 of all other Strangers. For these Considerations sentence was given, That they had forfeited their Liberties, and were in like case with other Strangers.

28. There came Ambassadors from *Hamburgh*, and *Lubeck*, to speak on the behalf of the Stiliard Merchants.

* This is imperfect.

29. A Flemming would have searched the *Falcon* for Frenchmen, the *Falcon* turned, shot off, boarded the Fleming, and took him.

Paiment was made of 63500 *l.* Flemish to the *Foulcare*, all saving 6000 *l.* which he borrowed in French Crowns by Sir *Philip Hobbey*.

March.

2. The Lord of *Burgaveny* was committed to Ward for striking the Earl of *Oxford* in the Chamber of presence.

The Answer for the Ambassadors of the Stiliard was committed to the Lord Chancellor, the two Secretaries, Sir *Robert Bowes*, Sir *John Baker*, Judge *Montague*, *Griffith* Solicitor, *Gosnald*, *Goodrick*, and *Brooks*.

3. It was agreed, for better dispatch of things, certain of the Council, with others joined with them, should over-look the Penal Laws, and put certain of them in execution. Others should answer Suitors; Others should oversee my Revenues, and the Order of them; also the superfluous Paiments heretofore made. Others should have Commission for taking away superfluous Bullwarks.

First, Order was given for defence of the Merchants to send four Barques and two Pinaces to the Sea.

4. The Earl of *Westmoreland*, the Lord *Wharton*, the Lord *Coniers*, Sir *Tho. Palmer*, and Sir *Tho. Chaloner*, were appointed in Commission to meet with the Scotch Ambassadors, for equal division of the Ground that was called the *Debatable*.

6. The French Ambassador declared to the Duke of *Northumberland* how the French King had sent him a Letter of Credit for his Ambafadry. After delivery made of the Letter he declared how Duke *Maurice* of *Saxony*, the Duke of *Mecklenburgh*, the Marquess of *Brandenburgh*, the Count of *Mansfield*, and divers other Princes of *Germany*, made a League with his Master Offensive and Defensive; the French to go to *Straßburg*, with 30000 Footmen, and 8000 Horsemen; the *Almains* to meet with them there the 25th of this month, with 15000 Footmen and 5000 Horsemen. Also the City of *Straßburg* had promised them Victual, and declared how the French would send me Ambassadors to have Me into the same League. Also that the Marquess of *Brandenburg*, and Count of *Mansfield*, had been privately conveyed to the French King's Presence, and were again departed to leavy Men; and he thought by this time they were in the Field.

10. He declared the same thing to Me in the same manner.

9. It was consulted touching the Marts, and it was agreed that it was most necessary to have a Mart in *England* for the enriching of the same to make it the more famous, and to be less in other Mens danger,

and to make all things better cheap, and more plentiful. The time was thought good to have it now, because of the Wars between the French King and the Emperor. The places were the meetest, *Hull* for the East parts, *Southampton* for the South Parts of *England*, as appeareth by two Bills in my Study. *London* also was thought no ill place, but it was appointed to begin with the other two.

11. The Bills put up to the Parliament were over-seen, and certain of them were for this time thought meet to pass and to be read, other of them for avoiding tediousness to be omitted, and no more Bills to be taken.

15. Those that were appointed Commissioners for the Requests, or for the execution of Penal Laws, or for overseeing of the Courts, received their Commissions at my Hand.

18. It was appointed, that for the payment of 14000 *l.* in the end of *April*, there should be made an Anticipation of the Subsidy of *London*, and of the Lords of my Council, which should go near to pay the same with good Provision.

20. The French Ambassador brought me a Letter of Credit from his Master, and thereupon delivered me the Articles of the League betwixt the Germans and him, desiring Me to take part of the same League ; which Articles I have also in my Study.

23. The Merchants of *England* having been long staid, departed, in all about 60 Sail, the Woolfleet, and all to *Antwerp*. They were countermanded because of the Mart, but it was too late.

24. Forsoomuch as the Exchange was stayed by the Emperor to *Lions*, the Merchants of *Antwerp* were sore afraid ; and that the Mart could not be without Exchange, liberty was given to the Merchants to exchange and rechange Money for Money.

26. *Henry Dudley* was sent to the Sea with four Ships, and two Barks, for defence of the Merchants, which were daily before robbed ; who, as soon as he came to the Sea, took two Pirats Ships and brought them to *Dover*.

28. I did deny after a sort, the Request to enter into War, as appeareth by the Copy of my Answer in the Study.

29. To the intent the Ambassador might more plainly understand My meaning, I sent Mr. *Hobby* and Mr. *Mason* to him, to declare him mine intent more amply.

31. The Commissioners for the Debatable of the Scotch side, did deny to meet, except a certain Castle, or Pile, might be first razed ;

whereupon Letters were sent to stay our Commissioners from the Meeting till they had further word.

10. Duke *Maurice* mustered at *Artzlar* in *Saxony* all his own Men, and left Duke *August*, the Duke of *Anhalt*, and the Count of *Mansfeld*, for defence of his Country, chiefly for fear of the *Bohemians*. The Young *Lansgrave*, *Reiffenberg*, and others, mustered in *Haffen*.

14. The Marquess *Albert* of *Brandenburgh* mustered his Men two leagues from *Erdfort*, and after entered the same, receiving of the Citizens, a Gift of 20000 Florins; and he borrowed of them 60000 Florins, and so came to *Steinfurt*, where Duke *Maurice* and all the German Princes were assembled.

April.

2. I fell sick of the Measels and Small Pox.

4. Duke *Maurice*, with his Army came to *Augusta*; which Town was at first yielded to him, and delivered into his Hands, where he did change certain Officers, restored their Preachers, and made the Town more free.

5. The Constable, with the French Army, came to *Metz*, which was within two days yielded to him, where he found great provision of Victuals, and that he determined to make the Staple of Victual for his Journey.

8. He came to a Fort wherein was an Abbey called *Gocoza*, and that Fort abide 80 Cannon-shot; at length came to a Parley, where the Frenchmen got in and won it by Assault, slew all, saving 115, with the Captain, whom he hanged.

9. He took a Fort called *Maranges*, and razed it.

12. The French King came to *Nancy* to go to the Army, and there found the Dukes and the young Duke of *Lorraine*.

13. The *Mareschal St. Andrew*, with 200 Men of Arms, and 2000 Foot-men, carried away the young Duke, accompanied with few of his old Men toward France, to the *Dolphin*, which lay at *Rhemes*, to the no little discontentation of his Mother the Dutches. He fortified also divers Towns in *Lorraine*, and put in French Garisons.

14. He departed from *Nancy* to the Army which lay at *Metz*.

7. *Monsieur Senarpon* gave an overthrow to the Captain of *St. Omers*, having with him 600 Foot-men, and 200 Horse-men.

15. The Parliament broke up, and because I was sick, and not able to go well abroad as then, I signed a Bill containing the Names of the Acts which I would have pass; which Bill was read in the House. Also I gave Commission to the Lord Chancellor, two Arch-Bishops,

two Bishops, two Dukes, two Marquesses, two Earls, and two Barons, to dissolve wholly this Parliament.

18. The Earl of *Pembroke* surrendered his Mastership of the Horse, which I bestowed on the Earl of *Warwick*.

19. Also he left 50 of his Men of Arms, of which 25 were given to Sir *Philip Hobbey*, and 25 to Sir *John Gates*.

21. It was agreed that Commissions should go out for to take certificate of the superfluous Church Plate to Mine use, and to see how it hath been embezeled.

The French Ambassador desired, That forasmuch as it was dangerous carrying of Victual from *Bolleyn* to *Ard* by Land, that I would give license to carry by Sea to *Calais*, and from *Calais* to *Ard*, in my Ground.

22. The Lord *Paget* was degraded from the Order of the Garter for divers his Offences, and chiefly because he was no Gentleman of Blood, neither of Father-side nor Mother-side.

Sir *Anthony St. Leiger*, which was accused by the Bishop of *Dublin* for divers brawling Matters, was taken again into the Privy-Chamber, and sat among the Knights of the Order.

23. Answer was given to the French Ambassador, that I could not accomplish his Desire, because it was against my League with the Emperor.

24. The Order of the Garter was wholly altered, as appeareth by the new Statutes. There were elected Sir *Andrew Dudley*, and the Earl of *Westmoreland*.

26. *Monsieur de Couriers* came from the Regent, to desire that her Fleet might safely, upon occasion, take harbour in my Havens. Also he said, he was come to give order for redressing all Complaints of our Merchants.

25. Whereas it was appointed that the 14000 *l.* that I owed in the last of *April*, should be paid by the anticipation of the Subsidy of *London*, and of the Lords, because to change the same over-Sea, was loss of the sixth part of the Mony I did so send over. Stay was made thereof, and the payment appointed to be made over of 20000 *l.* Flemish, which I took up there 14 *per Cent.* and so remained 6000 *l.* to be paid there the last of *May*.

30. Removing to *Greenwich*.

28. The Charges of the Mints were diminished 1400 *l.* and there was left 600 *l.*

18. King *Ferdinando*, *Maximilian* his Son, and the Duke of *Bavaria*,

came to *Linx*, to treat with Duke *Maurice* for a Peace; where *Maurice* declared his Grievs.

16. Duke *Maurice's* Men received an overthrow at *Ulms*; *Marques* *Albert* spoiled the Country, and gave them a day to answer.

31. A Debt of 14000 *l.* was paid to the *Foulcare*.

May.

1. The Stilyard-men received their Answer; which was, to confirm the former Judgment of my Council.

2. A Letter was sent to the *Foulcare* from my Council to this effect; That I have paid 63000 *l.* Flemish in *February*, and 14000 in *April*, which came to 77000 *l.* Flemish, which was a fair Sum of Money to be paid in one Year, chiefly in this busy World, whereas it is most necessary to be had for Princes. Besides this, That it was thought Money should not now do him so much pleasure as at another time peradventure. Upon these considerations they had advised Me to pay but 5000 *l.* of the 45000 I now owe, and so put over the rest according to the old Interest 14 *per Cent.* with which they desired him to take patience.

4. *Monsieur de Couriers* received his Answer, which was, That I had long ago given order that the Flemish Ships should not be molested in my Havens, as it appeareth, because Frenchmen chasing Flemings into my Havens, could not get them because of the rescue they had, but that I thought it not convenient to have more Ships to come into my Havens than I could well rule and govern. Also a note of divers Complaints of my Subjects was delivered to him.

10. Letters were sent to my Ambassadors, That they should move to the Princes of *Germany*, to the Emperor, and to the French King, That if this Treaty came to any effect or end, I might be comprehended in the same.

Commission was given to Sir *John Gates*, Sir *Robert Bowes*, the Chancellor of the Augmentation, Sir *Walter Mildmay*, Sir *Richard Cotton*, to sell some part of the Chauntry Lands, and of the Houses, for the payment of my Debts, which was 251,000 *l.* Sterling at the least.

Taylor, Dean of *Lincoln*, was made Bishop of *Lincoln*.

Hooper, Bishop of *Glocester*, was made Bishop of *Worcester* and *Glocester*.

Story, Bishop of *Rocheester*, was made Bishop of *Chichester*.

Sir *Robert Bowes* was appointed to be made Master of the *Rolls*.

Commandment was given to the Treasurers, that nothing of the Subsidy should be disbursed but by Warrant from the Board; and likewise for our *Lady-day* Revenues.

14. The Baron of the *Exchequer*, upon the surrender made by Justice *Lecister*, was made Chief-Justice, the Attorney Chief-Baron, the Solicitor-General Attorney, and the Solicitor of the Augmentation, *Cosnold*, General-Solicitor, and no more Solicitor to be in the Augmentation Court. Also there were appointed eight Serjeants of the Law against *Michaelmas* next coming.

Gaudy.

Stamford.

Carell, &c.

16. The Muster was made of all the Men at Arms saving 50 of Mr. *Sadlers*, 25 of Mr. Vicechamberlains, and 25 of Sir *Philip Hobbey's*, and also of all the Pensioners.

17. The Progreſs was appointed to be by *Dorchester* to *Pool* in *Dorsetshire*, and so through *Salisbury* homeward to *Windſor*.

18. It was appointed Mony should be cried down in *Ireland* after a Pay, which was of Mony at *Midsummer* next; in the mean season the thing to be kept secret and close. Also the Pirry, the Mint-masters, taking with him Mr. *Brabazon*, chief Treasurer of the Realm, should go to the Mines and see what profit may be taken of the Oar the *Almains* had digged in a Mine of Silver; and if it would quit cost, or more, to go forward withal, if not, to leave off and discharge all the *Almains*.

Also that of 500 of the 2000 Souldiers there being, should be cut off, and as many more as would go and serve the French King, or the Emperor, leaving sufficient at Home, no Fortifications to be made also yet for a time, in no place unfortified; and many other Articles were concluded for *Ireland*.

20. Sir *Richard Wingfield*, *Rogers*, and ———* were appointed to view the State of *Portsmouth*, and to bring again their Opinions concerning the fortifying thereof.

4. The French King having passed the Straits of *Lorrain*, came to *Savern* four miles from *Straſburg*, and was victualled by the Country, but denied passage through their Town.

21. Answer came from the *Foulcare*, That for the deferring of 30000 *l.* parcel of 45 Troas, he was content; and likewise *August Pyſe*, he might have paid him 20000 *l.* as soon as might be.

22. It was appointed, that forasmuch as there was much disorder on the Marches on *Scotland-side*, both in my Fortifications of some Places, and negligent looking to other Forts, the Duke of *Northumber-*

* Blank in original.

land, general Warden thereof, should go down and view it, and take order for it, and return home with speed. Also a pay of 10000*l.* to go before him.

23. It was appointed that these Bands of Men of Arms should go with me this Progreſs.

Lord Treafurer	30	Lord Admiral	15
Lord Great Master	25	Lord <i>Darcy</i>	30
Lord Privy-Seal	30	Lord <i>Cobham</i>	20
Duke of <i>Suffolk</i>	25	Lord <i>Warden</i>	20
Earl of <i>Warwick</i>	25	Mr. Vicechamberlain	15
Earl of <i>Rutland</i>	15	Mr. <i>Sadler</i>	10
Earl of <i>Huntingdon</i>	25	Mr. <i>Sidney</i>	10
Earl of <i>Pembroke</i>	50		

26. It was appointed that *Thomas Greſham* should have paid him out of the Mony that came of my Debts 7000*l.* for to pay 6800*l.* the laſt of the month, which he received the ſame Night.

28. The ſame *Thomas Greſham* had 9000*l.* paid him toward the payment of 20000*l.* which the *Foulcare* required to be paid at the Paſſ-mart, for he had taken by Exchange from hence 5000*l.* and odds, and 10000*l.* he borrowed of the *Scheits*, and ten of *Lazarus Tukkar*. So there was in the whole 25, of which was paid the laſt of *April* 14, ſo there remained 11000, and 9000*l.* which I now made over by Exchange, which made 20000*l.* to pay the *Foulcare* with.

30. I received Adverſement from Mr. *Pickering*, that the French King went from *Savern* to *Aroumasſes*, which was yielded to him; from this to *Leimſberg*, and ſo towards *Spires*, his Army to be about 20000 Footmen, and 8000 Horſemen, well appointed, beſides Raſcals. He had with him 50 pieces of Artillery, of which were 26 Cannons, and ſix Organs, and great number of Boots. From *Leimſberg*, partly doubting Duke *Maurice's* meaning, partly for lack of Viſtual; and alſo becauſe he had word that the Regent's Army, of which were Guides the Count *de Egmont*, *Monsieur de Rie*, *Martin Vanrouſe* and the Duke of *Holeſt*, to the number of 16000 Footmen, and 6000 Horſemen, had invaded *Champaign*, and fortified *Aſchenay*; he retired homeward till he came to *Striolph*, and there commanded all unprofitable Carriage and Men ſhould depart to *Chalons*, and ſent to the Admiral to come to him with 6000 *Swiſſers*, 4000 Frenchmen, 1500 Horſemen, and 30 pieces of Ordnance, meaning, as it was thought, to do ſome enterpriſe about *Luxemburg*, or to recover *Aſchenay* which the Regent had fortified.

There died in this Journey 2000 Men for lack of good Victual ; for eight days they had but Bread and Water, and they had marched 60 Dutch miles at the least, and past many a Streight, very painfully and labourfomly.

19. Duke *Maurice* coming from *Ausburg* in great hast, came this day to the first Passage called the *Clouse*, which the Emperor had caused to be strongly fortified and victualled, a passage through an Hill, cut out artificially in the way to *Insprug*, and there was a strong Bulwark made hard by it, which he wan, after a long fight within an hour and an half by Assault, and took and slew all that were within. And that Night he marched through that Hill into a Plain, where he looked for to see twelve Ensigns of *Lansknights* of his Enemies, but they retired to the second Streight, and yet divers of them were both slain and taken ; and so that Night he lodged in the Plain, at the entry of the second Passage, where there were five Forts and one Castle, which with Ordnance slew some of Duke *Maurice's* Men.

20. This morning the Duke of *Mecklenburg*, with 3000 Footmen, cast a Bridg over a River five miles beneath the Sluce, and came and gave Assault behind the Sluce, and Duke *Maurice* gave Assault in the Face, and the Country-men of *Tirol*, for hate of the *Spaniards*, helped Duke *Maurice*, so that five Forts were won by Assault, and the Castle yielded upon condition to depart, not to serve in three months after the Emperor. In this Enterprize he slew and took 3000 and 500 Persons, and 23 pieces of Artillery, and 240000 S.

The Emperor hearing of this, departed by Night from *Inspruk*, forty miles that Night in Post ; he killed two of his Gennets, and rode continually every Night, first to *Brixinium* ; and after, for doubt of the Cardinal of *Ferrara's* Army, turned to *Villuco* in *Carinthia*. The 30th of May, tarrying for the Duke *d'Alva*, who should come to him with 2000 *Spaniards*, and 3000 *Italians* that came from *Parma*. Also the Emperor delivered Duke *Frederic* from Captivity, and sent him through *Bohemia* into *Saxony*, to raise a Power against Duke *Maurice's* Nephew.

22. Duke *Maurice*, after that *Hala* and divers other Towns about *Inspruk* in *Tirol* had yielded, came to *Inspruk*, and there caused all the Stuff to be brought to the Market-place, and took all that pertained to Imperialists as confiscate, the rest he suffered the Townsmen to enjoy. He took there fifty pieces of Ordnance, which he conveyed to *Ausburg*, for that Town he fortified, and made it his Staple of Provision.

Certain Things which the Commissioners for the Requests shall not meddle withal.

First, Suits for Lands.

Secondly, Suits for Forfeits, amounting to more than 40 *l.* value.

Thirdly, Suits for Pensions.

Fourthly, Reversions of Farms, which have more than one Year to come.

Fifthly, Leases of Manours.

Sixthly, Leases for more than 21 Years.

Seventhly, No offices of special Trust in Reckonings of Mony, as Customers, Comptrollers, Surveyors, Receivers, Auditors, Treasurers, and Chancellors, &c. to be given otherwise than *durante beneplacito*. Also all Mint-Masters, and others that have a doing in the Mint, and such-like. The Bishops, Judges, and other Officers of Judgment, *quam diu se bene gesserit*. Balliwicks, Stewardships, keeping of Parks and Houses, &c. to be granted during Life.

Eighthly, Suits for forgiveness of Debts.

Ninthly, Releasing of Debts to be paid.

Tenthly, Suits for Mony, to the intent to pay Debts they owe elsewhere.

Eleven, Suits to buy Land.

Twelve, Suits for Licenses, to carry over Gold, Silver, Lead, Leather, Corn, Wood, &c. that be things unlawful.

Thirteen, Unresidence upon Benefices.

They shall meddle with Balliwicks and Stewardships, during Leases for 21 Years; Forfeits under 40 *l.* Receiverships, Woodwardships, Surveyorships, &c. during pleasure. Instalments of days for Debts. To those Gentlemen that have well-served, Fee-Farms to them and their Heirs Males of their Body, paying their Rent, and discharging the Annuities due to all Officers touching the same. Keeping of Houses and Parks, ordinary Offices, as Yeomen of the Crown, the Household Offices, &c.

June.

2. Sir John Williams, who was committed to the Fleet for disobeying a Commandment given to him for not paying any Pensions, without not making my Council privy, upon his submission was delivered out of Prison.

4. Beaumont Master of the Rolls, did confess his Offences, who in his Office of Wards had bought Land with my Mony, had lent it, and kept it from Me, to the value of 9000 *l.* and above, more than

this twelve month, and 11000 in Obligations, how he being Judge in the *Chancery* between the Duke of *Suffolk* and the Lady *Powis*, took her Tittle, and went about to get it into his Hands, paying a Sum of Mony, and letting her have a Farm of a Manour of his, and caused an Indenture to be made falsly, with the old Duke's counterfeit Hand to it; by which he gave these lands to the Lady *Powis*, and went about to make twelve Men perjured. Also how he had concealed the Felony of his Man to the Sum of 200 *l.* which he stole from him, taking the Mony into his own hand again. For these Considerations he surrendered into my Hands all his Offices, Lands, and Goods, moveable and unmoveable, toward the payment of this Debt, and of the Fines due to these particular Faults by him done.

6. The Lord *Paget*, Chancellor of the Dutchy, confessed how he, without Commission, did sell away my Lands and great Timber-Woods; how he had taken great Fines of my Lands, to his said particular Profit and Advantage, never turning any to my Use or Commodity; how he made Leases in Reversion for more than 21 Years. For these Crimes, and other-like recited before, he surrendered his Office, and submitted himself to those Fines that I or my Council would appoint to be levied of his Goods and Lands.

7. *Whaley*, Receiver of *York-shire*, confessed how he lent my Mony upon Gain and Lucre; how he paid one Years Revenue over, with the Arrearages of the last; how he bought mine own Land with my own Mony; how in his Accompts he had made many false Suggestions; how at the time of the fall of Mony, he borrowed divers Sums of Mony, and had allowance for it, after by which he gained 500 *l.* at one crying down, the whole Sum being 2000 *l.* and above. For these and such-like Considerations he surrendered his Office, and submitted to Fines which I or my Council should assign him, to be levied of his Goods and Lands.

8. The Lords of the Council sat at *Guild-Hall* in *London*, where in the presence of a thousand People, they declared to the Mayor and Brethren their sloathfulness in suffering unreasonable prices of Things and to Craftsmen their willfulness, &c. telling them, That if upon this Admonition they did not amend, I was wholly determined to call in their Liberties as confiscate, and to appoint Officers that should look to them.

10. It was appointed that the Lord *Gray* of *Wilton* should be pardoned of his Offences, and delivered out of the *Tower*.

Whereas Sir *Philip Hobbey* should have gone to *Calais* with Sir

Richard Cotton, and *William Barnes* Auditor, it was appointed Sir *Anthony St. Legier*, Sir *Richard Cotton*, and Sir *Thomas Mildmay*, should go thither, carrying with them 10000 *l.* to be received out of the *Exchequer*.

Whereas it was agreed that there should be a Pay now made to *Ireland* of 5000 *l.* and then the Mony to be cried down, it was appointed that 3000 weight which I had in the *Tower*, should be carried thither, and coined at 3 Denar. fine ; and that incontinent the Coin should be cried down.

12. Because *Pirry* tarried here for the Bullion, *William Williams* Essay-Master was put in his place, to view the Mines with Mr. *Brabazon*, or him whom the Deputy should appoint.

13. *Banester* and *Crane*, the one for his large confession, the other because little Matter appeared against him, were delivered out of the *Tower*.

16. The Lord *Paget* was brought into *Star-Chamber*, and there declared effectuously his submission by word of Mouth, and delivered it in writing.

Beaumont who had before made his Confession in writing, began to deny it again ; but after being called before my Council, he did confess it again, and there acknowledged a Fine of his Land, and signed an Obligation in surrender of all his Goods.

17. *Monsieur de Couriers* took his leave.

2. The French King won the Castle of *Robdemac*. Certain Horsemen of the Regents came and set upon the French King's Baggage, and slew divers of the Carriers, but at length, with some loss of the Frenchmen, they were compelled to retire. The French King won *Mount St. Ann*.

4. The French King came to *Deuwillars*, which was a strong Town, and besieged it, making three Breaches.

12. The Town was yielded to him, with the Captain. He found in it 2500 Footmen, 200 Horsemen, 63 great Brass-pieces, 300 Hagbuts of Croke, much victual, and much Ammunition, as he did write to his Ambassador.

19. It was appointed that the Bishop of *Durham's* Matter should stay till the end of the Progress.

20. *Beaumont* in the *Star-Chamber* confessed, after a little sticking upon the Matter, his Faults, to which he had put to his Hand.

22. It was agreed that the Bands of Men of Arms, appointed to Mr. *Sidney*, Mr. *Vicechamberlain*, Mr. *Hobbe*, and Mr. *Sadler*, should not be furnished, but left off.

25. It was agreed, that none of my Council should move Me in any Suit of Land for Forfeits above 20 *l.* for Reversion of Leases, or other extraordinary Suits, till the State of my Revenues were further known.

15. The French King came to a Town standing upon the River of *Mosa*, called *Tvoire*, which gave him many hot Skirmishes.

18. The French King began his Battery to the Walls.

14. The Townsmen of *Mountmedy* gave a hot Skirmish to the French, and slew *Monsieur de Toge's* Brother, and many other Gentlemen of the Camp.

12. The Prince of *Salerno*, who had been with the French King to treat with him touching the Matter of *Naples*, was dispatched in Post with this Answer, That the French King would aid him with 13000 Footmen, and 1500 Horsemen in the French Wages, to recover and conquer the Kingdom of *Naples*; and he should marry, as some said, the French King's Sister, Madam *Margaret*. The Cause why this Prince rebelled against the Emperor, was, partly the uncourteous handling of the Viceroy of *Naples*, partly ambition.

The Flemings made an Invasion into *Champaign*, in so much that the *Dolphin* had almost been taken; and the Queen lying at *Chalons*, sent some of her Stuff toward *Paris*.

Also another Company took the Town of *Guise*, and spoiled the Country.

22. *Monsieur de Tallie* was sent to raise the Arrierbands and Legionars of *Picardy* and *Champaign*, to recover *Guise*, and invade *Flanders*.

27. Removing to *Hampton-Court*.

30. It was appointed that the Statds should have this Answer, That those Clothes which they had bought to carry over to the Sum of 2000 Clothes and odd, should be carried at their old Custom, so they were carried within six weeks; and likewise all Commodities they brought in till our *Lady-day* in Term next, in all other Points, the old Decree to stand, till by a further Communication the Matter should be ended and concluded.

The Lord *Paget* was licensed to tarry at *London*, and thereabouts, till *Michaelmas*, because he had no Provision in his Country.

26. Certain of the Heralds, *Lancaster* and *Portcullis*, were committed to Ward, for counterfeiting *Clarencieux* Seal to get Mony by giving of Arms.

23. The French King having received divers Skirmishes of the Townsmen, and chiefly two: in the one, they slew the French Light-

horfe, lying in a Village by the Town; in the other, they entred into the Camp, and pulled down Tents; which two Skirmishes were given by the Count of *Mansfield* Governour of the Town. And the Duke of *Luxemburg* and his 300 Light-horfe, understanding by the Treafon of four Priests, the weakeft part of the Town, fo affrighted the Townfmen and the Flemifh Souldiers, that they by threatnings, compelled their Captain the Count, that he yielded himfelf and the Gentlemen Prifoners, the Common-Souldiers to depart with white Wands in their Hands. The Town was well Fortified, Victualled, and Furnifhed.

24. The Town of *Mountmedy* yielded to the French King, which before had given a hot Skirmish.

July.

4. Sir *John Gates* Vicechamberlain was made Chancellor of the Dutchy.

7. Removing to *Oatlands*.

5. The Emperor's Ambaffador delivered the Regent's Letter, being of this effect; That whereas I was bound by a Treaty with the Emperor, made *Anno Dom. 1542*, at *Dotrecht*, That if any Man did Invade the two Countries, I fhould help him with 5000 Footmen, or 700 Crowns a day during four Months, and make War with him within a Month after the Request made; and now the French King had invaded *Luxemburg*, defiring my Men to follow the effect of the Treaty.

7. The Names of the Commiffioners was added, and made more, both in the Debts, the Surveying of the Courts, the Penal Laws, &c. and becaufe my Lord Chamberlain, my Lord Privy-Seal, Mr. Vice-chamberlain, and Mr. Secretary *Petre*, went with Me this Progreff.

8. It was appointed that 50 poundweight of Gold fhould be coined after the new Standard, to carry about this Progreff, which maketh 150 *l. Sterling*.

9. The Chancellor of the *Augmentation* was willed to furrecafe his Commiffion, given him in the third Year of our Reign.

3. *Monsieur de Boffy*, Grand Efcuyer to the Emperor, was made General of the Army in the *Low-Countries*, and *Monsieur de Prat* over the Horfemen.

10. It was appointed here, that if the Emperor's Ambaffador did move any more for Help or Aid, this Answer fhould be fent him by two of my Council, That this Progreff-time my Council was difperfed, I would move by their Advife, and he muft tarry till the Matter were

concluded, and their Opinions heard. Also I had committed the Treaty to be considered by divers learned Men, &c. And if another time he would press Me, then answer to be made, That I trusted the Emperor would not wish Me, in these young Years, having felt them so long, to enter into them. How I had Amity sworn with the French King, which I could not well break ; and therefore if the Emperor thought it so meet, I would be a Mean for a Peace between them, but not otherwise. And if he did press the Treaty, lastly to conclude, That the Treaty did not bind Me which my Father had made, being against the profit of my Realm and Country ; and to desire a new Treaty to be made between Me and the Emperor in the last Wars. He answered, That he marvelled what We meant, for we are bound, quoth the Emperor, and not You. Also the Emperor had refused to fulfil it divers times, both in not letting pass Horses, Armour, Ammunition, &c. which were provided by Me for the Wars. As also in not sending Aid upon the Forraging of the Low-Country of *Calais*.

12. A Letter was written to Sir *Peter Meutas*, Captain of the Isle of *Jersey*, both to command him that *Divine Service* may there be used as in *England* ; and also that he take heed to the Church Plate that it be not stollen away, but kept safe till further Order be taken.

9. The French King came to the Town *Aveins* in *Hainault*, where after he had viewed the Town, he left it, and besieged a Pile called *Tirlokbut* ; the Bailiff of the Town perceiving his departure, gave the Onset on his Rereward with 2000 Footmen, and 500 Horsemen, and slew 500 Frenchmen. After this, and the winning of certain Holds of little force, the French King returned into *France*, and divided his Army into divers good Towns to rest them, because divers were sick of the Flux, and such other Diseases, meaning shortly to increase his Power, and so to go forward with his Enterprife.

12. *Frederick* Duke of *Saxony* was released from his Imprisonment, and sent by the Emperor into his own Country, to the great rejoicing of all the Protestants.

5. The Emperor declared, That he would none of these Articles to which Duke *Maurice* agreed, and the King of the *Romans* also. The Copy of them remaineth with the Secretary *Cecil*.

Marquess *Albert* of *Brandenburg* did great harm in the Country of *Franconia*, burnt all Towns and Villages about *Norimberg*, and compelled them to pay to the Princes of his League 200,000 Dollars, ten of the fairest pieces of Ordnance, and 150 Kintalls of Powder. After that he went to *Frankfort*, to distrefs certain Souldiers gathered there for the Emperor.

15. Removing to *Guildford*.

20. Removing to *Petworth*.

23. The Answer was made to the Emperor's Ambassador, touching the Aid he required, by Mr. *Wotton*, and Mr. *Hobbey*, according to the first Article *supra*.

24. Because the number of Bands that went with Me this Progress made the Train great, it was thought good they should be sent home, save only 150 which were pickt out of all the Bands. This was, because the Train was thought to be near 4000 Horfe, which were enough to eat up the Country, for there was little Meadow nor Hay all the way as I went.

25. Removing to *Londre*, Sir *Anthony Brown's* House.

27. Removing to *Halwenaker*.

30. Whereas it had been before devised, that the New Fort of *Barwick* should be made with four Bulwarks; and for making of two of them, the Wall of the Town should be left open on the Enemies side a great way together, (which thing had been both dangerous and chargeable) it was agreed the Wall should stand, and two Slaughter-houses to be made upon it to scour the outer Courtins; a great Rampier to be made within the Wall, a great Ditch within that, another Wall within that, with two other Slaughter-Houses, and a Rampier within that again.

26. The Flemings entred in great numbers into the Country of *Terouenne*; whereupon 500 Men of Arms arose of Frenchmen, and gave the Onset on the Flemings, overthrew them, and slew of them 1435, whereof were 150 Horsemen.

31. It was appointed, on my Lord of *Northumberland's* Request, that he should give half his Fee to the Lord *Wharton*, and make him his Deputy-Warden there.

August.

2. Removing to *Warblington*.

3. The Duke of *Guise* was sent into *Lorrain*, to be the French King's Lieutenant there.

4. Removing to *Waltham*.

8. Removing to *Portsmouth*.

9. In the morning I went to *Chaterton's* Bullwark, and viewed also the Town; at afternoon went to see the Store-house, and there took a Boat and went to the wooden Tower, and so to *Hafelford*. Upon viewing of which things, it there was devised two Forts to be made upon the entry of the Haven; one where *Ridley's* Tower standeth,

upon the Neck that maketh the Camber; the other upon a like Neck standing on the other side the Haven, where stood an old Bullwark of Wood. This was devised for the strength of the Haven. It was meant, that that to the Town-side should be both stronger and larger.

10. *Henry Dudley* who lay at *Portsmouth*, with a warlike Company of 140 good Souldiers, was sent to *Guifnes* with his Men, because the Frenchmen assembled in these Frontiers in great numbers.

Removing to *Titchfield*, the Earl of *Southampton's* House.

14. Removing to *Southampton*.

16. The French Ambaffador came to declare how the French King meant to send one that was his Lieutenant in the Civil Law, to declare which of our Merchants Matters have been adjudged on their side, and which against them, and for what Consideration.

16. Removing to *Beuleu*.

The French Ambaffador brought News how the City of *Siena* had been taken by the French-side on *St. James's* day, by one that was called the Count *Perigliano*, and other Italian Souldiers, by Treason of some within the Town; and all the Garison of the Town, being Spaniards, were either taken or slain. Also how the *Marechal Brisac* had recovered *Saluzzo*, and taken *Verucca*. Also how *Villebone* had taken *Turnham* and *Mountreville* in the Low-Countrey.

18. Removing to *Christ-Church*.

21. Removing to *Woodlands*.

In this month, after long Bufinefs, Duke *Maurice* and the Emperor agreed on a Peace, but Marquess *Albert* of *Brandenburg* would not consent thereto, but went away with his Army to *Spires* and *Worms*, *Colen* and *Treves*, taking large fums of Mony of all Cities which he passed, but chiefly of the Clergy. Duke *Maurice's* Souldiers perceiving Marquess *Albert* would enter into no Peace, went almost all to the Marquess's Service; among which were principal the Count of *Manf-felt*, Baron *Haydeke*, and a Colonel of 3000 Footmen, and 1000 Horsemen, called *Reiffenberg*; So that of 7000 which should been sent into *Hungary* against the Turks, there remained not 3000. Also the Duke of *Wittenberg* did secretly let go 2800 of the best Souldiers in *Germany*, to the Service of Marquess *Albert*, so that his Power was now very great.

Also in this month the Emperor departing from *Villachia*, came to *Insbruk*, and so to *Monaco*, and to *Augusta*, accompanied with 8000 Spaniards, and Italians, and a little Band of a few ragged *Almains*. Also in this month did the Turks win the City of *Tamejino*, in *Tranfil-*

vania, and gave a Battel to the Christians, in which was slain Count *Pallavicino*, and 7000 Italians and Spaniards. Also in this Month did the Turks Navy take the Cardinal of *Trent's* two Brethren, and seven Gallies, and had in chafe 39 other. Also in this month did the Turks Navy Land at *Terracina* in the Kingdom of *Naples*; and the Prince of *Salerno* set forward with 4000 Gascoins, and 6000 Italians; and the Count *Perigliano* brought to his Aid 5000 Men of those that were at the Enterprife of *Siena*. Also the *Mareschal Brisac* won a Town in *Piedmont* called *Buffac*.

24. Removing to *Salisbury*.

26. Upon my Lord of *Northumberland's* return out of the North, it was appointed for the better strengthening of the Marches, that no one Man should have two offices; and that Mr. *Sturley*, Captain of *Barwick*, should leave the Wardenship of the East Marches to the Lord *Evers*; and upon the Lord *Coniers* resignation, the Captainship of the Castle of *Carlisle* was appointed to Sir ——— *Gray*, and the Wardenship of the West-Marches to Sir *Richard Musgrave*.

27. Sir *Richard Cotton* made Comptroller of the Household.

28. Removing to *Wilton*.

30. Sir *Anthony Archer* was appointed to be Marshall of *Calais*, and Sir *Edward Grimston* Comptroller of *Calais*.

22. The Emperor being at *Augusta*, did banish two Preachers Protestants out of *Augusta*, under pretence that they preached seditiously, and left *Mecardus* the chief Preacher, and six other Protestant Preachers in the Town, giving the Magistrates leave to chuse others in their place that were banished.

29. The Emperor caused eight Protestant Citizens of the Town to be banished, of them that went to the Fair at *Lintz*, under pretence, that they taking *Marquefs Albert's* part, would not abide his Presence.

September.

2. Removing to *Wotiffunt*, my Lord *Sandes* House.

5. Removing to *Winchester*.

7. From thence to *Basing*, my Lord Treasurer's House.

10. And so to *Donnington-Castle* besides the Town of *Newbery*.

12. And so to *Reading*.

15. To *Windfor*.

16. *Stuckley* being lately arrived out of *France*, declared, how that the French King being wholly persuaded that he would never return again into *England*, because he came away without leave, upon the apprehension of the Duke of *Somerset* his old Master, declared to him

his Intent, That upon a Peace made with the Emperor, he meant to besiege *Calais*, and thought surely to win it by the way of *Sandhills*, for having *Ricebank* both to famish the Town, and also to beat the Market-Place; and asked *Stuckley's* Opinion: When *Stuckley* had answered, he thought it impossible. Then he told him that he meant to Land in *England*, in an Angle thereof about *Falmouth*, and said, the Bullwarks might easily be won, and the People were papistical; also that *Monsieur de Guise* at the same time should enter into *England* by *Scotland-side*, with the Aid of the Scots.

19. After long reasoning it was determined, and a Letter was sent in all haste to Mr. *Morison*, willing him to declare to the Emperor, That I having pity, as all other Christian Princes should have, on the Invasion of Christendom by the Turk, would willingly join with the Emperor, and other States of the Empire, if the Emperor could bring it to pass in some League against the Turk and his Confederates, but not to be aknowen of the French King, only to say, That he hath no more Commission, but if the Emperor would send a Man into *England*, he should know more. This was done on intent to get some Friends. The Reasonings be in my Desk.

21. A Letter was sent only to try *Stuckley's* Truth to Mr. *Pickering*, to know whether *Stuckley* did declare any piece of this Matter to him. *Barnabe* was sent for home.

23. The Lord *Gray* was chosen Deputy of *Calais* in the Lord *Willowby's* place, who was thought unmeet for it.

24. Sir *Nicholas Wentworth* was discharged of the Portership of *Calais* and one—*Cotton* was put into it. In consideration of his Age, the said Sir *Nicholas Wentworth* had 100*l.* Pension.

26. Letters were sent for the discharge of the Men of Arms at *Michaelmajs* next following.

27. The young Lords Table was taken away, and the Masters of Requests, and the Serjeants of Arms, and divers other extraordinary Allowances.

26. The Duke of *Northumberland*, the Marquess of *Northampton*, the Lord Chancellor, Mr. Secretary *Petre*, and Mr. Secretary *Cecil*, ended a Matter at *Eaton-College*, between the Master and the Fellows; and also took order for the amendment of certain superfluous Statutes.

28. Removing to *Hampton-Court*.

29. Two Lawyers came from the French King to declare what things had passed with the Englishmen in the King's Privy-Council;

what and why against them, and what was now in doing, and with what diligence. Which when they had eloquently declared, they were referred to *London*, where there should speak with them Mr. Secretary *Petre*, Mr. *Wotton*, and Sir *Thomas Smith*; whereby then was declared the Grievs of our Merchants, which came to the Sum of 50000 *l.* and upwards; to which they gave little answer, but that they would make Report when they came home, because they had yet no Commission, but only to declare us the Causes of things done.

The first day of this month the Emperor departed from *Augusta* towards *Ulmes*; and thanking the Citizens for their stedfast sticking to him in these perillous Times, he passed by them to *Strasburg*, accompanied only with 4000 Spaniards, 5000 Italians, 12000 Almaines, and 2000 Horsemen, and thanking also them of *Strasburg* for their goodwill they bore him, that they would not let the French King come into their Town, he went to *Weysenberg*, and so to *Spires*, and came thither the 23^d of this month. Of which the French King being advertised, summoned an Army to *Metz*, and went thitherward himself; sent a Pay of three months to Marquess *Albert*, and the Rhinegrave and his Band; also willing him to stop the Emperor's Passage into these Low-Countries, and to fight with him.

27. The Matter of the Debatable was agreed upon, according to the last instructions.

26. Duke *Maurice*, with 4000 Footmen and 1000 Horsemen, arrived at *Vienna* against the Turks.

21. Marquess *Hans* of *Brandenburg*, came with an Army of 13000 Footmen, and 1500 Horsemen, to the Emperor's Army; and many Almain Souldiers encreased his Army wonderfully, for he refused none.

October.

3. Because I had a pay of 48000 *l.* to be paid in *December*, and had as yet but 14000 beyond Seas to pay it withal, the Merchants did give me a Loan of 40,000 *l.* to be paid by them the last of *December*, and to be repaid again by Me the last of *March*. The manner of levying this Loan was of the Clothes, after the rate of 20 *s.* a Cloth, for they carried out at this Shipping 40000 Broad-Clothes. This Grant was confirmed the 4th day of this month, by a company assembled of 300 Merchant-Adventurers.

2. The Bullwarks of Earth and Boards in *Essex*, which had a continual allowance of Souldiers in them, were discharged, by which was saved presently 500 *l.* and hereafter 700 or more.

4. The Duke *D'Alva*, and the Marquess of *Margina*, set forth with a great part of the Emperor's Army, having all the Italians and Spaniards with them, toward *Treves*, where the Marquess *Albert* had set ten Ensigns of Launce-Knights to defend it, and tarried himself with the rest of his Army at *Landaw* besides *Spires*.

6. Because Sir *Andrew Dudley*, Captain of *Guifnes*, had indebted himself very much by his Service at *Guifnes*; also because it should seem injurious to the Lord *Willowby*, that for the Contention between him and Sir *Andrew Dudley*, he should be put out of his Office, therefore it was agreed, That the Lord *William Howard* should be Deputy of *Calais*, and the Lord *Gray* Captain of *Guifnes*.

Also it was determined that Sir *Nicholas Sturley* should be Captain of the new Fort at *Barwick*, and that *Alex. Brett* should be Porter, and one *Roksby* should be Marshal.

7. Upon report of Letters written by Mr. *Pickering*, how that *Stuckley* had not declared to him, all the while of his being in *France*, no one word touching the Communication afore specified; and declared also how Mr. *Pickering* thought, and certainly advertised, that *Stuckley* never heard the French King speak no such word, nor never was in credit with him, or the Constable, save once, when he became an Interpreter between the Constable and certain English Pioneers, He was committed to the *Tower of London*.

Also the French Ambassador was advertised how we had committed him to Prison, for that he untruly slandered the King our good Brother, as other such Runnagates do daily the same. This was told him, to make him suspect the English Runnagates that be there. A like Letter was sent again to Mr. *Pickering*.

8. *Le Seigneur de Villandry* came in Post from the French King with this Message. First, That although Mr. *Sidney's* and Mr. *Winter's* Matters, were justly condemned; yet the French King, because they both were my Servants, and one of them about me, was content *gratuito* to give Mr. *Sidney* his Ship, and all the Goods in her; and Mr. *Winter* his Ship, and all his own Goods. Which Offer was refused, saying, We required nothing *gratuito*, but only Justice and Expedition. Also *Villandry* declared, That the King his Master, wished that an Agreement were made between the Ordinances and Customs of *England* and *France* in Marine Affairs. To which was answered, that our Ordinances were nothing but the Civil Law, and certain very old Additions of the Realm; That we thought it reason not to be bound to any other Law than their old Laws, which had

been of long time continued, and no fault found with them. Also *Villandry* brought forth two new Proclamations, which for things to come were very profitable for *England*, for which he had a Letter of Thanks to the King his Master. He required also Pardon and Release of Imprisonment for certain Frenchmen taken on the Sea-Coast. It was shewed him they were Pirates: Now some of them should by Justice be punished, some by Clemency pardoned; and with this Dispatch he departed.

11. *Horne* Dean of *Durham* declared a secret Conspiracy of the Earl of *Westmoreland*, the Year of the apprehension of the Duke of *Somerset*, How he would have taken out Treasure at *Middleham*, and would have robbed his Mother, and sold 200 *l.* Land; and to please the People, would have made a Proclamation for the bringing up of the Coin, because he saw them grudge at the fall. He was commanded to keep this Matter close.

6. Mr. *Morison*, Ambassador with the Emperor, declared to the Emperor the Matter of the Turks before specified; whose Answer was, He thanked us for our gentle Offer, and would cause the Regent to send a Man for the same purpose, to know our further meaning in that behalf.

11. Mr. *Pickering* declared to the French King, being then at *Rhemes*, *Stuckley's* Matter of Confession, and the Cause of his Imprisonment: Who after protestation made of his own good Meaning in the Amity, and of *Stuckley's* Ingratitude toward him, his lewdness and ill-demeanour, thanked Us much for this so gentil an uttering of the Matter, that we would not be led with false Bruites and Tales.

The Bishop *Tunstal* of *Durham* was deprived of his Bishoprick.

In this month *Monsieur de Rue*, *Martin Rossen*, and an Army of Flemings, while the French had assembled his Men of War in *Lorraine* had sent the Constable to the Army, which lay four leagues from *Verdun*, the Duke de *Guise* with 7000 Men to *Metz*, and the *Mareschal St. Andreu* at *Verdeun*, razed and spoiled, between the River of *Some* and *Ossi*, many Towns, as *Neyon*, *Roy*, *Chamy*; and Villages, *Nelle*, *Follumbray*, a new built House of the King's, &c. insomuch that the French King sent the Admiral of *France* to help the Duke of *Vendosme* against that Army.

There was at this time a great Plague that reigned in sundry parts of *France*, of which many Men died.

20. A Man of the Earl of *Tyrone's* was committed to the *Tower*, because he had made an untrue Suggestion and Complaint against the

Deputy and the whole Council of *Ireland*. Also he had bruited certain ill Bruities in *Ireland*, how the Duke of *Northumberland*, and the Earl of *Pembrook* were fallen out, and one against another in the Field.

17. The Flemings, and the Englishmen that took their parts, assaulted by Night *Hamletue*; the Englishmen were on the Walls, and some of the Flemings also; but by the cowardise of a great part of the Flemings, the Enterprize was lost, and many Men slain. The number of the Flemings were 4000, the number of the men within *Hamletue* 400. The Captain of this Enterprize was *Monsieur de Vandeville* Captain of *Gravelin*.

6. *Monsieur de Boisse* entred *Treves* with a Flemish Army, to the number of 12000 Footmen, and 2500 Horsemen, Burgunions, without any resistance, because the Ensigns there left by *Marquess Albert* were departed; and thereupon the Duke d' *Alva*, and the *Marquess* of *Marion*, marched toward *Metz*; the Emperor himself, and the *Marquess Hans* of *Brandenburg*, having with him the rest of his Army the ninth day of this month departed from *Landaw* towards *Metz*. *Monsieur de Boisse's* Army also joined with him at a place called *Swayburg*, or *Deuxpont*.

23. It was agreed, that because the State of *Ireland* could not be known without the Deputy's presence, that he should, in this dead time of the year, leave the governance of the Realm to the Council there for the time, and bring with him the whole State of the Realm, whereby such order might be taken, as the superfluous Charge might be avoided, and also the Realm kept in quietness, and the Revenue of the Realm better and most profitably gathered.

25. Whereas one *George Paris* an Irishman, who had been a practiser between the Earl of *Desmond* and other Irish Lords, and the French King, did now, being weary of that Matter, practise means to come home, and to have his old Lands in *Ireland* again. His Pardon was granted him, and a Letter written to him from my Council, in which he was promised to be considered and holpen.

There fell in this month a great Contention among the Scots, for the *Kers* slew the Lord of *Balcleugh*, in a Fray in *Edinburgh*; and as soon as they had done, they associated to them the Lord *Horne* and all his Kin: But the Governour thereupon summoned an Army to go against them; but at length, because the Dowager of *Scotland* favoured the *Kers* and *Hornes*, and so did all the French Faction, the French King having also sent for 5000 Scotch Footmen, and 500 Horsemen

for his Aid in these Wars. the Governour agreed the 5000 Footmen under the leading of the Earl of *Cassils*; and 500 Light-Horsemen, of which the *Kers* and the *Homes* should be Captains, and go with such haste into *France*, that they might be in such place as the French King would appoint them to serve in, by *Christmas*, or *Candlemas* at the furthest. And thus he trusted to be well rid of his most mortal Enemies.

27. The Scots hearing that *George Paris* practised for Pardon, committed him to Ward in *Striveling-Castle*.

25. *Monsieur de Rue* having burnt in *France* eighteen leagues of length, and three leagues in breadth; having pillaged, and sacked, and razed the fair Towns of *Noyon*, *Roy*, *Nelle*, and *Chamy*, the King's new House of *Follambray*, and infinite other Villages, Bullwarks, and Gentlemens Houses in *Champaign* and *Picardy*, returned into *Flanders*.

23. The Emperor in his Person came to the Town of *Metz* with his Army, which was reckoned 45000 Footmen, as the Bruit went, and 7000 Horsemen. The Duke d' *Alva* with a good Band went to view the Town; upon whom issued out the Souldiers of the Town, and slew of his Men about 2000, and kept him play till the main force of the Camp came down, which caused them to retire with loss. On the French Party was the Duke of *Nemours* hurt on the Thigh. There was in the Town as Captain, the Duke of *Guise*; and there were many other great Lords with him, as the Prince of *Rocksurion*, the Duke de *Nemours*, the Vicedam of *Chartres*, *Pietro Stozzy*, *Monsieur Chastillon*, and many other Gentlemen.

November.

5. *Monsieur de Villandry* returned to declare, how the King his Master did again offer to deliver four Ships against which Judgment has passed. He said, the King would appoint Men to hear our Merchants at *Paris*, which should be Men of the best fort. He said likewise, how the King his Master meant to mend the Ordinance, of which Amendment he brought Articles.

7. These Articles were delivered to be considered by the Secretaries.

9. Certain were thought to be sought out by several Commissions; *viz.* Whether I were justly answered of the Plate, Lead, Iron, &c. that belonged to Abbeyes? Whether I were justly answered the Profit of Alome, Copper, Fustians, &c. which were appointed to be sold? and of such Land as the King my Father sold, and such-like Articles.

12. *Monsieur Villandry* received answer for the first Article, as he did before, How I meant not by taking freely so few, to prejudice the rest. For hearing of our Merchants Matters at *Paris*, by an inferior Council, We thought both too dilatory after these long Suits, and also unreasonable, because the inferior Council would undoe nothing (though cause appeared) which had been before judged by the higher Council. And as for the New Ordinances, we liked them in effect as ill as their Old, and desired none other but the Old accustomed ones which have been used in *France* of late Time, and to be yet continued between *England* and the *Low-Country*. Finally, we desire no more Words, but deeds.

4. The Duke d' *Aumail* being left in *Lorrain*, both to stop the Emperor's Provision, to annoy his Camp, and to take up the Straglers of the Army, with a Band of 400 Men of Arms, which is 1200 Horse, and 800 Light-Horse, hearing how Marquess *Albert* began to take the Emperor's part, sent first certain Light-Horse to view what they intended. Those Avan-Couriers lighted on a Troop of 500 Horsemen, who drove them back till they came to the Duke's Person; Whereupon the Skirmish grew so great, that the Marquess with 12000 Footmen, and 1000 Horsemen, came to his Mens succours, so the Duke's Party was discomfited, the Duke himself taken and hurt in many places; *Monsieur de Roan* was also slain, and many other Gentlemen slain and taken. This Fight was before *Toul*, into which Fort escaped a great part of the Light-Horse.

6. *Heading Town* and Castle was taken by the *Monsieur de Reux*; The Castle was reckoned too well stored of all things, and rendred either by Cowardice or Treason. The Battery was very small, and not suitable. The most was, that the Captain, *Monsieur Feulix*, was, with one of the first shots of the Cannon, slain, and his Lieutenant with him.

In this month *Ferdinando Gonzaga* besieged *St. Martins* in *Piedmont*.

18. There was a Commission granted out to Sir *Richard Cotton*, Sir *John Gates*, Sir *Robert Bowes*, and Sir *Walter Mildmay*, to examine the account of the fall of *Mony*, by the two Proclamations.

20. The Lord *Ogle* leaving the Wardenship of the Middle Marches, because my Lord *Evers* Land lay there, he was made Deputy-Warden there, with the Fee of 600 Merks; and Sir *Thomas Dacres* of the East Marches, with the Fee of 500 Merks.

24. *Thomas Gresham* came from *Antwerp* hither, to declare how *Monsieur de Langie*, Treasurer to the Emperor, of *Flanders*, was sent to

him from the Regent with a certain Pacquet of Letters which the Burgonions had taken in *Bullonois*, coming from the Dowager of *Scotland*: The Effect whereof was, How she had committed *George Paris* the Irish-man to Prison, because she had heard of his meaning to return into *England*; how she had found the Pardon he had, and divers other Writings; and how she had sent *O-Coners's* Son into *Ireland*, to comfort the Lords of *Ireland*. Also he shewed certain Instructions, *Anno* 1548, upon the Admiral's fall, given to a Gentleman that came hither, That if there were any here of the Admiral's Faction, he should do his uttermost to raise an Uproar.

29. *Henry Knowels* was sent in Post into *Ireland* with a Letter, to stay the Deputy, if he met him, in *Ireland*, because of the Business; and that he should seem to stay for his own Affairs, and prolong his going from Week to Week, lest it be perceived. Also he had with him certain Articles concerning the whole state of the Realm, which the Deputy was willed to answer.

30. There was a Letter of Thanks written to the Regent, and sent to Mr. Chamberlain, to deliver for the gentle Overture made to *Thomas Gresham* by the Treasurer *Langie*. He was also willed to use gentle words in the delivery of the Letters, wishing a further Amity: And for recompence of her Overture, to tell her of the French King's practice, for 5000 Scotch Footmen, and 500 Horsemen. And also how he taketh up by Exchange at *Lubeck* 100000 *l.* whereby appeareth some meaning that way the next Spring.

20. The Lord *Paget* was put to his Fine of 6000 *l.* and 2000 *l.* diminished to pay it within the space of—Years, at days limited.

Here the Journal ends, or if more was written
by the King, it is lost.

Finis.

"Inter Folia Fructus."

LEX TALIONIS;

OR,

A Declamation against Dr Challenger,

*THE CRIMES OF THE TIMES AND THE MANNERS OF
YOU KNOW WHOM.*

1647.

~~~~~  
"HISTORY IS BUT THE UNROLLED SCROLL OF PROPHECY."

—JAMES A. GARFIELD.  
~~~~~

PRIVATELY PRINTED
FOR THE CLARENDON HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

—
1885.

*This edition is limited to 120 large paper and 400 small paper copies,
for Subscribers only.*

LEX TALIONIS;

OR,

A Declamation against Mr Challenger,

THE CRIMES OF THE TIMES, AND
THE MANNERS OF YOU
KNOW WHOM.

In quo quis peccat, in eo punitur.

*— Nec Lex est justior ulla,
Quam necis artifices arte perire sua.*

Judges I. vers. 7.

*“ And Adonibezek said, As I have done, so God hath
requited me.*



Printed in the Yeare, 1647..



A

Declamation against Mr Challenger,

THE CRIMES OF THE TIMES, AND THE MANNERS OF
YOU KNOW WHOM.



WHAT *Cicero* said to *Cataline*, and his confederates in their Conspiracie, I say the same to Master *Challener*, that hee may tell it to his companions in the covenant,—

Quousq, tandem abutère patientiâ nostrâ?

It must never be forgotten how those venerable women came in simplicity of heart to the Parliament at *Westminster* to sue for Peace.

It must never be forgotten to all Posterity in what measure those innocent Women were dealt withall by you; some being cruelly wounded, some most barbarously slaine.

Will not the blood of my Lord of *Stafford*; nor the blood of my Lord of *Canterbury*; nor the blood of *Tomkins* and *Challener*; nor the blood of *Yeomans* and *Boucher*; nor all the innocent blood of so many thousands, which have been sacrificed in these late intestine broyles, provoke you to seeke Peace, nor invite you to embrace Peace, when it is so freely offered unto you. *O Tempora! O Mores!*

In the sharp language of *Cicero* I did begin with you, in the blunt honestie of *Cato* I intend to proceed.

As the base and spungie offal of man (being the common sewer of indigested excrements) can by no means returne backe any nourishment into the more nobler part, the stomache, from whence it first received it ; no more can the body possibly subsist and live without the influence and distillation from its native and proper head.

And as in the bodies Natural, so in Politick, King *Charles* is the essential head, of our Politique Body. He is the true Lord and owner of these his Kingdomes by right of Inheritance. He holds his title in Fee-simple, by the blessed *Tenour in Capite*, from God Almighty, who is *Lord Paramount* of all. To God alone is the King onely obliged to pay his Homage, and oweth not the smallest *quit-rent* whatsoever to my Lord Chancellor of *Scotland*, his *Machivillian* eloquence, nor to Mr *Challener* his home-spun slovenly malice.

It is a bold assertion between you both, to enter into a saucy dispute about the disposing of the sacred person of the King, as if he were a Child, a Ward, or an Ideot. When God can beare him witnesse, Hee hath more Wit, more Judgement, and more Honestic in Him, then any of you all, or all of you together.

Here let me interpose with my short, and true definition of him, both as he is a man, and as he is our King : As he is a man, me thinks I heare my Saviour saluting him, as he did *Nathanael*, *Behold a man indeed in whom there is no guile*. And all the world that knows him must acknowledge with the poet, He is *Homo intiger vita, scelerisq. purus*, and I wish to God, from my heart I could say the same of any of you.

Now as he is our King, how can both Houses, as M. *Challener* saith, or how can both kingdoms, as my Lord Chancellor of *Scotland* would have it, dare to take upon them to dispose of him, who hath under God the sole disposall of us all, with this limitation, with the joynt consent, and wholesome advice of the honest and great Councell of each kingdome, and this is both Law and Gospell.

Inconsistent and incompatible are two very good words, if rightly applyed, but I am bound to beleeeve the Devill himselfe did work very strongly upon Master *Challener's* weaknesse, rather than that his owne naturall *genius* could be possest with such malignancy of spirit as to make so wilde, so base, and so ungodly an application of them both.

I had almost forgotten that remarkable badge of your through Reformation, I meane your Covenant, and the two notorious Committees of both kingdoms : Give me leave to tell you what your

Covenant was at first, and what it now is ; It was at first by vertue of Inchantment, a lowsie thread-bare *Scotch* Chaplin, who growing wearie of the slender stipend of a bare *Scotch* mark *per annum* came over into England to seek its further Advancement, where it became a Sub-preacher, and so rendering itselfe incapable of holy Orders, did take upon it to preach and teach on its own accord.

The first attempt by which this covenant sought to ingratiate itself into the people, was by consummating a marriage betwixt the two Committees of both Kingdomes. The march was privately contracted in the close Committee, and afterwards solemnly published by legislative power, which marriage being thus accomplished without the approbation of his matie., without the Licence of our Church, and without the consent of our Laws, I doubt not it may easily be made null by a bill of divorce, and for the farther punishment of this Incharned Chaplaine your Covenant, let it be banished out of this Kingdome for ever, and let it be consigned to the utmost part of Scotland, there to pine and waste itself away upon its owne dunghill, or else let it be presently torne in pieces, in remembrance of the dispite which was lately done to the King's broad Seal in the presence of both Houses.

And whereas Mr Challenger saith, the Houses are accomptable to none but God Almighty, I must answer him with these few questions.

Who called or caused you to be a Parliament? Was it not by the Sovereigne power of the King?

Who convened the House of Commons together? Was it not the free suffrages, and elections of the people? Can the servants be greater then their Masters?

Did the King and we conferre this trust and authority upon you, thus to lord it over us? I tell you nay; for unlesse you speedily returne unto your wonted Allegiance to his Maiestie, and your dutifull affections towards us, both he and wee shall suddainly call you to a strict accompt.

Read over the Chronieles, where you shall find two Knights of the Shire were called to an accompt by the Counties, for which they had formerly served in Parliament; and both of them were hanged up for their labours.

What, are you so transported and puffed up with pride by reason of your many successes you have lately gotten in your new Modell of

War? Must you needs stand upon your tiptoes, and think you dance in a net? Doe but tell me of one Ordinance you have made which speakes the least sillable tending to a Reformation?

The King hath made an absolute Reformation of all abuses done under his Government, and like a gracious Prince gave us a Trienniall Parliament to boote. But a Trienniall Parliament will not serve your turnes, you must needs have an everlasting Parliament, *quis talia fando temperet a lacrimis*; for with horror I speak it, as you have handled the matter, nothing stands so much in neede of a thorough Reformation as your everlasting Parliament. For if the King and you should be reconciled to-morrow; and that He and you should joyn together to governe us by an everlasting Parliament: We whose Ancestors have ever been the freest subjects under Heaven should be come the meer'st slaves upon the face of the earth.

Beware of *Lex talionis*.

To explain my selfe, I never did heare nor read of any Prince, any great man, nor any great body of a Councell, dare to do any act illegall or extrajudiciall. But God Almighty did either retaliate with his owne immediate vengeance, or else they were met withall by the knowne laws of the Land, in a condigne punishment.

Sir *John Hotham* and his son have tasted of the one already; and take you heed least some, if not all of you, doe not at last feele the smart of the other.

Felix quem faciunt aliena pericula cautum.

To prevent the like ensuing dangers which must needs fall upon our heads, I will give you these three remarkable examples of *Lex Talionis*.

1. In the dayes of K. *Henry* the 8. the Lord Chancellor *Cromwell* perswaded the King, that by vertue of his prerogative, he might put any man to death, and bring it to tryall at law afterwards, and did not the same *Lex talionis* light upon him, when he was the onely man that did so?

2. *Barnavill*,* the Chiefe Advocate of *Holland*, and one of the States, conceived a displeasure against a younker, and nothing would serve his turne (though it were in his owne cause) but corporall punishment. The priviledge of the Gentleman's birth was pleaded by his lawyers; notwithstanding *Barnavill* being prevalent with the Board of States, perswaded them: It would be an addition to their greatnesse

* Barneveld.

to make a President in this kinde, and so a President was made, and the Gentleman was whipt.

Not long after a competition grew betwixt the Prince of *Orange*, and great *Barnavill*, wherein the Prince, having the Military party of his side, got the better of him, so that *Barnavill* was confined; and by that same rule of *Barnavill's* formerly made a President, to whip that Gentleman, a President was made to cut off his head; ther's *Lex talionis* for him.

3. My Lord of *Strafford*, when he was Sir *Thomas Wentworth*, and oracle of the House of Commons, perswaded them, that there was no other way to cut off the Duke of *Buckingham*, but by accusing him of States suggestions, under the name of high Treason; by which meanes if they could once sequester him from the King's elbow by confinement; He doubted not but accusations would come enough against him, to his further destruction, and did not the same *Lex talionis* light upon him. *Jam proximus ardet Ucaligon*. It is high time, then, for every man severally, and all of us together joyntly, to looke about us, Least *Lex talionis* overtake us.

The degenerate House of Lords have altogether declined their true fountain of Honour, the King, from whose cleare streames they had wont to suck both their honour and honestie, by his vertuous example. And these pittifull Lords, having throwne themselves into Mire and Muddy Affections of the Common Rabble, are now glad to drink of the puddle water of Scorne, and Contempt from the meanest Rascalls; Ther's *Lex talionis* in part for them.

The adulterate House of Commons have so deviated from the honest principles and integrity of their ancestors, and having left their righteous middle way; in which they had wont to walke in; Tire themselves out with halting between two cripples, two contraries of extreames: for which their black consciences, they are forc'd to sit down, some leaning to the Presbyterian madnesse on the one side; some to the Independent folly on the other; Ther's *Lex talionis* in part for them.

The proud Metropolis of this Kingdome, the City of *London* of all other escape Scot-free, for this Citie hath beene from the beginning the venerable Bawd of all the Parliament's designes. It hath fed them with million upon million, upon the publike faith, by which meanes it manifesteth itselfe to be the chiefe fomentor of this unnaturall War, and the grand Abettor in this unhappy difference betwixt King and people.

It is still fresh in memorie, how this City sent forth its spurious scum in multitudes to cry downe Bishops, roote, and branch, who like sholes of Herrings, or swarmes of Hornets, lay hovering about the Court with lying Pamphlets, and scandalous Pasquills, untill they forc'd the King from his throne, and banisht the Queene from his Bed, and afterwards out of his Kingdome; besides this Citie still continues to this day dancing attendance with their Traine bands, to guard the causelesse feares, and jealousies of both Houses: they come creeping with their Petitions to them, whom they might command: would they but command their Bands to stay at home, they may thank themselves for all the delayes, and denyalls, they have received.

What guerdon hath this City got for all its costs and paine? I will tell it, This citie is stiled in the world's opinion, the *Parliament's Asse*, on whose backe the members of both Houses ride at pleasure, laying on load upon load, what they think fit. Now good City, if you must continue still to be an Asse learne of your Predecessor, *Balaam's Asse*, and tell your great masters, they have gone astray, tell them so freely, for they dare not beate you for it as *Balaam* did.

Oh my poore countrey, miserable countrey, wretched countrey, that hath these five years past in innocence, drunk of the bitter cup, the dregs whereof is reserved in store by *Lex talionis* for the stupid, senselesse city of London. *If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong unto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes.* Luk. 19, vers. 42.

Much might be said concerning the Prince Elector, but little shall serve the turne, *Si ingratum dixeris, omnia*. He hath gotten the repute of late to become a precious babe of grace, by his princely faculty of snuffing up the back breath of the Reverend Synod, and in a blind devotion takes it for incense. He, good man, not considering his Royal Unkle, nor his owne peculiar interest, which we might justly challenge to him else in *Germauy*, but contents himselfe here with my Lord *Peter's* whole estate.

Hitherto have we seen what hath betyded others, and we cannot chuse but fore-see what must betide us, unlesse we betake ourselves to a speedy and preventing Remedy; Loc here it is.

(1.) Let all things be restored in *Statu quo prius*.

(2.) Let the *Scots* in the name of God, or the Devill that sent them goe home.

(3.) Let King *Charles* (in spite of Mr. *Challencer*) with honour and safety come home, that every one of us may live quietly at

home, and this I am sure is very consistent with the honour of God, and very compatible with the safety and tranquillity of the nation.

Salus Regis, et Salus Reipublicae are not only twins, but *Gemini*, inseparable and individuall; Cursed be those that have hitherto divided them, and blessed be they who seek to cement, and re-unite them together.

Three things have been the bane of Monarchie.

1. First, Weekly Lectures.
2. Corporations.
3. Trained-bands.

And Three Things will be the baine of Anarchy.

1. First, your New Modell of Religion.
2. Your New Modell of Government.
3. Your New Broad Scale.

Let three things be undone by you which have undone us all, and the King shall grant us three things in lieu of them, which shall re-make us.

The Three Things to be undone by You.

1. First, Let your Close Committee, and *Legislative* Power which sits in the Chaire thereof (contrary to Law) be damn'd for ever.
2. Let all the Cavaleers be freed from their illegall Sequestrations.
3. Let your black Propositions which you lately sent to the King be recal'd back, and burnt by the Hangman.

Three things which the King is to doe.

1. That His Majestie will be pleased to renew, ratific, and enlarge our Petition of Right.
2. That he will grant you an *Act of oblivion*.
3. That he will re-marry His Royall Prerogative, and *Magna Charta* together. *Then seeke peace, and ensue it, and the God of peace will grant it.* Now that we may avoid those numbers three, which we find to be ominous, and embrace those numbers three which are propitious; Let us apply ourselves to that blessed number three which is in Heaven: and let not your illiterate Synod dare to meddle with that any more, by any audacious disputation; but rather let us all appeale to him, by an humble Adoration: That so that blessed Trinitie in unitie may grant Peace to every man's conscience in particular, Peace to the whole Kingdome in generall, and Peace and joy eternall to us hereafter.

Farewell! Mr Challenger.

A Letter to the Army.

How can you expect an Act of Indemnity? So long as the King remains in Captivity, the Parliament cannot grant it unto you, for they cannot give it to themselves.

How can you expect money? when you know the Parliament hath been so prodigall in the distribution of such large Proportions to one another, that they have little left to reward you withall.

Is it liberty of conscience you speak for? That you know rests onely in the Kings breast.

Restore the King to the Throne againe, and all these things shall be added to you.

If you neglect this faire opportunitie, the vengeance of God shall dogge you at the heeles. Instead of a Trophie for all your Victories, you shall render yourselves slaves to the Presbyterian Bondage, who like the Egyptian Taskmasters shall compell you to make Brick in their full tale, and without giving you stubble.

To whom then will you fly for succour? God will abominate you, and will not help you; man (especially Englishmen) will scorne you, and laugh at your misery.

Behold, I have set this day before your eyes, Honour, and Dishonour, being the two sole Rewards of all humane Actions. Consider this timely, and be wise.

Be it unto you according to your merit.

Fints.

"Inter folia fructus."

GALLIENUS REDIVIVUS;

OR,

Murder Will Out, &c.,

BEING A TRUE ACCOUNT OF THE

DE-WITTING OF GLENCOE, GAFFNEY, &c.

~~~~~  
"HISTORY IS BUT THE UNROLLED SCROLL OF PROPHECY."

—JAMES A. GARFIELD.  
~~~~~

PRIVATELY PRINTED
FOR THE CLARENDON HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

—
1885.

*This edition is limited to 120 large paper and 400 small paper copies,
for Subscribers only.*

GALLIENUS REDIVIVUS;
OR,
Murther Will Out, Etc.,
Being a True Account of the
DE-WITTING.
OF
GLENCOE, GAFFNEY, &c.

They gave out that the design of their Coming was to introduce Liberty, and depose Tyrants: But having gain'd the Power, They did so Tyrannize Themselves, That the Reign of Former Oppressors seem'd a Golden Age, if compar'd with the Arbitrariness and Exaction of these pretended Deliverers; which made the Sicilians think them much more happy, who Expir'd in Servitude, than those who liv'd to see such a Dismal Freedom.

—Plutarch. Life of Timoleon.



Printed at Edinburgh, in the Year 1695.



**A Letter from a Gentleman in Scotland to
his Friend at London, who desir'd a Particular
Account of the Business of Glenco.**

EDINBURGH, *April. 20th 1692.*

SIR,

THE Account you desir'd of that strange and surprizing
Massacre of *Glenco* take as follows:—

Mac-jan Mac-donald, Laird of *Glenco*, a Branch of the *Mackdonalds*, one of the greatest Clans (or Tribes) in the North of *Scotland*, came with the most considerable Men of his Clan to *Coll. Hill*, Governour of *Fort William* at *Inverlochy*, some few days before the Expiring of the time for receiving the Indemnity appointed by Proclamation, which as I take it, was the First of *January* last, entreating he would administer unto him the *Oaths* which the fore-said Proclamation requir'd to be taken; that so submitting himself to the Government, he might have its Protection. The Colonel receiv'd him with all Expressions of Kindness; nevertheless shifted the administering the *Oaths* to him, alledging that by the Proclamation it did not belong to him, but to the Sheriffs, Bailiffs of Regalities, and Magistrates of Burghs, to administer them. *Mac-jan* Complaining that by this *Disappointment* he might be wrong'd, the Time being now near the Expiring, and the Weather so extreme, and the ways so very bad, that it was not possible for him so soon to reach any Sheriff, &c. got from *Coll. Hill*, under his Hand, his Protection; and withal he was assur'd, that no Orders from the Government against him should be put in Execution, until he were first advertis'd, and had time allow'd him to apply himself to King or Council for his

Safety. But the better to make all sure, (tho' this might have seem'd Security enough for that time) with all dispatch imaginable he posted to *Inverary*, the Chief Town of *Argyleshire*, there he found Sir *Collin Campbell* of *Arakintis*, Sheriff of that Shire, and crav'd of him the Benefit of the Indemnity, according to the Proclamation, he being willing to perform all the Conditions requir'd. Sir *Collin* at first scrupled to admit him to the Oaths, the Time which the Proclamation did appoint being elapsed by one day, alledging it would be of no use to him then to take them : But *Mac-jan* represented that it was not his Fault, he having come in time enough to Colonel *Hill*, not doubting but he could have administred the Oaths to him, and that upon his refusal he had made such hast to *Inverary*, that he might have come in time enough, had not the extremity of the Weather hinder'd him ; and even as it was, he was but one day after the Time appointed ; and that would be very unbecoming the Government to take Advantage of a Man's coming late by one Day, especially when he had done his utmost to have come in time. Upon this, and his threatning to protest against the Sheriff for the Severity of this Usage, he administred to him and his Attendants the Oaths, *Mac-jan* depending upon the Indemnity granted to those who should take them ; and having so done, he went home, and lived quietly and peaceably under the Government, till the day of his Death.

In *January* last, a Party of the Earl of *Argile's* Regiment came to that Country : the Design of their coming was then suspected to be to take course with those who should stand out, and not submit, and take the Oaths. The Garison of *Inverlochy* being throng'd, and *Glenco* being commodious for quartering, as being near that Garison, those Soldiers were sent thither to Quarter ; they pretended they came to exact Arrears of Cess and Hearth-Money, (a Tax never known in *Scotland*, until laid on by the Parliament, 1690, after the Parliament of *England* had eas'd themselves of it ;) e'er they entred *Glenco*, that Laird, or his Sons, came out to meet them, and asked them if they came as Friends or as Enemies ? The Officers answer'd as Friends ; and gave their Paroll of Honour, that they would do neither him nor his Concerns any harm ; upon which he welcom'd them, promising them the best Entertainment the Place could afford. This he really perform'd, as all the Soldiers confess. He and they lived together in mutual Kindness and Friendship fifteen days or thereabouts ; so far was he from fearing any Hurt from them. And the very last Day of his Life he spent in keeping Company with the

Commander of that Party, Capt. *Campbell* of *Glenlyon*, playing at Cards with him till 6 or 7 at Night, and at their parting mutual Protestations of Kindness were renew'd. Some time that very day, but whether before or after their parting, I know not, Capt. *Campbell* had these Orders sent him from Major *Duncanson*, a Copy whereof I here send you.

"BALLACHOLIS, Feb. 12. 1692.

"SIR,

"You are hereby ordered to fall upon the Rebels the *Mac-Donalds* of *Glenco*, and put all to the Sword under 70. You are to have especial Care, that the Old Fox and his Sons do upon no account escape your Hands ; You are to secure all the Avenues, that no Man escape : This you are to put in Execution at five a Clock in the Morning precisely, and by that time or very shortly after it, I'll strive to be at you with a stronger Party ; If I do not come to you at five, you are not to tarry for me, but to fall on. *This is by the King's SPECIAL COMMAND*, for the Good and Safety of the Country that these Miscreants may be cut off, Root and Branch. See that this be put in Execution without Feud or Favour, else you may expect to be Treated as not true to the King or Government, nor a Man fit to carry Commission in the King's Service. Expecting you will not fail in the fulfilling hereof, as you love your self. I subscribe these with my Hand,

"ROBERT DUNCANSON.

"For Their Majesties Service, to Capt. *Robert Campbell* of *Glenlyon*."

Duncanson had receiv'd Orders from Lieutenant Collonel *Hamilton*, which were as follows.

"Ballacholis, Feb. 12, 1692.

"SIR,

"Per Second to the Commander in Chief, and my Collonel's Orders to me, for putting in Execution the Service commanded against the Rebels in *Glenco*, wherein you, with the Party of the Earl of Argyle's Regiment under your Command are to be concern'd:

You are therefore forthwith to order your Affairs so, as that the several Posts already assign'd you, be by you and your several Detachments fallen in Action with, precisely by five a Clock to morrow Morning, being *Saturday*; at which time I will endeavour the same with those appointed from this Regiment for the other Places. It will be most necessary you secure those Avenues on the South side, that the Old *Fox*, nor none of his Cubs get away. The Orders are that none be spar'd, from 70, of the Sword, nor the Government troubled with Prisoners. This is all, until I see you. From

“Your humble Servant,

“JAMES HAMILTON.

“Please to order a Guard to secure the Ferry, and the Boats there; and the Boats must be all on this side the Ferry, after your Men are over.

“For their Majesties Service, for Major *Robert Duncanson*, of the Earl of Argyle's Regiment.”

The Soldiers being disposed five or three in a House, according to the Number of the Family they were to Assassinate, had their Orders given them secretly. They had been all receiv'd as Friends by those poor People, who intended no Evil themselves, and little suspected that their Guests were design'd to be their Murtherers. At 5 a Clock in the Morning they began their bloody Work, Surpris'd and Butcher'd 38 Persons, who had kindly receiv'd them under their Roofs. *Mac-jan* himself was Murther'd, and is much bemoan'd; He was a stately well-favour'd Man, and of good Courage and Sense: As also the Laird *Archinrikin*, a Gentleman of more than ordinary Judgment and Understanding, who had submitted to the Government, and had Coll. *Hill's* Protection in his Pocket, which he had got three Months before. I cannot without Horror represent how that a Boy about Eight Years of Age was murthered; he seeing what was done to others in the House with him, in a terrible Fright run out of the House, and espying Capt. *Campbell*, grasp'd him about the Legs, crying for Mercy, and offering to be his Servant all his Life. I am informed Capt. *Campbell* inclin'd to spare him; but one *Drummond*, an Officer, barbarously run his Dagger through him, whereof he died immediately. The rehearsal of several Particulars and Circumstances of this Tragical Story, makes it appear most doleful; as that *Mac-jan* was killed as he was drawing on his Breeches, standing before his Bed, and

giving Orders to his Servants for the good Entertainment of those who murdered him ; While he was speaking the Words, he was shot through the Head, and fell dead in his Ladies Arms, who through the Grief of this and other bad Usages she met with, died the next day. It is not to be omitted, that most of those poor People were killed when they were asleep, and none was allowed to pray to *God* for Mercy. Providence ordered it so, that that Night was most boisterous ; so as a Party of 400 Men, who should have come to the other End of the *Glen*, and begun the like work there at the same Hour, (intending that the poor Inhabitants should be enclosed, and none of them escape) could not march at length, until it was 9 a Clock, and this afforded to many an Opportunity of escaping, and none were killed but those in whose Houses *Campbell* and *Glenlyon's* Men were Quartered, otherwise all the Male under 70 Years of Age, to the number of 200, had been cut off, for that was the Order ; and it might have been easily executed, especially considering that the Inhabitants had no Arms at that time ; for upon the first hearing that the Soldiers were coming to the *Glen*, they had conveyed them all out of the way : For though they relied on the promises which were made them for their Safety ; yet they thought it not improbable that they might be disarmed. I know not whether to impute it to difficulty of distinguishing the difference of a few Years, or to the fury of the Souldiers, who being once glutted with *Blood*, stand at nothing, that even some above Seventy Years of Age were destroyed. They set all the Houses on Fire, drove off all the Cattle to the *Garison* of *Inverlochy*, viz. 900 Cows, 200 Horses, and a great many Sheep and Goats, and there they were divided amongst the Officers. And how dismal may you imagine the Case of the poor Women and Children was then ! It was lamentable, past expression ; their Husbands and Fathers, and near Relations were forced to flee for their Lives ; they themselves almost stript, and nothing left them, and their Houses being burnt, and not one House nearer than six Miles ; and to get thither they were to pass over Mountains, and Wreaths of Snow, in a vehement Storm, wherein the greatest part of them perished through Hunger and Cold. It fills me with horror to think of poor stript Children and Women, some with Child, and some giving Suck, wrestling against a Storm in Mountains, and heaps of Snow, and at length to be overcome, and give over, and fall down, and die miserably.

You see in *Hamilton's* Order to *Duncanson*, there's a special Caution,

That the Old Fox nor none of his Cubs should escape; and in Duncanson's Order to Capt. Campbell of Glen'yon, That the old Fox nor none of his Sons escape; but notwithstanding all this wicked Caution, it pleas'd God that the two young gentlemen, Mac-jan's Sons escap'd: For it happen'd that the younger of these Gentlemen trusted little to the fair promises of Campbell, and had a more watchful eye over him than his Father or Brother, who suffered themselves by his reiterated Oaths to be deluded into a belief of his Integrity: He having a strong Impression on his Spirit, that some mischievous Design was hidden under Campbell's specious Pretences, it made him, after the rest were in Bed, remain in a retired Corner, where he had an advantagious Prospect into their Guard. About midnight perceiving several Souldiers to enter it, this encreased his Jealousy; so he went and communicated his Fears to his Brother, who could not for a long time be perswaded there was any bad Design against them, and asserted, That what he had seen, was not a doubling their Guards in order to any ill design, but that being in a strange place, and at a distance from the Garison, they were to send out Centinels far from the Guard, and because of the Extremity of the Weather relieved them often, and the Men he saw could be no more but these. Yet he persisting to say, That they were not so secure, but that it was fit to acquaint their Father with what he had seen, he prevailed with his Brother to rise, and go with him to his Father who lay in a Room contiguous to that they were in. Though what the younger Son alledged made no great Impression on his Father, yet he allowed his Sons to try what they could discover. They well knowing all Skulking places there, went and hid themselves near to a Centinel's Post, where instead of one they discovered eight or ten Men; this made them more inquisitive, so they crept as near as they could without being discovered, so near that they could hear one say to his Fellows, That he liked not this Work, and that had he known of it he would have been very unwilling to have come there; but that none, except their Commanders, knew of it until within a quarter of an hour. The Soldier added, That he was willing to fight against the Men of the Glen, but it was base to murder them. But to all this was answered, All the blame be on such as gave the Orders; we are free, being bound to obey our Officers. Upon hearing of these words the young Gentlemen retired as quickly and quietly as they could towards the House, to inform their Father of what they had heard; but as they came nigh to it, they perceived it surrounded, and heard Guns discharged, and the People shrieking; whereupon,

being unarm'd, and totally unable to rescue their Father, they preserved their own Lives in hopes yet to serve their King and Country, and see Justice done upon those Hell-Hounds, treacherous Murtherers, the *Shame* of their Country, and *Disgrace* of Mankind.

I must not forget to tell you, That there were two of these officers who had given their Paroll of Honour to *Mac-jan*, who refused to be concerned in that *Brutal Tragedy*, for which they were sent Prisoners to *Glasco*, where if they remain not still, I am sure they were some Weeks ago.

Thus, Sir, in obedience to your Commands, I have sent you such Account as I could get of that monstrous and most inhuman Massacre of the Laird of *Glenco*, and others of his *Clan*. You desire some Proofs of the truth of the Story; for you say there are many in *England* who cannot believe such a thing could be done, and publick Justice not executed upon the Ruffians: For they take it for granted, that no such order could be given by the Government; and you say they will never believe it without a downright Demonstration. Sir, As to the Government, I will not meddle with it; or whether these Officers who murdered *Glenco*, had such Orders as they pretended from the Government; the Government knows that best, and how to vindicate their own Honour, and punish the Murtherers who pretended their authority, and still stand upon it. But as to the Matter of Fact of the murder of *Glenco*, you may depend upon it, as certain and undeniable. It would be thought as strange a thing in *Scotland* for any Man to doubt of it, as of the death of my Lord *Dundee*, or with you that the Duke of *Monmouth* lost his Head. But to put you out of all doubt, you will e'er long have my Lord *Argyle's* Regiment with you in *London*, and there you may speak with *Glenlyon* himself, with *Drummond* and the rest of the Actors in that dismal Tragedy; and on my Life, there is never a one of them will deny it to you; for they know that it is notoriously known all over *Scotland*, and it is an Admiration to us that there should be any one in *England* who makes the least doubt of it. Nay, *Glenlyon* is so far from denying it, that he brags of it, and justifies the Action publicly: He said in the Royal Coffec-House in *Edinburgh*, that he would do it again; nay, That he would stab any man in *Scotland* or in *England*, without asking the Cause, if the King gave him Orders, and that it was every good Subject's duty so to do; and I am credibly inform'd, that *Glenlyon* and the rest of them have address'd themselves to the Council for a Reward for their good Service, in destroying *Glenco*, pursuant to their Orders.

There is enough of this mournful Subject : If what I have said satisfy you not, you may have what farther Proof, and in what manner you please to ask it.

Sir,

Your Humble Servant, &c.

N.B. That the Gentleman to whom this Letter was sent, did on *Thursday, June 30. 1692.* when the Lord *Argyle's* Regiment was quartered at *Brentford*, go thither, and had this Story of the Massacre of *Glenco* from the very Men who were the Actors in it: *Glenlyon* and *Drummond* were both there. The Highlander who told him the Story, expressing Guilt which was visible in *Glenlyon*, said, *Glenco* hangs about *Glenlyon* Night and Day, and you may see him in his Face. I am told likewise that Sir *John Lowther* refused to accept of the Place of Lord Advocate of *Scotland*, unless he might have liberty to prosecute *Glenlyon*, and the rest of the Murtherers of *Glenco*, which not being granted, *James Stuart* (who was forfeited for Treason by K. C. 2. and since Knighted by K. W.) has now the Place.





GALLIENUS REDIVIVUS;

OR,

Murther Will Out, &c.



THE fore going Account of the Barbarous Massacre of Glenco, was Printed in the year 1692. in the Answer to Dr. King's Book of the State of Protestants in Ireland: And all the Reception it met with among many here in England, was, That it was a Jacobite Story, on purpose to Reflect upon the Government, and that there was no such thing: But this is now confuted by the Proceedings of the Parliament in Scotland, this Summer Session, 1695. Wherein they have voted the killing of the Glenco-men to be a Murther; and yet have acquitted Sir Thomas Levingston, and Collonel Hill, who gave the Orders for Killing of them. Why? Because their Orders were but pursuant to the Instructions they had from Court. Where will this Lodge the Murther? The Design, it is well enough known, is to put it upon Sir John Dalrymple, commonly call'd Maister of Stair, one of the Secretaries for Scotland, because he is not so Fiery a Presbyterian as the other Secretary, James Johnston, who hath it by Inheritance to love Crown and Mitre alike; and to have a just Reward for it. But Dalrymple is only a Libertine, or Latitudinarian, One of the modern No-Religion, who are indifferent to All, so they be troubled with none. Therefore he cares not whether Episcopacy or Presbytery, or what else is set up, provided the People be easy with it.

Now it being known to all the World, That the Pretence of the Inclinations of the People in Scotland, which was made the Ground-work for abolishing Episcopacy, and setting up Presbytery there, was a mere Sham, contriv'd by this Johnston, and the BIGOT Presbyterian Party in Scotland; who were all put in Power, in the beginning of this Revolution; and set on the Barbarous Rabbling of the Episcopal Clergy in the West of Scotland, that they might cry out, The Inclinations of the People were against Episcopacy: And having, by these and other Arts (which are fully related in Print) Pack'd, and then surpriz'd the first Convention, or meeting of Estates, to Abolish Episcopacy: They dare not have a new Parliament (as in England) but keep on the same Convention (only changing the name into that of a Parliament) to this day: Because no Free Parliament can be had in Scotland, which would not the first day, spue out Presbytery, and Re-Establish their much more below'd Episcopacy, and the People showing great Un-easiness under their present Establishment (which hath been trick'd and forc'd upon them), all the Craft and Violence of the Regnant Presbytery, assisted by Acts of Parliament, and all the Countenance of the Government, having not yet been able to Oust the Episcopal Clergy in the North, and other parts of Scotland, or prevail with the People to admit of, or almost give Civil Treatment to the Presbyterian Ministers sent to them, tho' Establish'd by Law. The Presbyterian Interest standing there upon so slender a bottom, their Juncto think it not safe to have a Man of Dalrymple's Latitude in Religion, in so eminent a Post, and near their King; lest he should follow the Inclinations of the People, in GOOD EARNEST, and Call a New Parliament there, which would ruine all their Measures: Therefore ways and means must be used to Remove him; and leave Johnston and the Presbyterian Faction in the sole Possession of the Court. At length, this of Glenco was pitched upon; which was so Odious, They knew their King durst not own it: And therefore they would throw it upon Dalrymple, who was Secretary, and attended when the instructions were sent for that Bloody Murther. And thereby too, They would seem to take off the Odium from their King; This was their pretence; and they had proof enough against Dalrymple: But how that Clear'd his Master will be seen.

They produced Nine Letters of Dalrymple's (of which I have Copies) concerning the Massacre of Glenco. And I shall have occasion to mention them hereafter; I will now set down their

several Dates, and Directions; and quote them to save repetition, only by their Number, Letter i. ii. iii. &c. The two first are directed to Lieutenant Collonel Hamilton, and bear Date, on the 1st, and the other the 3d. Decemb. 1691. The 4 next are to Sir Thomas Levingston of these several Dates, 7, 9, 11 and 16 of January 169½. Then follow two more to Collonel Hill, of the 16th and 30th of the same Month; And lastly one of the 30th Ditto, to Sir Thomas Levingston. It seems very strange that K. W. would suffer these Letters to be exposed to the Parliament in Scotland, being most of them wrote by his Order, enlarging upon, and enforcing the Execution of Instructions, sent with them for the Massacre of Glenco, &c. And the Regard which his Dear Presbyterians, and his Favourite Johnston, in particular, had to his Honour, was very slender, when, to compass their Ends, they load him so foully, that they might load Dalrymple too. Johnston says, No, But that he foreseeing (because some say of his own Contriving) that the Parliament (who are most of them his Creatures, to their Honour be it spoken) would fall upon the Business of Glenco; and that they must be, at least seemingly Gratifed in it, otherwise that it might obstruct the Money-Bills, did therefore, advise his Master to send down a Commission to men of his own choosing, to enquire into the affair of Glenco; but withal to give secret Instructions to his Commissioner, to keep up the said Commission, unless the Parliament should enter upon that Business. And if they did, then to produce the said Commission, to shew his Majesty's Innocence, by his Care to have it Examined; and withal, it would take the Examination of it out of the hands of Parliament Committees, who might not manage so dextrously, as those of his own naming.

Things being thus stated, and the necessary Orders given, it is vilely suspected, that Johnston procured the Matter to be started in Parliament, whereby, at once, to get rid of his Rival Secretary, and Root up the interest of any, who had but an indifferency towards Episcopacy at Court; though to the utter Shipwrack of his Master's Honour, to be Recorded for all Posterities (as if it were inseperable from some Constitutions to betray those they serve, even though they wish them well, and must stand and fall with them.) For considering the infleunce Johnston had in that Parliament, and that they have never yet oppos'd his Will in any thing; and that he has been able to suppress the least Murmur, or Hint, that looked towards Glenco, when the Fact was New Committed; and the Horror of it

fresh and Bleeding; and now for three years after: I say, It is not supposed by men who understand that Parliament, that it could have been brought upon the Stage, when it was almost dead and forgotten, if the hand of Joab had not been in it: but let him look to that. I have only to add, as a Completion of the fore-going Narrative, that I can from unquestionable Vouchers, give the Reader an Account of the Orders from Court to Sir Thomas Levingston, and Collonel Hill, which are not in the Letter that goes before; and when the Reader is told that Hamilton (whose Order to Duncanson is inserted) had his Order from Levingston, and Collonel Hill; then he has the whole thread, *viz.* W. R.'s Order to Levingston and Hill; Levingston and Hill to Hamilton; Hamilton to Duncanson; and Duncanson to Glenlyon, who was the butcher.

You find in the Gazettes Two Sett of Instructions, one of the 11th, the other of the 16th Jan. 169½ and I will give you an Account of them both. Those of the 11th did expressly Order FIRE and SWORD, [these were the words] against all the Highland-Clans, who had not taken the Oaths. After they were sent away, my Lord Carmarthen (now Leeds) being told of it, by Dalrymple (as I am informed) did represent it to K. W. as a thing so unknown in these Countries, which are Governed by Laws, That Fire and Sword would sound very harshly; no such words having ever been heard from any of our Native Kings. This procured the mitigation of that order, by the Instructions of the 16th, which poured all the Thunder upon Glenco; because some Sacrifice must be made! What concern'd Glenco was in the 4th of these Instructions, and is as follows:—

WILLIAM R.

As for MAC-IAN of GLENCO, and that TRIBE, if they can be well distinguished from the Rest of the High-Landers; It will be proper for the Vindication of Publick Justice, to EXTIRPATE that Sett of Thieves.

W. R.

This was directed to Sir Thomas Levingston, and Collonel Hill. And the Parliament has voted that Levingston, or Hill's Orders did not exceed these Instructions; nor indeed could they: For what can exceed EXTIRPATION! And that to be Executed at the discre-

tion of Soldiers! As it is worded in the Secretary's Letter to Sir Tho. Levingston. "I am confident" (says he) "you will see there are full powers given you in very plain Terms, and yet the method left very much to your own discretion."¹

Take Notice that these Instructions are Counter-sign'd W. R. at Bottom, as well as at Top, which is not usual: For it is the Secretary's Office to Counter-sign the King's Orders; and the Reason is, that if any thing be amiss, the Secretary must be answerable. Therefore Dalrymple had reason to waive that Ceremony, in this instance, and let his Master take all the Glory to himself. And lest this should not be sufficiently taken Notice of: and that he might have a Voucher, when time comes, he took care to inform Sir Tho. Levingston punctually of it, in the same Letter which enclosed the first most Bloody Instructions of the 11th Jan. 169½, for an Universal Massacre of All, who had not taken the Oaths. And begins in these words: "Sir, I send you the King's Instructions super and subscribed by Himself."² And to show how pleasing a thing Mercy was to them, and with what reluctancy they Prosecuted those who had not taken the Oaths, he says in the same Letter: "Just now Argyle tells me, That Glenco hath not taken the Oaths, at which I Rejoyce. It's a great work of Charity to be exact in Rooting out that Damnable Sect." And to shew how great this Charity was, and whence it proceeded, The Wise Secretary Blurts out these words; "I have no great kindness for Keppoch, nor Glenco, and it's well these People are in mercy." Well indeed! They were in merciful hands! Who can say they ought not to Die, for whom such a Secretary hath no GREAT Kindness! But who are they must die? ALL! ALL! Man, Woman, and Child! Massacre the Men, and Drive the Women and Children to perish more cruelly in the mountains. To which purpose, that extreme Cold Season was chosen for the Execution. "The Winter is the only Season (says the Secretary) in which we are sure the High-Landers cannot escape us, nor carry their Wives, Bairns, and Cattle to the Mountains."³ "It's the only time they cannot Escape you; for Human Constitution cannot endure to be long out of Houses. This is the proper Season to maul them in the long cold Nights."³ This was express'd with the Gusto of a Vulture, in expectation of a Glorious Massacre! And then how easy it would be! "I expect (says he) you will find little Resistance but from the season."⁴

¹ Letter 5.

² Letter 1.

³ Letter 2.

⁴ Letter 4.

And then what thorough work they would make? "To destroy entirely the Country of Lochaber, Lochells, Lauds, Keppoch's, Glengarries, Appin, and Glenco." Here was a beautiful Feast provided! It was a Ravishing Prospect!

But O! how these Lyons were Enraged when any of their desired Prey was delivered out of their Jaws. It was in a mournful strain the Secretary tells the sad News. "We have an Account (says he) that Lochart, and Mac-naghton, Appin and Glenco took the benefit of the Indemnity at Inverary; and Keppoch, and others at Inverness:"² But after this, when Argyle told him that Glenco had not taken the Oaths; How did he Rejoyce! as above Quoted. "I am glad (says he) that Glenco did not come in within the time prescribed."³ "I am content that CLAN except itself."⁴ "For my part, I could have wished the Mac-donalds had not divided, (that is, that they had all excluded themselves from mercy) and I am sorry that Keppoch, and Mac-jan of Glenco are safe."⁵ But it seems they were not safe. Some must be made a Sacrifice; and Glenco was pitched upon for the Victim. And the implacable Fury, which was shown against that Clan, expressed the Rage they felt, that so many had escaped them. And therefore that Clan was to be destroyed entirely. I assure you (says the Secretary to his Officers) your Power shall be full enough, and I hope the Soldiers will not trouble the Government with Prisoners."¹ "For a just Example of Vengeance, I entreat that the Thieving Tribe in Glenco may be rooted out in earnest."⁵ "I shall entreat you for a just Vengeance, and publick Example, the Thieving Tribe of Glenco may be rooted out to purpose. The Earl of Argyle and Broadalban have promised they shall have no Retreat in their Bounds; the Passes to Rannach would be secured, and the Hazard certified to the Laird of —— to Retreat: Then in that Case Argyle's Detachment, with a Party that may be Posted in Island Stalker, must cut them off."⁶ "Pray when any thing concerning Glenco is resolved, let it be secret and sudden, otherwise the Men will shift you, and better not meddle with them than not to do it to purpose, to cut off that Nest of Robbers, who are fallen in the mercy of Law."³ "I am glad Glenco did not come in within the time Proscribed. I hope what is done there may be in earnest, since the rest are not in a

¹ Letter 3.² Letter 4.³ Letter 9.⁴ Letter 1.⁵ Letter 7.⁶ Letter 8.

Condition to draw together to help. I think to herry their Cattle, or burn their Houses, is but to render them Desperate Lawless Men, to Rob their Neighbours: But I believe you will be satisfied it were a great Advantage to the Nation, That that Thieving Tribe were Rooted out, and Cut off. It must be Quietly done, otherwise they will make shift for both the Men and their Cattle. Argyle's Detachment lies in Keppoch well, to assist the Garrison to do all ON A SUDDEN." Was ever so greedy a Hunt after the Lives of a Company of Secure and Un-arm'd People, who slept fearless, and suspecting no danger, under the Protection of those who were thus Contriving to Massacre them, in the most Savage and Treacherous manner!

The Secretary tells Collonel Hill that "the Oaths are Indispensable."¹ This was a fearful Method of Imposing the Oaths upon these Highlanders, that none must live who would not take them! But were all admitted to take them? One would think so; when they were made Indispensable. Yet notwithstanding, in that same Letter, He gives these Directions to Coll. Hill. "Till we see what is done by the CHIEFS, it is not time to Receive their Tenants, or Admitting them to take the Oaths, or hoping for Pardon, 'till they give Evidence that they are willing to pay their Rents to you, and to take Tacks for their former Duties; who will not do so, and were in the Rebellion, must feel the dismal consequences of it."

Thus Naboth's Vineyard made him a Blasphemer! If the Tenants would betray the Rights of their Land-Lords to Attorn, and Pay their Rents to the Secretary, or his Governour, then, and not otherwise, They should be admitted to take the Oaths: And yet they must not live, if they did not take the Oaths: But Glenco took the Oaths; yet that sav'd not his Life, nor his Clan.

It were reasonable here to presume that K. W. did not know that they had taken the Oaths. First, If it had been so, This manner of Massacre, in Cold Blood had been a Cruelty without Precedent. Secondly, It was taking Advantage of the Time, with the Greatest Rigour. For the Time limited by the Indemnity expired but the 1st of January 169½. And the Instructions for a General Massacre were dated the 11th of the same Month, at London, which was hardly time enough to know whether he had taken the Oaths or not. But Thirdly, Here is no room left to surmise, that K. W. did not know it;

¹ Letter 7.

because Secretary Dalrymple (in his Letter to Sir Thomas Levingston, before Quoted, which is dated at London the 9th of January, 169½) tells him "That they had an Account that Glenco had taken the Oaths at Inverary;"¹ which was the Place where he did take them, as is told in the foregoing Narrative. And he tells Sir Thomas, in the same Letter: "I have been with the King. He says your Instructions shall be despatched on Monday." And they were so. For that Monday was the 11th of January, 169½ which day the Instructions do bear Date. And this Letter of the Secretary's was Dated the 9th of January 169½. which was the Saturday before. And then he tells Sir Thomas, "That he had the Account of Glenco's having taken the Oaths with several others; and that he had been with the King concerning it, and Instructions should be sent," &c. 'Tis true, his Letter of the 11th, which went with the Instructions, says, "That Argyle told him Glenco had not taken the Oaths."² But this was no more than Hearsay; and it was not true. For Glenco had taken the Oaths before that time; according to the Account which the Secretary own'd was sent to him: And Argyle was an enemy to Glenco, as appears by what is above quoted out of Letter 7. But this saying of Argyle's to the Secretary in London, could not be of Argyle's own Knowledge. And one would think that the Secretary of State should have as good Intelligence as he.

But, to make the most of it, this cou'd amount to no more than a Doubt. And it was his duty to Suspend his further Resolution, till he might have the Certainty from Scotland. But they did not stay for this. For the particular Instructions to Massacre Glencoe, bore Date the 16th of January 169½, Betwixt which time and the 11th. when Argyle told the Secretary, as above, "They could not send to Scotland, and have any Answer back." Now these Instructions of the 16th were no way Conditional, to cut off Glencoe, *if* he had not taken the Oaths. But Positive, and without more ado. When it is certain that K. W. Must, at least, Doubt whether he had taken the Oaths, or not. But it is apparent that Collonel Hill, who had given Glencoe his Protection, and to whom Glencoe came to take the Oaths, I say it is certain that he, and the other Officers there upon the Place, knew very well that Glenco had taken the Oaths, and submitted to the Government. Those Officers whom he receiv'd into his House, and quarter'd their Soldiers among his Tenants, upon his laying down his Arms; These

¹ Letter 4.² Letter 3.

must know that he had submitted. But if notwithstanding they must Obey their Orders (as they did) if it be not permitted to Officers, so much as Rescribere, to acquaint the King with any mistake may be in his Orders; but to Execute them blindfold, and without Asking Questions, then let me lie out of the Reach of a Soldier.

The Reader must likewise know, that none of the Foresaid Instructions were communicated to the Privy Council of Scotland; to whom by the Constitution of that Kingdom, and Continual Custom, all the Kings Orders are directed. They knew nothing of this Matter, It was contriv'd to be Carry'd in such a Manner, as not to be prevented. And when Gallienus his Thirst of Blood is once Satisfy'd, then let Slaves Grumble, and make Inquiry! We know how to Manage them. Johnston hath undertaken it. Nay he hath done it. *Done it!* More effectually than ever was heard, or I believe, Imagin'd, in these Nations, before this Happy Revolution: For here is a Precedent made, and that by Parliament, That the King may send his Guards, and Cut any Man's Throat in the Nation in Cold Blood; Nay, he may Massacre the whole Parliament, as they are there Sitting, by the Rule that they have given; That is, To acquit Levingston and Hill; and to justify them for pursuing the King's Orders to Massacre a whole Clan, which is no more Just, or Law, than to Massacre a Parliament.

Let us Banter the World, or ourselves no more with Liberty and Laws! And when Parliaments can be brought to Approve, and to Justify all this—— Well! Johnston! Thou hast Manag'd Nobly. Thou art fit to Serve a Monarch! But not unless you bring your Monarch cleverly off in this Business; For what if you can place it upon Dalrymple; And if Dalrymple should be Hang'd for Daring to send such an Order, tho' he refus'd to Counter-sign it, What will become of Him, who both Sign'd it, and Counter-Sign'd it, and Commanded it to be Sent?

If the Man such Praises have,
What must He Employs the Knave?

Why! did his Master never Inquire into this Matter before? Never before the Parliament Clamour'd! And what was the Meaning of a Commission to Examine into what himself had Order'd— But *Mes James!*—And have you e'en brought your Master into this Noose! What can you expect from him but to be Glencoe'd for your pains? *Qui Glencoeat Glencoeabitur*—You have brought all his Sins to

Remembrance. The Dewitting¹ in Holland was almost forgot.—You have pretty good Experience of his Temper, or you may have. But if he suffer you to live to see another Revolution, you may plead Merit: For all his Enemies have not render'd him so Black; so effectually Proved, and Demonstrated it to the World, as your Management has done. He is happy in his Ministers! at least very Justly serv'd by them!

He wants but a good Historian, that he may not lose his Character to after Ages. And Secretary, you cannot do better than to recommend your Uncle to that Office. He'll do it Deliciously; he'll either find or make Parallels to him out of Antient Histories (for he'll find none among the Modern, especially in these Countries.) And make him (I'll warrant you) Excel them all. And among the rest, I would recommend one to him, that fits the present case so exactly, that you would think one was copied out of the other, and it is as follows:—

“Gallienus, ut erat Nequam & Perditus; ita etiam, ubi necessitas coegisset, velox, furibundus, ferus, vehemens, Crudelis—In omnes Mesiacos tam Milites quam Cives asperime. Cevit: Nec quemquam suæ Crudelitatis exortem reliquit: Usque adeo Asper et Truculentus ut plerasq; Civitates vacuas a virili sexu relinqueret.

“Extat sanc Epistola Galieni quam ad Celerem Verianum Scripsit, qua ejus Nimietas crudelitatis ostenditur: quam Ego idcirco interposui, ut omnes intelligerent, hominem Luxuriosum crudelissimum esse, si necessitas Postulet.

GALLIENUS VERIANO. “Non mihi satisfacies, si tantum Armatos occideris, quos et sors Belli interimere potuisset. Perimendus est omnis sexus Virilis, si et senes atq; impuberes sine Reprehensione nostra occidi possent. Occidendus est quicumq; malevoluit. Occidendus est quicumq; male dixit contra me, contra Valeriani filium, contra tot Principum Patrem et Fratrem. Ingenuus factus est Imperator. Lacera, occide, concide: Animum meum intelligere potes, mea Mente irascere qui hæc Manu mea scripsi.” [*Trebell. Pollion. Trigint. Tyran. de Ingenuo.*]

This is the Description of Gallienus, a Cruel, and a Bloody Tyrant: And here is the Copy of some Instructions he sent to Verianus, an Officer of his, about just such another Massacre as Glenco, which he

¹ This word is coined as an allusion to the murder of the brothers John and Cornelius De Witt at the Hague, by the Prince of Orange's party in 1672.

wrote, or Sign'd with his own Hand: Wherein he Commands him, to put all to the Sword, All that durst speak or think against him, as well Old as Young; He bid him Plunder, Kill, Tear; and that it would not please him if he Kill'd only those in Arms against him, but All of the Masculine Sex.

Here was a Great deal of Do, and many Words about it! But our Milder Order, bid only EXTIRPATE, and that not this or that Body, or making Distinctions of Old or Young, Men or Women. What need all that Cookery! But only The Whole TRIBE. That was all! He Scorn'd to Except the pitiful Women, as Gallienus did. What need They be Excepted? Why! He Excepted no Body! Short Work's best—and Few Words. And as the *Answer to Great Britain's Just Complaint*, Publish'd by Authority, 1692, says, p. 37. in Vindication of W. R. as to this of Glenco. "*A milder Order was never given.*" And he says that his Majesty has Express'd a High Displeasure at it. It was High indeed: For we never heard of it before. Nor are we like to hear of it, that I can see: For all the Officers who Commanded, or who Executed it, are still in their Respective Posts, unless Advanc'd. Nor have we heard that so much as an Ill Word has been said by Him to any one of them.

But this we know, by that *Answer to Great Britain's Just Complaint*, that W. R. cannot plead Ignorance, that there was a great Clamour about the Massacre of Glenco, Three Years ago: And that he has taken no Notice of it all this time nor Now, till it was first Started in Parliament; And that then, what he did, was, as much as he could to take it out of the hands of the Parliament, and by all his Might and Main, to Stifle, or at least to Baffle it. And it has been Baffled. And this horrible addition is thereby made to the Guilt of that Murther; That whereas none were answerable for it before, except only Gallienus and his Verianus's with their Accomplices, it is now become a National Guilt (so far as the Parliament are the Representatives of the People) by the Parliament's making GALLIENUS's Instructions sufficient to justify Verianus in his Execution of them. Whereby they justify the whole Murder, and bring it upon their own Heads, and upon the Heads of their Children. For if Gallienus had no Power by Law, to send such Instructions, they could be no Justification to Verianus: But now that Parliament has Voted that such Instructions are a Justification of Verianus; and therefore they have yielded that Gallienus has, by Law, a Power to send such

Instructions. And they ought to be Obey'd. And then? *Lord have mercy upon us!*

Nor has our Parliament in England been behind that of Scotland in Sacrificing our Laws, Lives, and Liberties to an Arbitrary and Despotick Power; and that not only to Orders Sign'd by Gallienus himself, but by Verianus, of his own head. Making us Double Distill'd Vassals; Slaves of Slaves!

And the instance which (among many others) I have to give of this, Exceeds even that of Glenco, in its having less Pretence, and acted with the greater face of Authority, and Solemnity. I mean the Prodigious unprecedented Manner of the Murther of Gaffney in Ireland by the command of the Lord Coningsby; for which he was impeached before the House of Commons in England, by Protestants of Ireland, Gentlemen of Quality and Estates; and of Publick and generous Spirits; whose noble Resentment to see their Laws so vilely trampled under foot by those whom they had Invited thither to protect them, brought them hither in Person, to demand Justice from our House of Commons against Coningsby, who was one of their Members. And that there could be nothing of Revenge in the Case, in behalf of the Person who was Murther'd, it's notorious; that Gaffney being a poor Fellow, a Servant to Sweetman (hereafter mention'd) and wholly unknown, I believe, to every one of the Gentlemen who prosecuted Coningsby; Besides, He was a Roman Catholic and one of the Native Irish, upon both of which Accounts he could have the less share of Interest with the British, and Irish Protestants, who were then not wholly come out of a most bloody War against them; for Limerick as yet held out. And therefore these worthy Patriots, who came over from Ireland hither to prosecute Coningsby, could have no other Incitement, but Love of their Country, and the Preservation of the Laws: But the Return they had, after a long and Expensive Attendance as it was, Mortifying to themselves, and sadly Instructive to others, will remain an Instance of Arbitrary Government not to be equall'd in former Ages, nor easily credible to the future. The Story, one would think, should not need being told in England, because it was brought upon the Stage, before the House of Commons, and is in their Printed Votes.

Yet, all that is not, it seems, sufficient to publish it at this time; not one in twenty of some sort of People that I meet with, having ever heard of it, or have forgot it. And (as I have told of the Story

of Glenco) they call it a Jacobite Invention ; and will hear no more of it.

I will therefore present the Reader with the very Words of the Article concerning Gaffney, which (with several others of other Instances of High Arbitrary Government) was exhibited by the Earl of Ballimont, and other Protestants of Ireland, against the Lords Justices of Ireland (viz., The said Lord Coningsby, and Sir Charles Porter, both Members of the House of Commons in England) before the House of Commons in the Winter Session 1693. The Article concerning Gaffney is the 4th, and follows in these Words :—

“That the Lords Justices did, in Council, by word of Mouth, Order one **Gaffney** to be Hanged, without Tryal, the Courts of Justice being then open, and who was at that time an Evidence against one Sweetman for the murther of Collonel Foulk’s soldiers : But the said Sweetman (giving all his real Estate to the value of £200 per Annum to Mr Culliford, besides the sum of about £500 to Mr Fielding, the said Lords Justices Secretary, for being his Bayl) was never prosecuted for the said murther; and the said Gaffney was immediately Executed, according to the said verbal Order.

Now the Reader must know that every Tittle of the said Charge was proved fully, and past all Contradiction. Captain Fitz-Gerald, who is a Member of the Privy Council in Ireland, Declared that he was then sitting at the Board ; and that the Council were not advised with at all in it. That Sweetman’s Estate, valued at £3000. was offer’d to him [Captain Fitz-Gerald] on Condition that he would make interest to save Sweetman’s Life. That Lord Coningsby, who gave the Orders for the Executing of Gaffney, was in so great haste to have him dispatch’d out of the way (for he was an Evidence against Sweetman) That he ordered a Provo, instead of any Legal Officer, to be Call’d into the Councill-Chamber where Gaffney was Examin’d: And after having asked Gaffney three or four Questions, and that he positively denied his having any Accession to the said Murther; Commanded the Provo to take him out and hang him up IMMEDIATELY : And the Provo making Answer, That it would take some time to make a Gallows ; Coningsby answered sharply, “Hang him upon the Carriage of a Gun ;” which was done IMMEDIATELY!

Of all this Coningsby could not deny One Word before the House of Commons : And all he said in his own Vindication was, That if he had not hang’d Gaffney so, he could not have hang’d him at all. Which was true : For there was no Evidence against him, and

therefore they would give him no Tryal. But why must Gaffney then be Hang'd? Because, forsooth! Some Officers in the Army would have somebody Hang'd for the Murther of Foulk's Soldiers: And Sweetman (in whose Backside the Soldiers were buried, and their Coats found in his House) had given 500*l.* to the Lords Justices Secretary, and his Estate to another man in Power; but Gaffney was a Poor Rogue, and had nothing to give, and therefore it was fit he should be hang'd. And Hang'd as he was, or not at all. As CONINGSBY honestly, but Impudently Confessed.

But now comes the Astonishing Wonder. After all these things so plainly proved and confess'd, that the House of Commons could not frame any manner of excuse for Coningsby; but were forc'd to Vote the Execution of Gaffney without Tryal, to be Arbitrary and Illegal; Yet that considering the state of Affairs, They did not think fit to ground an Impeachment against the Lord Coningsby for the same. This is in the Printed Votes of the 29th of January, 1693. And this is an Original. What! Vote a man guilty, and yet that he shall not be prosecuted! Why pray? Because of the state of Affairs. This is very general. And such a pretence will never be wanting. But what was this State of Affairs, at that time? It was in the Winter of 1690, when all Ireland except only Limerick, was in the Obedience of K. W., when the Courts of Justice were open (as in the 'bovesaid Article against Coningsby is express'd) and the Lords Justices and Council sitting in Peace and Grandeur in Dublin. And what was it that cou'd or ought to have hindered giving that Poor Fellow a fair Tryal? Other Criminals were then Tryed, in the usual form, and why not Gaffney? How came the State of Affairs to reach him, more than any other? Unless you will say, that it did reach to many others: For it is express'd in the Printed Address of the Lords, Presented to K. W. 9 March 1692, That not only Gaffney, but several others were Executed, without any Tryal whatsoever; And that there were Exorbitant Abuses, great Mismanagement, and many Arbitrary and Illegal Proceedings there, within these four Years last past, as well since the determination of the War as before, which includes the whole Government since the Revolution, as well during the Administration of Gallienus in Person, while he was there, as of his several Verianus's in his Absence. One of whom did, in Almanzor strain, set up the High Prerogative, and Hector their Parliament in a manner unknown to former Ages: And without Precedent from any Lawful King that ever sat upon the English Throne in that Kingdom.

Which they have given us an Account of in Print; to try whether there was so much of the Spirit of English Liberty left in an English Parliament as to Vindicate their own Privileges, in that Breach which was made upon them, thro' the sides of the Parliament in Ireland, a Province of their own, and may be reckoned a branch of the English Empire. But all in vain! They had drunk so deep in the Cup of Slavery at Home, that they could take no notice of it Abroad. They have stopt their Ears close against all Charmers upon that Subject, Charm he never so wisely. They Call their Slavery, Liberty! And where then is the Remedy?

Thus poor Ireland was left without all hopes of Redress, to feed upon the Melancholy Reflection, that their Liberties have been much more notoriously violated by their Deliverers than by all the instances which were so much as alledg'd against their Lawful King; And thence to learn for the future, how much Rebellion is a worse Remedy, than the Disease of Tyranny (even when it is not made a pretence) and that it always ends in a Heavier Tyranny: Because there must go more Force to keep under New Acquisitions, than Old Hereditary Rights. And if all the Sacred Bonds of Natural Allegiance Fortified with the Religious Sanction of Oaths, and Taught and Inculcated upon Us, from our Infancy, as a Condition indispensable to our Salvation; if all this, and all the Honour and Reputation which the World has justly affixed to Loyalty, with the Horror and eternal Stain, upon the Name and Memory of Traytors and Rebels and all the Terrors of the Laws against Treason. If none (I say) Nor all of these Considerations, have weight enough to keep us in our Obedience to those whom God, and the Constitution of our Country, have placed over Us, by a Divine as well as a Legal Right: How should an Usurper secure our Duty, who has none of these Tyes, on his side; but All, and every One against him? How should, How can He do it, but by Corrupting our Representatives in Parliament, so as to pass all his Arbitrary Designs upon Us, in their Names; and when that fails him, by open Force? How otherwise has any one of them ever yet secured himself? Have we forgot our late Deliverers in Forty One? Will no Experience serve to make us Wise? No. Not when the Time of our Destruction is come! We shall then, as the Jews did before their Final Destruction by the Romans; we do now as they did then Obstinate refuse all offers of Mercy, for our Rebellion, and continue to Provoke a Power, which we know too

strong for Us ; and which we confess must, without a Miracle, be our Ruine : Yet we run on, trusting only to our Dispair ! And we have not only Delivered up our Money or our Lives, without Account ; but what used to be Dearer to English Men, The Honour of England ! Of which take this short Instance instead of many more.

“The House of Lords made (and printed) an Address, dated the 18th of *February* 1692. Wherein They mind their King of the Capitulation made in the Year 1678, by which it was agreed, That the English Commander and Officer, in every Degree is to Command every other Confederate Officer of the same Rank (except those of Crowned Heads) without any regard to the Date of their respective Commissions. And that the contrary was the Practice in this last War, to the diminution of the Honour that belongeth to the Crown of England, and to the general Dissatisfaction of his Majesty's Subjects. And desire, That the Chief Commander of the English Forces under his Majesty, should be a Subject born in his Majesty's Dominions: That no Foreigner should be of the Board of Ordnance, or Keeper of the Stores in the Tower of London : That, for the Encouragement of the English, there should not be so many strangers Employ'd in the Office of the Ordnance. That there hath been many Abuses under Pretence of Pressing Men for the Fleet ; And therefore They humbly Advise, That the Offenders should be immediately Cashiered, and Prosecuted with the utmost Rigour of the Law.”

His Gracious Answer was, “That he would consider it.” And we may suppose, That he is considering of it still : For he hath not perform'd one word of it : But on the Contrary, to shew the regard he has for all the Peers of England ; and for the Honour of England ; He has acted quite contrary to this Address, more since, than before : For not only Abroad, in Flanders, and in Savoy, are the English everywhere under Foreign Commanders-in-Chief : But, to use them as they deserve, He has now this last time, made a Foreigner [Schomberg] Commander-in-Chief of all the Forces left in England. Let the Lords Address again ! They would if they were English Men ! Or if he were an Hereditary King ! But some will bear more Insults from a Mistress than a Wife. And a King of our own making, Costs us more than Twenty of God's sending. We think our selves bound to Acquiesce in our own Act and Deed !

If any of the Cursed and Rebel Parliaments could have found a

Gaffney or Glenco, against King Charles the First, or any of his Sons, what a Noise would they have made? How had all the World been filled with Apologies and Remonstrances! What a Dismal Idea would have been Raised of Tyranny and Arbitrary Government! In the former Reigns, how was the Nation alarm'd with what was Whispered; and not Whispered, or ever so much as thought of, in the King's Bed-Chamber; in his Closet! Of Secret Leagues, and Private Assassinations of Men that Murther'd themselves; where there was not the least Umbrage or Colour of Pretence! How Industrious was it spread and imbibed by the Mob of this Nation, That King Charles the Second and the Earl of Essex were both Murthered by the Procurement of one they had a mind to Blacken! And Forty Protestant Witnesses of the greatest Quality and Reputation, were not sufficient to make them believe a Prince of Wales; though not one Man or Woman in the Nation ever Depos'd any thing to the Contrary: Nor was there any other Argument against it, besides a few Drunken Songs. But that was enough, because it was against a Lawful King. And on the other hand, though they see their Fellow-Subjects Gaffney'd and Glenco'd before their Faces: Though it be Printed in the Gazettes and Publick Votes of the House of Commons, and that the House of Lords print their Addresses, contrary to their usual Custom, on purpose to let the Nation see.—Yet they will not see. No. All this is not NOW sufficient to imprint it one half-hour in their Memories, after Reading of the Publick Papers; they neglect it, They forget it, as not concerning them! *Non Persuadebis, etiamsi Persuaseris*, is their Resolution. And *Quos perdere vult Jupiter, Dementat*, I wish may not be their Fate.

BUT to bring our Story to an End: There is One Noble Stroke of Secretary Johnston's behind. Whereby he thinks he has wiped his Master's ancle, from all Imputation of the Massacre of Glenco; And that is, He has perswaded Lieutenant-Collonel Hamilton (whose Order to Duncanson is in the foresaid Narrative) to abscond for some time; and then to slip over to K. W. in Flanders; which he has done. This shews as if he were more Guilty than the rest. He is made the Scapegoat, and all this Sin laid upon his Head. But if Hill gave his Orders to his Lieutenant-Collonel Hamilton (which he Avers in his Order to Duncanson) Why was it more Criminal in Hamilton to hand down his Collonel's Orders to the next Subaltern?

AND why must Glen Lyon, and the others who actually Committed

that Horrid Massacre, and are now in their Respective Commands in Flanders, Why should these be Excused?

O! No! They are not excused, for as in the Gazette (18th July 1695) the Parliament in Scotland has made a fierce Vote against them, viz., That his Majesty be Address'd to send them home to be prosecuted for the same, Or Not, as his Majesty shall think fit.—OR NOT! This is as Civil as Heart could wish! And whether this Address was sent, or Not; whether it was trusted to Secretary Johnston to send it, or Not, is all One: For instead of sending them Home to be Tryed, Hamilton is sent to them; And in Justice we are to suppose that Due Care will be taken, That in this Campaign, They shall either be Killed, Taken, or Desert. And then if we had them again, How we would hang the Rogues.

BUT our English Parliament was much more complaisant to their Verianus's; they did not put them to the trouble so much as of a Sham Absconding for a little time; No, nor of suffering the least Disgrace for their more Solemn and Judicial Murther: But Commanded them to take their Places again in their Senate-House; Thus doing them Honour, for their Noble Breach of our Laws; And signifying to the Nation what Qualifications are Expected in those whom they Choose to Represent them; and in whose hands they have Deposited the Absolute and Un-Accountable Disposal of their Estates, Lives, and Liberties! At least, it is so understood. And the Silence of the People in this Case, is taken for Consent.



"Inter Folia Fructus."

THE
SEVERAL DECLARATIONS
MADE IN
COUNCIL
CONCERNING THE

Birth of the Prince of Wales.
1688.

~~~~~  
"HISTORY IS BUT THE UNROLLED SCROLL OF PROPHECY."

~~~~~  
—JAMES A. GARFIELD.
~~~~~

PRIVATELY PRINTED  
FOR THE CLARENDON HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

—  
1885.

*This edition is limited to 120 large paper and 400 small paper copies,  
for Subscribers only.*

The Several  
DECLARATIONS  
Together with the Several  
DEPOSITIONS  
MADE IN  
COUNCIL  
On *Monday*, the 22d of *October* 1688.  
CONCERNING  
The BIRTH  
OF THE  
PRINCE OF WALES.

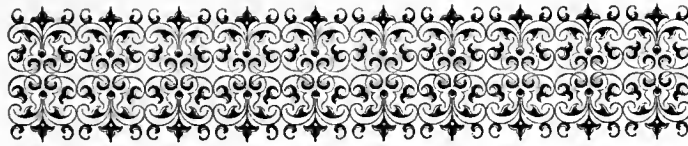
---

N.B.—*Those Mark'd with this Mark \* are*  
*Roman Catholicks.*

---

*London*: Printed, and Sold by the Bookfellers of  
*London* and *Westminster*.





AT THE  
COUNCIL-CHAMBER  
IN  
WHITEHALL,

*Monday the 22th\* of October, 1688.*

THIS Day an Extraordinary Council met, where were likewise Present, by his Majesty's Desire and Appointment, Her Majesty the Queen Dowager, and such of the Peers of this Kingdom, both Spiritual and Temporal, as were in Town. And also the Lord Mayor and Aldermen of the City of London; the Judges, and several of Their Majesties Council Learn'd, hereafter Named.

The King's most Excellent Majesty.

Her Majesty the Queen Dowager in a Chair, placed on the King's Right Hand.

|                                  |                     |
|----------------------------------|---------------------|
| His R. H. Pr. George of Denmark, | Duke of Hamilton,   |
| Lord Chancellor,                 | Lord Chamberlain,   |
| Lord President,                  | Earl of Oxford,     |
| Lord Privy Seal,                 | Earl of Huntingdon, |
| Earl of Craven,                  | Earl of Peterborow, |
| Earl of Berkeley,                | Earl of Salisbury,  |

---

\* *Sic.*

6 The Clarendon Historical Society Reprints.

---

|                                  |                               |
|----------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Earl of Rochester,               | Earl of Clarendon,            |
| Earl of Moray,                   | Earl of Cardigan,             |
| Earl of Middleton,               | Earl of Ailesbury,            |
| Earl of Melfort,                 | Earl of Burlington,           |
| Earl of Castlemain,              | Earl of Litchfield,           |
| Viscount Preston,                | Earl of Feversham,            |
| Lord Bellasyse,                  | Earl of Nottingham,           |
| Lord Godolphin,                  | Viscount Newport,             |
| Lord Dover,                      | Viscount Weymouth,            |
| Mr. Chancellor of the Exchequer, | Bishop of London,             |
| Master of the Rolls,             | Bishop of Winchester,         |
| L. Ch. Justice Herbert,          | Bishop of Rochester,          |
| Sir Thomas Strickland,           | Bishop of Chester,            |
| Sir Nicholas Butler,             | Bishop of St. Davids,         |
| Mr. Titus,                       | Lord North.                   |
| Lord A. B. of Canterbury,        | Lord Chandos,                 |
| Duke of Norfolk,                 | Lord Montagu,                 |
| Duke of Grafton,                 | Lord Herbert of Chirbury,     |
| Duke of Ormond,                  | Lord Vaughan Earl of Carbery, |
| Duke of Northumberland,          | Lord Colepeper,               |
| Marquess of Halyfax,             | Lord Churchill,               |
| Earl of Pembroke,                | Lord Waldegrave.              |

The Lord Mayor and Aldermen of the City of London.

Sir Robert Wright, Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench.

|                      |   |                                 |
|----------------------|---|---------------------------------|
| Sir Thomas Powel,    | } | Justices of the King's Bench.   |
| Sir Thomas Baldock,  |   |                                 |
| Sir Thomas Street,   | } | Justices of the Common Pleas.   |
| Sir Edward Lutwich,  |   |                                 |
| Sir Thomas Jennor,   |   |                                 |
| Sir Richard Heath,   | } | Barons of the Exchequer.        |
| Sir Charles Ingleby, |   |                                 |
| Sir John Rotheram,   |   |                                 |
| Sir John Maynard,    | } | His Majesties Serjeants at Law. |
| Sir John Holt,       |   |                                 |
| Sir Ambrose Philips, |   |                                 |

Sir Thomas Powis, His Majesty's Attorney General.  
Sir William Williams, His Majesty's Solicitor General.  
Sir James Butler.  
Mr. North, the Queen's Attorney.  
Mr. Montagu, the Queen's Solicitor.  
Sir Charles Porter.

To whom His Majesty spake to this Effect.

My Lords,

**I** Have called you together upon a very extraordinary Occasion ; but extraordinary Diseases must have extraordinary Remedies. The Malicious Endeavours of my Enemies have so poisoned the Minds of some of my Subjects, that by the Reports I have from all hands I have Reason to believe that very many do not think this Son with which God hath blessed Me, to be Mine, but a Supposed Child. But I may say, that by particular Providence, scarce any Prince was ever Born where there were so many Persons present.

I have taken this time to have the Matter Heard and Examined here, Expecting that the Prince of Orange, with the first Easterly Wind, will invade this Kingdom ; and as I have often ventured My Life for the Nation before I came to the Crown so I think My Self more obliged to do the same, now I am KING ; and do intend to go in Person against him, whereby I may be exposed to Accidents, and therefore I thought it necessary to have this now done, in order to satisfy the minds of My Subjects, and to prevent this Kingdom's being engaged in Blood and Confusion after My Death, desiring to do always what may contribute most to the Ease and Quiet of my Subjects, which I have shewed by Securing to them their Liberty of Conscience, and the Enjoyment of their Properties, which I will always preserve.

I have Desired the Queen Dowager to give Her Self the trouble to come hither, to Declare what she knows of the Birth of My Son, and most of the Ladies, Lords, and other Persons who were present, are ready here to Depose upon Oath their Knowledge of this Matter.

Whereupon the Queen Dowager was pleased to say,

**T**hat when the King sent for her to the Queen's Labour, she came as soon as she could, and never stirred from her till she was Delivered of the Prince of Wales,

Catherine R.

And the following Depositions were all taken upon Oath.

Elizabeth Lady Marchioness of Powis, Deposeth,

**T**Hat about the 29th of December last, the Queen was likely to Miscarry; whereupon she immediately went unto her, and offered her some effectual Remedies, which are made use of on the like occasion; which the Queen ordred this Deponent to acquaint the Doctors with. The day following the Queen Dowager sent this Deponent to see how the Queen did; who replied, She had a pretty good Night, and did think she had Quickned, but would not be positive till she felt it again; That after this the Deponent did frequently wait on the Queen in the Morning, and did see her Shift her several days, and generally saw the Milk, and sometimes Wet upon her Smock. That some time, after this Deponent went into the Country, and came not up till a few days before the Queen was brought to Bed; and from the time of this Deponents Return, she saw the Queen every day till she was brought to Bed, and was in the Room a Quarter of an hour before, and at the time of her Delivery of the Prince by Mrs. Wilks Her Majesty's Midwife, which this Deponent saw, and immediately went with the Prince, carried by Mrs. Delabadie into the Queen's little Bed-chamber, where she saw Sir Thomas Witherly sent for by the Midwife, who gave the Child Three Drops of something which came into the World with him, which this Deponent saw done; And this Deponent doth Aver, this Prince to be the same Child which was then Born, and that she has never been from him one day since.

\* Eliz. Powis.

Anne Countess of Aran Deposeth,

**T**Hat she went to the Queen from Whitehall to St. James's as soon as she heard that her Majesty was in Labour; when she came, she found the Queen in Bed, complaining of little Pains; The Lady Sunderland, Lady Roscomon, Mrs. Labadie, and the Midwife, were on that side of the Bed where the Queen lay; and this Deponent, with a great many others, stood on the other side all the time till the Queen was Delivered; As soon as her Majesty was delivered she said, *O Lord I don't hear the Child Cry*, and immediately upon that, this Deponent did hear it Cry, and saw the Midwife take the Child out of the Bed, and give it to Mrs. Labadie, who carried it into the little Bed-Chamber, where she, this Deponent, followed her, and saw



that it was a Son, and that likewise she, the Deponent, hath several times seen Milk run out upon the Queen's Smock during her being with Child.

A. Aran.

Penelope Countess of Peterborow Deposeth,

**T**Hat she was often with the Queen, while Her Majesty was last with Child, and saw the Milk often upon her Majesty's Smock, when she, the Deponent, took it off from the Queen; and often saw her Majesty's Belly so as it could not be otherwise but that she was with Child. That the said Deponent stood by the Bedside on the 10th of June last in the Morning, while the Queen was Delivered of the Prince of Wales.

P. Peterborow.

Anne Countess of Sunderland Deposeth,

**T**Hat June the 10th 1688, being Trinity Sunday, the Deponent went to St. James's Chapel at eight of the Clock in the Morning, intending to Receive the Sacrament; but in the beginning of the Communion Service, the Man which looks to the Chappel came to the Deponent, and told her, she must come to the Queen; The Deponent said, she would as soon as Prayers were done; In a very little time after, another Man came up to the Altar to the Deponent, and said, the Queen was in Labour, and the Deponent must come to Her Majesty, who then went directly to the Queens Bed-Chamber. As soon as the Deponent came in, her Majesty told her, this Deponent, she believ'd she was in Labour. By this time the Bed was warmed, and the Queen went into Bed, and the King came in. The Queen asked, if he had sent for the Queen Dowager; He said he had sent for every Body. The said Deponent stood at the Queen's Boulster, the Lady Roscommon, Mrs. Delabadie, and the Midwife on that side of the Bed, where the Queen was Delivered. After some lingring Pains, the Queen said, she feared she should not be brought to Bed a good while; but enquiring of the Midwife, she assured her Majesty, that she wanted only one thorow Pain to bring the Child into the World; Upon which the Queen said, It is impossible, the Child lies so high, and commanded this Deponent to lay her Hand on her Majesty's Belly, to feel how high the Child lay, which the Deponent did; but soon after a great Pain came on at past Nine of the Clock, and the Queen was Delivered; which the Midwife by pulling the Deponent by the Coat, assured her was a Son, it being the Sign she told the Deponent she would give her, the Queen

having charged her not to let her Majesty know presently, whether it was a Son or Daughter. As soon as the Midwife had given the Deponent the Sign, the Deponent made a Sign to the King that it was a Son. When the Midwife had done her Office, she gave the Child to Mrs. Delabadie, which was a Son, and she carried it into the little Bed-chamber.

A. Sunderland.

Isabella Countess of Roscommon Deposeth,

THAT on the 10th of June last, she stood by the Lady Sunderland in the Queens Bed-Chamber, while the Queen was in Labour, and saw the Prince of Wales, when he was taken out of the Bed by the Midwife.

L. Roscommon.

Margaret Countess of Fingall Deposeth,

THAT she waited on the Queen Dowager her Mistress into the Queens Bed-Chamber at St. James's, when the Queen was in Labour, and stood by the Bed's Feet, when her Majesty was Delivered of the Prince. That the Deponent saw the Prince carried away into another Room, and soon after follow'd, and saw him in that Room.

\* Marg. Fingall.

Lady Sophia Bulkeley Deposeth,

THAT she was sent for on Trinity Sunday last past about Eight a Clock in the Morning to go to St. James's; for the Man that came, said the Queen was in Labour, and he, and others were sent to call every Body. That this Deponent made as much hast as she could to rise and be dress'd, but did not get to the Queen's Bed-chamber until a little after Nine a Clock, and then this Deponent found the Queen in her Bed, and the Queen Dowager there set upon a Stole, and some of the Ladies about her. After this Deponent having staid a little while, and thinking the Queen in no strong Pain, she, this Deponent, went out, and, being next to the Room where the Queens Linen was a warming, heard a noise, and look'd to see what was the matter, and finding no Body there, this Deponent ran and found the Lord Feverham in the Queen's little Bed-Chamber, who told this Deponent the Child was just born; This Deponent ask'd him, what is it? His Lordship said he could not tell. So this Deponent ran on to the Queens Bed-side, and heard the Queen say to the Midwife, Pray, Mrs. Wilks, don't part the Child (which signifies, don't cut the Navel-String, until the after-Birth is come away.) And while the

Queen was with Child, this Deponent had heard her Majesty Command her Midwife not to do otherwise, it being counted much the safest way ; but to what the Queen said just then (to the best of this Deponent's Remembrance) Mrs. Wilks replied, Pray Madam, give me leave, for I will do nothing, but what will be safe for your Self and Child ; The Queen Answered, Do then, and then cry'd where is the King gone ? His Majesty came immediately from the other side of the Bed (from just having a sight of the Child) and answered the Queen, Here I am ; the Queen said, Why do you leave me now ? The King kneeled on the Bed, on that side where the Deponent stood, and a little after the Midwife said, all is now come safe away ; Upon that the King rose from the Bed, and said, Pray my Lords, come and see the Child : The King follow'd Mrs. Labadie, and the Lords His Majesty, into the little Bed-Chamber, where this Deponent follow'd also, and saw as well as they, that it was a Prince, and that Mrs. Wilks was in the right to desire to part the Child, For the Prince's Face, especially his Forehead was blackish, being stunn'd, as I have seen some other Children, when they have been just newly come into the World ; but God be thanked, in two hours time that he was dress'd and wash'd, (which the Deponent staid by and saw done) the Prince look'd very fresh and well. This Deponent doth further add, That all the while, the Queen was with Child, this Deponent had the honour to pay her Duty very often Mornings and Nights, in waiting upon her Majesty in her Dressing Room and Bed-Chamber, and for the last three or four Months, this Deponent hath oftentimes seen the Queen's Milk, as well as when this Deponent hath had the honour to put on her Majesty's Smock.

S. Bulkely.

Sufanna Lady Bellasyfe Deposeth,

THat on Trinity Sunday the 10th of June last, the Deponent's Servant seeing the Queen Dowager's Coaches in St. James's at an unusual hour, went and asked the Occasion, and was told the Queen was in Labour ; whereupon she came into the Deponent's Chamber, and awaked her ; That the Queen having come to Lodge at St. James's but the Night before, they being in a great hurry, forgot to call the Deponent as her Majesty had ordered ; That the Deponent made all the haste she could into her Majesties Bed-Chamber ; and found the Queen in Bed, and Mrs. Wilks her Majesty's Midwife, sitting by the Bedside, with her hands in the Queen's Bed ; The Queen asked her the said Midwife, what she thought ? Mrs. Wilks

assured her Majesty, that at the next great Pain the Child would be born ; Whereupon the King ordered the Privy-Councillours to be called in ; That this Deponent stood behind the Midwife's Chair, and immediately after the Queen's having another great Pain, the Prince was Born ; That this Deponent saw the Child taken out of the Bed with the navel string hanging to its Belly ; That this Deponent opened the Receiver, and saw it was a Son, and not hearing the Child cry, and seeing it a little black, she was afraid it was in a Convulsion Fit.

S. Bellafyse.

Henrietta Lady Waldgrave, Deposeth,

THat she was in the Queen's Bed-Chamber a quarter of an hour before her Majesty was delivered, and standing by the Bedside, she saw the Queen in Labour, and heard her cry out much,

\* Henrietta Waldgrave.

Mrs. Mary Crane one of the Gentlewomen of the Bed-Chamber to the Queen Dowager, Deposeth,

THat she went with the Queen Dowager to the Queen's Labour on the 10th of June last, and never stirred out of the Room till the Queen was Delivered.

That this Deponent did not follow the Child, when it was first carried out of the Room, but staid in the Bed-Chamber, and saw all that was to be seen after the Birth of a Child. That she, the Deponent, then went to see the Prince, and found him look ill, and immediately went to the King, and told his Majesty she feared the Child was sick ; that his Majesty went immediately to the Prince, and came back and said it was a mistake, the Child was very well.

\* Mary Crane.

Dame Isabella Wentworth, one of the Gentlewomen of the Bed-Chamber to the Queen, Deposeth,

THat she often saw the Milk of her Majesty's Breast upon her Smock, at which the Queen was troubled, it being a common saying, that it was a sign the Child would not live. And that she, the Deponent, did once feel the Child stir in the Queen's Belly while her Majesty was in Bed, and that she was present when the Child was Born, and staid till she heard it cry, and then went to fetch Vinegar for the Queen to smell to ; she, the Deponent, heard the Queen command the Midwife not to tell her of what Sex it was, for

fear of surprizing her Majesty : When the Deponent brought the Vinegar, she did desire to see the Child, Mrs. Delabadie having it in her Arms. The Child looked black, whereupon the Deponent desired Doctor Waldegrave to look to it, believing it was not well : That the Deponent saw the Navel-string of the Child cut, and three drops of the Blood, which came fresh out, given to him for the the Convulsion Fits.

Isabella Wentworth.

Dame Catherine Sayer, one of the Gentlewomen of the Bed Chamber to the Queen Dowager, Depofeth,

THat she waited on the Queen Dowager to the Queen's Labour, and was all the time by the Bedside, and stood there, till the Queen was Delivered, and follow'd the Child, when it was carried by Mrs. Delabadie to the Bed-Chamber, and took a warm Napkin and laid it on the Child's Breast, believing the Child was not well.

Catherine Sayer.

Dame Isabella Waldegrave, one of the Gentlewomen of the Bed-Chamber to the Queen, Depofeth,

THat she was constantly with the Queen, her Majesty was likely to miscarry, and had often seen Milk in her Majesty's Breast, and was with the Queen at the time of her Labour with the Prince, and saw the Prince taken out of the Bed, and went after Mrs. Delabadie with the Prince in her Arms into the little Bed-Chamber, and was by when the Child was shewn to the King that it was a Son; and this Deponent took the After-burden, and put it into a Bafon of Water, and carried it into the Queen's Clofet.

\* Isabella Waldgrave.

Mrs. Margaret Dawson, one of the Gentlewomen of the Bed-Chamber to the Queen, Depofeth,

THat on the Tenth of June last, in the Morning, she was sent for by the Queen out of St. James's Chappel, where she was at Prayers, and that coming up into the Queen's Chamber, she found her sitting all alone upon a Stool by the Bed's-head, when the Queen said to her, this Deponent, she believed her self in Labour, and bid her, the Deponent, get the Pallat Bed, which stood in the next Room, to be made ready quickly for her ; but that Bed having never been aired, the Deponent perswaded the Queen not to make use of it :

After which the Queen bid the Deponent make ready the Bed she came out of, which was done accordingly. The Deponent further saith, That she saw fire carried into the Queen's Room in a Warming-Pan to warm the Bed, after which the Queen went into her Bed, and that the Deponent stirred not from the Queen until her Majesty was delivered of a Son. That she the Deponent, well remembers, that on the 29th of December last her Majesty was afraid of Miscarrying, which was about the time she quickned ; and that after the Queen had gone 22 Weeks with Child, her Majesty's Milk began to run, which she the Deponent often saw upon her Smock, and that the 9th of May her Majesty apprehended miscarrying again with a Fright.

Margaret Dawson.

Mrs. Elizabeth Bromley, One of the Gentlewomen of the Bed-chamber to the Queen, deposeth,

**T**Hat she was sick all Winter, till a little before Easter last, when she the Deponent came into Waiting ; That from that Time till the Queen was brought to Bed, she the Deponent saw the Queen put on her Smock every Morning, by which means she saw the Milk constantly fall out of her Majesty's Breasts, and observed the Bigness of her Majesty's Belly, which could not be counterfeit. That the Deponent came from Whitehal to the Queen's Labour to St. James's the Tenth of June last, and remained in the room till the Queen was delivered and afterwards ; but did not follow the Child, till some time after, when she the Deponent went to see what colour'd Eyes he had.

Elizabeth Bromley.

Mrs. Peligrina Turini, One of the Gentlewomen of the Bed-chamber to the Queen, deposeth,

**T**Hat she constantly attended the Queen, when she was last with Child, and that on the Tenth of June last, she was in Waiting on her Majesty, who called her on the said Tenth of June in the Morning, and told her the Deponent, she was in Pain, and Bid her send for the Midwife, her Ladies and Servants, after which she the Deponent stay'd with the Queen during her Labour, and until she was delivered of the Prince of Wales.

\* The Mark of Pelegrina X Turini.

Mrs. Anna Cary, One of the Gentlewomen of the Bed-chamber to the Queen Dowager, depofeth,

**T**hat ſhe waited on the Queen Dowager from Somerſet-houſe to St. James the Day the Queen was brought to Bed, and went into the Queen's Bed-chamber, where ſhe this Deponent ſtay'd, till the Queen was deliver'd, and ſaw the Prince as ſoon as he was born.

\* Anna Cary.

Mrs. Mary Anne Delabadie, Dry Nurſe to the Prince,  
Depofeth,

**T**hat ſhe was with the Queen all the time her Majeſty was with Child, and dreſs'd her every Day, and in all the Nine Months did not miſs above Six Days, and that at ſeveral times by reaſon of Sickneſs.

That on Sunday morning the 10th of June laſt, ſhe the Deponent was ſent for to the Queen, who was in Labour, That the Deponent came preſently, and was with the Queen all the Time of her Labour, and that kneeling down by the Midwife, giving her Cloaths for the Queen, the Midwife told this Deponent, that immediately on the next Pain, the Queen would be delivered, which accordingly ſhe was. That this Deponent whiſper'd to the Midwife, aſking whether it was a Girl, ſhe answered, No ; whereupon the Midwife parted the Child, and put it into the Receiver (that the Deponent had given her) and then delivered the Child to the Deponent, and bid her go and carry it to the Fire, and take care of the Navel, which this Deponent did, and the King and Council followed her, and the King aſked this Deponent, what it was, who answered, what he deſired ; the King replied, But let me ſee, whereupon the Deponent preſently ſhewed his Majeſty that it was a Son, and the Privy Counſellours then preſent ſaw it one after another. The Deponent ſat with the Prince in her Lap, till the Midwife had done with the Queen, then the Midwife came and took the Prince from this Deponent, and aſked for a Spoon for to give it three Drops of the Blood of the Navel-string, which the Midwife cut off by the Advice of the Phyſicians, who ſaid, it was good againſt Fits. That the Deponent held the Spoon when the Midwife dropp'd the Blood into it, and ſtirred it with a little Black Cherry Water, and then it was given to the Prince ; that the Queen ſent for this Deponent, and gave her the Prince to take care of him in quality of Dry Nurſe, which ſhe has hitherto done ; and further depofeth it to be the ſame Child that was born of the Queen.

Mrs. Danvers, one of the Princess of Denmark's Women, and formerly Nurse to the Lady Isabella, coming to see the Prince, she told this Deponent, she was glad to see the same Marks upon his Eye, as the Queen's former Children had.

\* Mary Anne Delabadie.

Mrs. Judith Wilks depofeth,

**T**Hat being the Queen's Midwife, she came often to her, especially when her Majesty was in any Danger of miscarrying, and many times felt the Child stir in her Belly, and saw the Milk run out of her Majesty's breasts; that on Trinity Sunday last in the Morning about Eight of the Clock, the Queen sent Mr. White, Page of the Back-stairs, to call her this Deponent, believing her self in Labour; when the Deponent came, she found the Queen in great Pain and Trembling; the Queen told her she feared it was her Labour, it being near the time of her first Reckoning, she the Deponent desired her Majesty not to be afraid, saying, she did not doubt that it was her full Time, and hoped her Majesty would have as good Labour as she always had; and whilst her Majesty was sitting trembling, her Water broke, and immediately she sent for the King, he being gone to his own Side, and let him know in what Condition she was, and desired him to send for whom he pleased to be present. The Queen ordered this Deponent to send for Mrs. Dawson and the rest of her Women; Mrs. Dawson came presently, and the Countess of Sunderland with her, and the rest of the Women also; that most of them saw her this Deponent make the Bed fit for the Queen to be delivered in; which when it was ready her Majesty was put into, and about Ten a Clock that Morning, the Queen was delivered of the Prince of Wales by her this Deponent's Assistance, and afterwards she the Deponent shewed the After-burthen to the Physicians, and before them the Deponent cut the Navel-string, and gave the Prince Three Drops of his Blood, to prevent Convulsion Fits, according to their Order. And this Deponent further saith, That when the Child was born, it not crying, the Queen said she thought it was dead, this Deponent assured her Majesty it was not, and desired Leave to part the Child from the After-burthen: Which the Queen was unwilling to have done, thinking it might be dangerous to her self; but the Deponent assuring her Majesty it would not, her Majesty gave Consent; where-upon the Child presently cried, and then the Deponent gave it to Mrs. Labadie.



Mrs. Elizabeth Pearse, Laundress to the Queen, Deposeth,

**T**Hat about Nine of the Clock on the 10th of June last in the Morning, she came into the Bed-chamber, and heard the Queen cry out, being in great Pain, in which she continued until her delivery; after which she the Deponent saw the Prince of Wales given by the Midwife to Mrs. Labadie; that immediately after the Deponent saw the Midwife hold up the After-burthen, shewing it to the Company, and then the Deponent fetch'd her Maids, and with them took away all the foul Linnen hot as they came from the Queen; That for a Month after her Majesty's Lying-in, the Deponent well knows by the washing of her Linnen, that the Queen was in the same Condition that all other Women use to be on the like Occasion; and that some time after her quick'ning it appeared by her Smocks, that her Majesty had Milk in her Breasts, which continued until she was brought to Bed, and afterwards during the usual Time.

Elizabeth Pearse.

Frances Dutchess of Richmond and Lenox, deposeth,

**T**Hat she the Deponent was not at the Queen's Labour, because she did not know it Time enough, but as soon as she did, she made all the Haste she could to dress her; but the Queen was delivered before she the Deponent came; And that at a Time when the Queen apprehended she should miscarry, and the Physicians made her Majesty keep her Bed for that Reason, the Deponent went one Evening to wait upon her Majesty, and as she stood by her Bed-side, her Majesty said to her, My Milk is now very troublesome, it runs so much. The Deponent asked the Queen if it used to do so; who answered, It used to run a little, but now the Fright I am in of miscarrying, makes it run out very much, as you may see, throwing down the Bed Cloaths to the Middle of her Stomach, and shewing her Smock upon her Breast to the said Deponent, which was very wet with her Milk.

\* F. Richmond and Lenox.

Charlotte, Countess of Litchfield, deposeth,

**T**Hat she was not at the Queen's Labour, (being in Child-bed her self) but that she was almost constantly with the Queen, while she was with Child, and hath put on her Smock, and seen the Milk

run out of her Breast, and felt her Belly, so that she is sure that she could not be deceived, but that the Queen was with Child.

\* C. Litchfield.

Anne Countess of Marischall, depofeth,

**T**Hat she was several times in the Queen's Bed-chamber when she shifted her self and hath seen her Smock stain'd with her Milk ; That she was not at the Queen's Labour, tho' sent to by One of her Ladies, being sick of a Fever ; but does in her Conscience believe her Majesty was with Child, both by her Belly and her Milk.

A. Marischall.

George Lord Jeffreys, Lord Chancellour of England, depofeth,

**T**Hat he being sent for to St. James's on the Tenth of June last by a Messenger that left Word the Queen was in Labour ; soon after he, this Deponent, came to St. James's, and was sent for into the Queen's Bed-chamber, and to the best of his, the Deponent's Apprehension, the Queen was in Labour, and had a Pain or two to the best of his, the Deponent's Remembrance, before the rest of the Lords were called in. The Deponent stood all the time at the Queen's Bedside, and heard her cry out several Times as Women in Travail use to do, and at length after a long Pain, it was by some of the Women on the other Side of the Bed, said the Child was born. The Deponent heard the Queen say, she did not hear it cry. The Deponent immediately ask'd the Lord President what it was, he whispered that it was a Boy, which the Deponent understood he had hinted to him by the Lady Sunderland. Immediately the Deponent saw a Gentlewoman, who he had since heard her Name to be Mrs. Labadie, carry the Child into another Room, whither the Deponent followed, and saw the Child when she first opened it, and saw it was black and reeking ; so that it plainly seemed to this Deponent to have been newly come from the Womb. The Deponent doth therefore depose, he doth steadfastly believe the Queen was delivered of that Child that very Morning.

Jeffreys C.

Robert Earl of Sunderland, Lord President of His Majesty's Privy Council, and Principal Secretary of State, depofeth,

**T**Hat on Sunday Morning the 10th of June last, he was sent to, to come to St. James's the Queen being in Labour. The Deponent immediately went, and found many of the Council there.

After having been some time in an outward Room, first the Lord Chancellour, and then the rest of the Council were called into the Queen's Bed-chamber, where in a short time her Majesty was brought to bed. The Deponent saw Mrs. Labadie carry the Child into the next Room, whither the Deponent followed, with many more, and saw it was a Son, and had the Marks of being new born.

Sunderland P.

Henry Lord Arundel of Wardour, Lord Privy Seal, deposeth,   
**T**Hat on the 10th of June last, being Sunday, he had Notice given him that the Queen was in Labour, whereupon the Deponent repaired to St. James's betwixt Nine and Ten of the Clock in the Morning, where he found several Lords of the Council; in a little time after they were all called into the Queen's Bed-chamber; in less than a Quarter of an Hour after, she fell into the Sharpness of her Labour, her cries were so vehement and especially the last, that the Deponent could not forbid himself the being concern'd for her great Pain; which the Deponent expressing to the Lord Chancellour, he told the Deponent it was a Sign Her Majesty would the sooner be delivered, or Words to that Purpose, which proved very true, for presently after she was so; the Deponent heard a Whispering up and down that it was a Prince, for no Man was permitted to speak it aloud, lest the sudden Knowledge of it might have discomposed the Queen; the Deponent did not go in with some Lords when the Child was carry'd into the next Room, which was the Occasion the Deponent did not see him when he was uncovered and dress'd.

\* Arundel C. P. S.

John Earl of Mulgrave, Lord Chamberlain of His Majesty's Household, saith, it is not to be expected one of his Sex should be able to give full Evidence in such a Matter, but deposeth,

**T**Hat he was just at the Bed's Feet, and heard the Queen cry very much, then the Deponent followed the Child into the other Room, and it seem'd a little black; the Deponent also saw it was a Boy.

Mulgrave.

William Earl of Craven, deposeth,   
**T**Hat he attended the King at St. James's, the 10th of June last, in the Morning, to receive the Word of his Majesty; the King had Notice brought him, that the Queen was upon the Point of

falling into Labour, upon which the King commanded this Deponent's Stay and Attendance; and after the Space of One Hour and something more, this Deponent was, with some other Lords of his Majesty's Privy Council, called into the Queen's Great Bed-chamber to be present at her Delivery, and as near as this Deponent can remember, the Queen made Three Groans or Squeaks, and at the Last of Three was delivered of a Child; the which was carry'd out into the Little Bed-chamber; and there by the Fire this Deponent saw it cleansing: and this Deponent further saith, that he took that particular Mark of this Child, that he may safely averr, that the Prince of Wales is that very Child that then was so brought out of the Queen's Great Bed-chamber, where this Deponent and others were present, as aforesaid, at her Majesty's Labour and Delivery.

Craven.

Lewis Earl of Feversham, Lord Chamberlain to her Majesty  
the Queen Dowager, depofeth,

THat being in Bed upon the 10th of June between 8 and 9 a Clock in the Morning, Mr. Nicholas, One of his Majesty's Grooms of his Bed-chamber, came into this Deponent's Room, and told him that the King had sent him to tell the Queen Dowager, that the Queen was in Labour, and told him further that the Queen Dowager had given Order for her Coach, as soon as she heard the news of the Queen's Labour. The Deponent dressed himself with all speed, and came to wait upon the Queen Dowager, who was ready to go into her Coach, as she did; the Deponent went into One of her Coaches to wait upon her Majesty as he us'd to do, having the Honour to be her Lord Chamberlain; we went to St. James's, and then led her Majesty into the Queen's Bed-chamber, and finding the Queen in Pain, the Deponent went into the next Room, where were several Lords of the Privy Council, from whence the Deponent heard the Queen cry out several times, and a very little after the Lords of the Council were called in, and the Deponent followed them into the Bed-chamber, and a very little after the Queen cry'd louder, and then said, Pray do not tell me what it is yet. The Deponent went out of the Room, to tell the News that the Queen was brought to Bed; and when the Deponent came in again, the News was, that it was a Prince; and immediately the Deponent saw Mrs. Labadie with the Child wrapt up in her Hands, and in the Crowd; upon which the

Deponent desir'd to make room for the Prince, and followed her into the Little Bed-Chamber, where the Deponent saw the Prince as a Child newly-born, as he believed it.

Feverham.

Alexander Earl of Morray, depofeth,

THat he came not to St. James's till half an Hour after the Queen was brought to bed, and only heard that her Majesty was brought to Bed of a Prince, which the Deponent verily believes, as he is alive, she brought into the World that very Morning, being the 10th of June last, 1688.

\* Morray.

Charles Earl of Middleton, One of his Majesty's principal Secretaries of State, depofeth,

THat the 10th of June last past, betwixt 8 and 9 of the Clock in the Morning, he had Notice that the Queen's Majesty was in Labour, whereupon the Deponent made what Haste he could to St. James's; the Deponent found the Earl of Craven waiting at the Queen's Bed-chamber Door towards the Drawing-room, which was then shut; just after the King opened it, and called the Earl of Craven and the Deponent in; the Deponent asked his Majesty, how the Queen was? He was pleased to answer the Deponent, you are a married man, and so may know these Matters; the Water is broke or come away, or to that effect; and then bid the Deponent go into the Dressing-room within the Bed-chamber, where the Deponent found several Persons of Quality; above half an Hour after, to the best of this Deponent's Memory, all the Company in that Room were called into the Bed-chamber; the Deponent stood near the Bed's Feet on the left Side, where he heard the Queen's Groans, and presently after several loud Shrieks; the last, the Deponent remembers continued so long, that he then wondred how any Body could hold their Breath so long; presently after the Deponent heard them say, the Queen was delivered: whereupon the Deponent stepped up to the Bed side, and saw a Weman, he supposes, the Midwife, kneeling at the other Side of the Bed, who had her Hands and Arms within the Bed-cloaths for a pretty while, then the Deponent saw her spread a Cloth upon her Lap, and laid the End of it over the Bed-cloaths, and then fetch a Child (as the Deponent firmly believes, for he could not then see it) out of the Bed into that Cloth, and give it to Mrs. Labadie, who brought it round to the Side where the Deponent stood, and carry'd

it into a little Room, into which the Deponent immediately followed the King, and saw her sit down by the Fire, and heard her say, It is a Boy ; upon which the King said, Let me see it, thereupon she laid open the Cloth, and shewed all the Child, saying, There's what you wish to see ; the Deponent doth not charge his Memory with the very Words, but the Sense of what he heard. The Deponent looked upon the Child at the same time, which appeared to be very foul. This Deponent desireth Pardon if he doth not know the proper Expression, but hopes his Meaning is plain.

Middleton.

John Earl of Melfort, depofeth,

**T**Hat on Sunday the 10th of June last, betwixt 8 and 9 in the Morning, the Deponent was informed, that the Queen was in Labour ; the Deponent went to St. James's and waited in the Queen's Drawing-room till some of the Gentlemen told him he might go in ; the Deponent scratched at the Door of the Bed chamber and finding no Answer, he ran down by the Garden Side and came to the Queen's Back-stairs, and finding the Dressing-room Door open, the Deponent went into the Queen's Bed-chamber, where he saw a great Number of Company, Lords and Ladies standing about the Bed : the Deponent heard the Queen cry out in great Pain, as Women use to do when they are near being brought to Bed ; the Deponent heard her complain, and a Woman's Voice which the Deponent thought to be the Midwife, telling her she would be quickly well, she would be brought to Bed immediately ; within a little the Deponent heard the Ladies behind the Bed say, the Queen was brought to Bed, and the Queen cry out, The Child is dead, I do not hear it cry, and immediately the Child cryed ; within a little the Deponent saw a Woman bring a Child from within the Bed ; the Deponent looked so earnestly at the Child, that he knew not what Woman it was ; the Child was in the Condition of a new born Child, lapp'd up in loose Cloaths ; the Deponent saw him carried into the Little Bed-chamber, and went about by the Dressing Room, and entred by the other Door into the Room where the Prince was, and saw him in the Condition of a new born Child ; and the Deponent by the Oath he hath taken, believes him to be the Queen's Child.

\* Melfort.

Sidney Lord Godolphin, Lord Chamberlain to the Queen,  
deposeth,

THat he was called into the Queen's Bed-chamber, with the rest of the Lords of the Council, being one of the last; and the Queen Dowager being there, and several Ladies, the Room was so full that the Deponent could not get near the Bed, but stood by the Chimney; There the Deponent heard the Queen cry out several times, as Women use to do that are in Labour: and the last Cry that the Deponent heard, was much greater than the other; immediately upon that, the Deponent was called out of the Room, to give some directions about the Lodgings that were preparing for the Child, which were not ready; the Deponent made hast back again, but as he was coming, he met People running with the News that the Queen was Deliver'd of a Son, whereupon the Deponent went into the little Bed-chamber, and saw the Child.

Godolphin.

Sir Stephen Fox, Knight, Deposeth,

THat on Sunday the 10th of June last past, about 9 of the Clock, as he came out of the Chappel at Whitehall after the first Sermon, hearing that the Queen was in Labour, he, the Deponent, made haste to St. James's, because in waiting, as an Officer of the Green Cloth, to warn the several Servants below Stairs to be in their Offices, that upon that occasion there might not happen to be any thing wanting of Household Provisions and Necessaries under his, this Deponent's, Command; but first going up by the Back-Stairs, into her Majesty's Dressing-Room, and being there with many others, he heard her Majesty cry out very loudly; whereupon this Deponent hastned to the Green-Cloth, and ordered the several Servants to deliver out of their several Offices whatsoever should be called for, and as this Deponent was returning back to the Queen's said Dressing-Room, he was told, A Prince was born: Upon which News, He, this Deponent, went into the Queen's Little Bed-chamber, and saw the young Child before he was dress'd.

Ste. Fox.

Lieut. Col. Edward Griffin, deposeth,

THat upon Sunday the 10th of June last, he had the Honour to be in waiting upon the King with the Stick, and between 8 and 9 in the Morning, this Deponent was in the Queen's Dressing Room at

St. James's, with several Lords of the Council, and after some time we were there, the King came out of the Queen's Bed-chamber, and called all the Lords in, and this Deponent went in along with them, being in waiting; immediately after the said Lords and this Deponent were in the Room; the Queen cryed out extremely, and said, Oh, I die; you kill me, you kill me: And the Midwife (as this Deponent believeth) answered, This one Pain, Madam, and 'twill be over; then presently Mrs. Dawson made this Deponent the Sign that the Child was born: Then this Deponent heard the Queen say, Don't tell me what it is yet; and Mrs. Dawson came to this Deponent, and whispered him in the Ear, 'Tis a Prince, but don't take notice of it yet. Then Mrs. Delabadie brought away the Child from the Bed-side, and carry'd it into the Little Bed-chamber, and the King and the Lords of the Council went after her, but this Deponent did not follow them.

Edward Griffin.

Sir Charles Scarborough, First Physician to the King, depofeth,  
**T**hat upon the Deponent's coming to Visit Her Majesty then lying at St. James's on Sunday the 10th of June, 1688, as the Deponent went up the Back-stairs, he heard the joyful Acclamation that a Prince of Wales was Born, upon which the Deponent hastned presently into the Little Bed-Chamber, where the Deponent found Mrs. Labadie just sitting down before the Fire, with the new born Prince wrapped in the Mantles, lying in her Lap. Then passing to the Queen in the next Bed-chamber, the Deponent congratulated the happy Birth of the Prince, and her Majesty's safe Delivery. The Queen was wearied and panting, but otherwise in good Condition: Then the Midwife brought to the Deponent the After-birth reeking warm, which Sir Thomas Witherley with the Deponent examined, and found very sound and perfect. After a while the Deponent understood that a Medicine was mentioned among the Ladies for a certain Remedy against Convulsions: It was some Drops of Blood from the Navel-string; the Deponent consulted Sir Thomas Witherly and the other Physicians; and to satisfy the Women, it was allowed of; there being, as was conceived, no Danger in the thing. Whereupon, the Midwife, with a small knife, slit the Navel-string beyond the Ligature, from which came some Drops of fresh Blood, taken in a Spoon, and given the Child, being mixed with a little Black-cherry-water. Thus much the Deponent hath to say upon her Majesty's present Delivery.



Now for the Time of the Queen's Conception, she often told the Deponent and others, that she had two Reckonings; One, from Tuesday the 6th of September, when the King returned from his Progress to the Queen then at Bath; and the other, from Thursday the 6th of October, when the Queen came to the King at Windsor; but for some Reasons the Queen rather reckoned from the latter; tho' afterward it proved just to agree with the former. Moreover, her Majesty, when, according to her reckoning, she was gone with Child 12 Weeks, said, That she was quick, and perceived the Child to move; the Deponent returned no Answer to the Queen, but privately told those about her, that in truth it could not be in so short a Time. Yet the Queen was in the right, only mistook her Reckoning; for she was then full Sixteen Weeks gone with Child; about which time she usually quickned with her former Children, and accordingly was brought to Bed on the 10th of July 1688, and within Three or Four Days of full Forty Weeks.

Charles Scarburgh.

Sir Thomas Witherley, second Physician to the King,  
deposeth,

THat on Sunday the 10th of June, the Deponent was present in the Queen's Bed-chamber, when the Prince of Wales was born; the Deponent saw Mrs. Labadie bring the Child from the Midwife, and carry him into the next Room, whither the Deponent followed her, and saw the Child before he was cleaned; and having a Command from the Queen, that there should be Two Drops of the Blood of the After-burthen given the first Thing; we the said Deponent and the other Physicians did take Two Drops of Blood from the Navel-string which remained upon the Child, and gave it in a Spoonful of Black-cherry-water, as the Queen commanded. After this the Deponent saw (as also did the other Physicians) the After-burthen entire.

Tho. Witherley.

Sir William Waldgrave Knt. Her Majesty's first Physician,  
Deposeth,

THat in the Progress of Her Majesty's being with Child, the Deponent having the Honour to wait upon Her as usual, upon the 13th of February, 1687. about Ten in the Morning, she told the Deponent, she had Milk in her Breasts which dropp'd out; it was then thought the 19th week according to One Reckoning, but

according to Another Reckoning, it was the One or Two and Twentieth Week ; the Deponent also Affirmeth, That her Majesty took such Adstringent Medicines, during the most part of her being with Child, in order to avoid Miscarriage ; That if she had not been with Child, they must have been Prejudicial to her Health, and of dangerous Consequence. Upon the 10th of June, 1688. the Deponent was called at his Lodging in Whitehall to wait upon the Queen, being told she was in Labour, upon which the Deponent immediately went to St. James's, and so into the Queen's Bed-Chamber, and found her beginning her Labour, it being about Eight of the Clock in the Morning ; The Deponent stirred not from thence, but to get such Medicines as were fit for Her Majesty, and then returned again, and was in the Bed-Chamber when she Cried out, and was Delivered ; the Deponent followed Mrs. Delabadie, who took the Prince in her Arms so soon as he was Born, and carried him into the Bed-Chamber, where the Deponent saw him upon her Lap, and was by when he took two or three drops of the Navel-string fresh warm Blood, which was mixed with Black-Cherry-water, then returned into the great Bed-Chamber, where the Deponent saw the After-burthen fresh and warm.

\* William Waldgrave.

Dr. Robert Brady, one of His Majesty's Physicians in  
Ordinary, Depofeth,

THat a little before Ten of the Clock in the Morning, on the Tenth of June 1688. the Deponent was in the Queen's little Bed-Chamber at St. James's, where the Deponent saw the Prince of Wales in Mrs. Labadie's Lap by the Fire side ; the Deponent desired to see the Linnen and Blankets opened in which he was wrapped ; which being done, the Deponent saw it was a Male Child, and the Navel-string hanging down to, or below the Virile parts, with a Ligature upon it, not far from the Body, but did not see any After-burthen hanging at, or joined to it not being at the Birth ; The Deponent asked how long he had been Born, the standers by told him, At three Quarters of an Hour after Nine of the Clock, the Queen was Delivered.

Robert Brady.

James St. Amand, their Majesties Apothecary,  
Deposeth,

THat from the beginning of November last, he hath generally every Day, till the 9th of June, 1688. given, by the Physicians Orders, Restraining and Corroborating Medicines to the Queen's Majesty ; That on the 10th of June he was sent for in haste to come to St James's to her Majesty, who, the Messenger told him, was in Labour ; That the Deponent then received a Note from the Physicians for Medicines for her Majesty, which the Deponent was obliged to stay and prepare, and so came not to St. James's till the Queen was Delivered; the Deponent meeting, just as he was going into the Bed Chamber, Mrs. Labadie with the Young Prince in her Arms ; the KING, and several of the Lords, soon after following into the little Bed-Chamber ; where the Deponent saw the Child Naked, before it was Cleanfed from the Impurities of his Birth ; and also saw the Navel-string cut, and some Drops of Fresh Blood received into a Spoon, which the Deponent mingled with a little Black-Cherry-Water, and saw given by the Physicians' Orders to the Child ; and afterwards going into the Great Bed-Chamber, where the Queen was delivered, he saw the After-burthen, &c. fresh.

Ja. St. Amand.

After these Depositions were taken, His Majesty was pleased to acquaint the Lords, That the Princess Anne of Denmark would have been present ; but that she being with Child, and having not lately stirred abroad, could not come so far without hazard. Adding further,

AND now, My Lords, although I did not question but every Person here Present was satisfied before in this Matter ; yet by what You have heard, You will be better able to satisfy Others. Besides, if I and the Queen could be thought so Wicked as to Endeavour to Impose a Child upon the Nation, You see how impossible it would have been ; neither could I My Self be imposed upon, having constantly been with the Queen during Her being with Child, and the whole Time of Her Labour. And there is none of You but will easily believe Me, who have suffered so much for Conscience-sake, incapable of so great a Villany, to the Prejudice of My Own Children. And I thank God, that those that know Me, know well that it is My Principle to do as I would be done by, for

that is the Law and the Prophets : And I would rather die a Thousand Deaths, than do the least Wrong to any of My Children.

His Majesty further said,

**I**F any of my Lords think it Necessary the Queen should be sent for, it shall be done. But their Lordships not thinking it Necessary, Her Majesty was not sent for.

**I**T is ordered this Day by His Majesty in Council, That the several Declarations here before made by His Majesty, and by Her Majesty the Queen-Dowager, together with the several Depositions here entred, be forthwith Enrolled in the Court of Chancery. And the Lord Chancellour is ordered to cause the same to be Enrolled accordingly.

**I**N Pursuance of which Order in Council, the Lord Chancellour on Saturday the 27th day of October following in the High Court of Chancery (many of the Nobility and Lords of his Majesty's most Honourable Privy Council being there present) caused the aforesaid Order in Council and Declarations of his Majesty, and likewise that of her Majesty the Queen Dowager to be openly and distinctly read in Court, as the same are Entred in the Words aforesaid, in the Council Book. And the Lords and Ladies, and other persons who made the respective Depositions aforesaid, being present in Court, were Sworn again, and having heard their several Depositions distinctly Read in the Words aforesaid, and being severally Interrogated by the Court to the Truth thereof, they all upon their Oaths affirmed their respective Depositions to be True : and did likewise depose (except some few, who came in late to the Council Chamber, or some who stood at too great a distance) that they heard His Majesty, and Her Majesty the Queen-Dowager make the several Declarations aforesaid, and that the same as they had been Read, were truly Entred as they did believe, in the Council Book, according to the Sense, Intent and Meaning of what His Majesty the King, and Her Majesty the Queen-Dowager did then declare. And for as much as the Earl of Huntingdon and the Earl of Peterborow, who were able to depose to the Matters aforesaid, had not been Examined at the Council Board, but had brought their several Depositions in Writing, which they delivered into Court, the said Lord Chancellour, after the said Earls were severally Sworn,

Ordered their Depositions to be openly Read in these Words following,

UPon Trinity Sunday, 10th. June, 1688. I went to St. James's House about Nine a Clock in the Morning, and followed my Lord Chancellor, through the Lodgings to the Dressing-Room, next to Queen's Bed-Chamber, where divers Lords of the Council were met upon occasion of the Queen's being in Labour, the King came several times into the Room, and amongst other things was pleased to tell us, that the Queen came exactly according to Her first Reckoning, which was from the King's Return from His Progress, to Bath in September, 1687. After this the Counsellours were ordered to come into the Bed-Chamber, and I stood on that side of the Bed, that had the Curtains drawn open, I heard Her Majesty Cry out several times. I staid in the Room during the Birth of the Prince of Wales. I saw him carried into the little Bed-Chamber, whither the King, the Lords and my self in particular did follow him.

Huntingdon.

I Had the Honour to be in the King's Chamber in the Morning, when Word was brought him, the Queen was not well, and followed him into the Dressing Room next Her Majesty's Bed-Chamber, where I staid till His Majesty called me come in, which was about the beginning of Her Pains. I Confess the Compassion I had for Her Majesty, hearing Her Cries, made my stay there very uneasy, One of the last especially seemed to me so Sharp, as it really forced me for a little Time to stop my Ears with my Fingers to avoid hearing more of the like; when setting them at Liberty, I heard no more but perceived a sudden Satisfaction in the Faces of the Assitants, several saying, that the Queen was delivered, and soon thereupon I saw the Prince brought from about the Bed, and carried into the little Bed-Chamber, whither I went afterwards, to behold him more particularly, where I saw him as a Child newly Born.

\* Peterborow.

AFTER which the said Earls did severally upon their Oaths affirm their Depositions to be True as they had been Read, and that they were present in Council, and heard His Majesty and Her Majesty the Queen-Dowager make the several Declarations aforesaid, and that the same were Entred in the Council Book as they did believe

according to the Effect true Sense and Meaning of what their Majesties declared in Council ; Whereupon His Majesty's Attorney General moved the Court, that the said Declarations of his Majesty, and of Her Majesty the Queen-Dowager, and the several Depositions, and the Order of Council should be Enrolled in the Petty-Bag Office, and in the Office of Inrolments in the Court of Chancery, for the safe Preservation and Custody of them, which the Lord Chancellour Ordered accordingly.

**Finis.**

"Inter Folia Fructus."

MEMOIRS  
OF THE  
CHEVALIER DE ST.  
GEORGE,

WITH  
SOME PRIVATE PASSAGES

OF THE  
LIFE of the late KING JAMES II.  
1712.

*NEVER BEFORE PUBLISHED.*

~~~~~  
"HISTORY IS BUT THE UNROLLED SCROLL OF PROPHECY."

—JAMES A. GARFIELD.
~~~~~

PRIVATELY PRINTED  
FOR THE CLARENDON HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

—  
1885.

*This edition is limited to 120 large paper and 400 small paper copies,  
for Subscribers only.*



MEMOIRS  
OF THE  
Chevalier de St. GEORGE,  
With some  
PRIVATE PASSAGES  
OF THE  
LIFE  
Of the late  
King JAMES II.  
Never before published.

---

LONDON:

Printed in the Year M DCC XII.  
(Price One Shilling.)





MEMOIRS  
OF THE  
Chevalier de St. George, &c.

—♦—  
**W**HATEVER the Reader may conceive under this Romantic Title, I must ask his Pardon, for some few Pages at least, to be a little serious : As to the Original of this Young Hero, let him take it as it stands in History, without putting me to the trouble of ascertaining, that either the Chevalier De St. George is James III. or James III. Son of James II. Something therefore relative to these Memoirs, let me say of his (supposed or pretended) Father, since I shall else begin a Structure without any Foundation at all, which would seem a very Miraculous as well as Unaccountable piece of Work.

I cannot remember, that ever England had a fairer Sunshine, or Prospect of Happiness, than at the joyful Restoration of the Royal Family; when after a long and unnatural Exile, they were restored to their lawful Rights and Honours. The Reign succeeding I shall not meddle with, nor pretend to decide whether it was the Prince or the People that occasioned the domestic troubles that were then Predominant; yet this I think I am obliged to say, and which all reasonable Men will I believe own, That the Exile I have Mentioned was the grand Motive, or Foundation of the Troubles we have undergone since.

The Queen Mother, who was banished with her Children, took care to inspire them early with favorable Sentiments of her own Religion, and to dissipate the Prejudice of former Education. What effect it had on the rest, I cannot exactly say; but on the Duke of York it took such Root, that together with his Correspondence with the Catholicks in Flanders, contributed to strengthen the immoveable Impressions he had received of the Truth of the Catholic Religion.

After his Return to England, he soon made himself beloved and respected by the Nobility and Gentry; nor did he want a sufficient share of Interest in the Hearts of the Common People. He commanded the Navy against the Dutch, and in Two Engagements sufficiently raised his Reputation : But this Prosperity did not last long ; for without any Eclipse of his Merit, he began to decline in the Hearts of the People ; when they perceived that either he had changed his Religion, or, at least, had a mind to do it : And what added to it was the Suspicion likewise that he had converted the Dutches his First Wife, who died in the infancy of these Rumours, which therefore lessened the impression it began to make on the People. And they were yet in some hopes for the Duke himself : but he had ere this made his Abjuration to Father Simons an English Jesuit. And tho' the measures he took were always most Prudent, and he did not publicly declare himself to be a Catholic, 'twas nevertheless mighty difficult with him, not to discover to the Protestants, that he had separated from their Communion.

The Parliament took the Alarm, and from that time Measures were contrived to alter the Right of Succession. There were some Bishops of the Church of England, who, fore-seeing the Effect of so violent a Proceeding, would have stopped the Blow ; to which end they addressed themselves to the Duke himself. They begged of him only to accompany the King his Brother to Chappel, when His Majesty went to the Protestant Prayers : They humbly represented to him, that such a wise Proceeding, might lay the Tempest that had been raised against him, and prevent the Bill of Exclusion from making its way thro' the Parliament. But they could not prevail with him, receiving for Answer, these Words,—“My Principles do not suffer me to dissemble my Religion after that manner ; and I cannot obtain of my self to do Evil that Good may come of it.”

This Constancy of the Duke's threw the King into such disorders, that he had very great need of all his Authority and Force : For as he had a tender love for him, he was moved with the Danger wherein he saw him ; resolving to support him against the Torrent of his Enemies, which in the main he did ; nevertheless the Duke found himself obliged to resign his Place of Grand Admiral, and his other Trusts ; Those who stuck the closest to him before, removed themselves from his Person ; and this unhappy Prince, who was Presumptive Heir to Three Kingdoms, and had been used to behold a Crowd of admiring Courtiers about him, was of a sudden reduced

to the Condition of a Private Person, and abandoned by all the World.

Yet so far did the King's Endearments go, and the better to prevent the Alteration of the Succession to the Crown, that he of himself proposed to the Duke of York a Second Marriage. As his Majesty had no Legitimate Children, and indeed despairing of ever attaining that Blessing ; he judg'd it convenient that his Brother who had but Two Daughters left, should have an Heir, who might one day sit on the Throne of England. The Princess thought on by His Majesty, was the Lady Mary d' Este, Sister to Francis, Duke of Modena, and Daughter to Alphonso D' Este, the Third of that Name, Duke of Modena, by Madam Laura Martinessi, his Wife. She was born upon the 25th of September, Anno 1658, and had not passed the 15th Year of her Age, when at Modena she was married to his Royal Highness, by his Proxy, Henry, Earl of Peterborough, who with a noble Retinue attended her Highness and the Dutchess-Dowager her Mother into France ; and after having resided some time at Paris, they came to Calais, and thence to Dover, where they arrived Nov. 21st, 1673. At Dover she was received by the Duke, where the Marriage betwixt them was personately Consummated by the Right Reverend Father in God, Dr. Nathaniel Crew, Lord Bishop of Durham, and now Lord Crew.

At London they were entertained with high Respect at the Court of England, where the Dutchess-Dowager, her Mother, having continued about the space of Six Weeks, in Order for the Settlement of her Daughter, she returned to Italy, to manage Affairs in the Infancy of the Duke her Son.

This Marriage met with great Opposition on the part of the Parliament, because the Princess was a Roman Catholic, yet the King gave little regard to what was Remonstrated to him on that account. He was pleased after, that the Dutchess proved fruitful, from whence he hoped a numerous Progeny to supply the Throne, which he judged in Time would eat up and destroy all manner of Prejudice. And here I think it will not be improper to repeat the Issue she had by the Duke, before the Person I am writing of, was said to be born.

On the 10th of January, 1674, she was brought to Bed of a Daughter, at the Palace of St. James's. She was Baptised by the Name of Katherine Laura, having for Godmothers the Ladies Mary and Anne, her Half-Sisters, and the Duke of Monmouth for her

Godfather. She died the Year following, Anno. 1675, on the 3d of October, and was interred in the Vault of Mary, Queen of Scotland.

Isabella of York, Second Daughter of His (then) Royal Highness, James, Duke of York, and the Lady Mary D' Este, his Second Wife, was born at St. James's, the 28th of August, Anno. 1676. Her Godmothers were the Duchess of Monmouth and the Countess of Peterborough, and her Godfather, Thomas, Earl of Derby, Lord High Treasurer of England, now Duke of Leeds. This young Princess died at the Age of 3 Years 6 Months, and Odd Days, viz. the 2d. of March, 1680, and was privately buried in the Vault of Mary, Queen of Scots.

Charles of York, Duke of Cambridge, first Son of His Royal Highness, James, Duke of York, by the Lady Mary D' Este his second Wife, was born at St. James's, the 7th of November, Anno. 1677, and the Next Day was Baptised by the Bishop of Durham ; the King his Uncle, and the Prince of Orange, were his Godfathers; and the Lady Isabella his Sister his Godmother. He died suddenly on the 12th of December the same Year, and was interred privately in the Tomb of Mary, Queen of Scots.

Charlot \* Maria of York, third Daughter of James, Duke of York, by the Lady Mary D' Este his second Wife, was born at St. James's, the 15th of August, 1682, and two Days after was christened by Henry, Bishop of London. Her Godmothers were the Countesses of Arundel and Clarendon ; and the Duke of Ormond her Godfather. She died the 6th of October following, and was interred privately in the Vault of Mary, Queen of Scots.

None of these Children surviving long, gave Wings to the Ambition of the Duke's enemies ; but had a contrary effect on the King's Spirits, and those who had any esteem for him. Another thing now trumped up, that mightily helped to overwhelm the Duke's Interest, and alleviate even the good Opinion the King had of him, and this was the Popish Plot, wherein the Duke was brought in. The Accusers boldly gave out, that they were first to have assaulted the King's Person, and after that to have made away with all the Protestants. The Parliament took the Alarm and encouraged the Discovery of it ; and the King, when he met them, told them in his Speech : "That he had been informed of a Design against his Person, by the Jesuits," whereupon a Bill was brought in and passed into an

---

\* Sic.

Act, For the more effectual preserving the King's Person and Government, by disabling Papists from sitting in either House of Parliament. Five of the Popish Lords were committed to the Tower, and impeached of High Treason, One of which was beheaded : Diligent search was made after the Priests, and the Religious, several of them were hanged up in London, and others died miserably in the Prisons they were sent to.

The King however was very unwilling to lend an ear to the Suspicions raised against his Brother, and therefore did all he could to endeavor to clear him of the Insinuations laid against him : The Duke despised the scandalous Discourses, and false Reports that were made of him : But he was little sensible of the pressing Instances, and indeed the Reproaches of his Friends, who carried them so far, as to condemn the firm Steadiness of his Mind, giving it the Name of Prejudice and Obstinacy in Opinion. They remonstrated to him, that he would be the occasion of his own, and the King's Ruin ; and the utter Extinction of the Catholic Faith in England ; and the Overthrow of the State. A greater Check he yet met with from the King, who urged his Reasons with great Strength, and earnestly begged him to be contented to keep his Religion within his own Breast, without discovering and giving open Proofs of it to the World ; who at such a juncture would not fail to improve it to his Ruin. He likewise remonstrated to him the great Hardships they had undergone already from the implacable Temper of the English Nation, and concluded all with assuring him that he should never want his Protection, did he not put it out of his power to cherish and support him. But the Duke remained inflexible, and resolved to hazard all, rather than dissemble his Religion.

The King, on the other hand, finding something must of necessity be done to appease the Minds of the People, thought fit to have the Duke to remove to Brussels, and after some Months ordered him to pass into Scotland. He obeyed the King with an entire Submission, and instantly prepared to be gone : But it was a smart Trial with a Heart so tender as his, to take leave of the King on these Conditions.

On the other hand, he found the King softened into Tears, and the Dutchess his Consort Inconsolable on this occasion. Nevertheless he still bore up against his own Tenderness, and the violent Motions of Nature that worked so strongly on his Mind, and so without Trouble or Complaint set out as the King had commanded him.

During his residence in Scotland, he sufficiently won upon the Hearts of the People, and the Parliament there by a solemn Deputation returned their most humble Thanks to His Majesty, that he had sent them a Prince so very acceptable to them: Which favourable Account made way for his Return into England a Few Months after.

In the Year 1680, a New Parliament being called, the Commons fell into a debate of the Popish Plot, and came to several rigorous resolutions, the first of which was against the Duke of York as being a Papist; and after several speeches it was resolved that a Bill should be brought in (this was the Second Bill of Exclusion) to disable James, Duke of York, from inheriting the Imperial Crown of England, and Ireland, and the Dominions thereunto belonging: Which Bill passed the Lower House, and was carried up to the Lords by William Lord Russel, but at the second reading the Lords threw it out: and the King, upon the Warmth that grew in Parliament, found himself obliged to dissolve them.

Soon after the King calling a New Parliament to meet at Oxford, a Third Bill of Exclusion was brought in, read the first time, and ordered a Second Reading, but the King thought fit again to prorogue them. Soon after the Duke returned to England, where he was received in a very affectionate manner by the King; and the Act drawn up against him was no more talked of.

The Duke's Friends had now in their turn an Instance of Triumph, in the Discovery of the Ryehouse Plot, for which several of his most inveterate Enemies suffered Death, and others were sufficiently mortified. From whence to the death of his Brother King Charles II. and his attaining the Crown, he had a clearer sunshine of Peace, than the Foregoing Part of his Life had been acquainted with: Nor shall I omit one Passage at his Brother's Decease, which is borrowed from an Author,\* who seems to be of Credit.

"As his Zeal was ever the same in Adversity, so he took care to preserve it in Prosperity: He passionately desired the King's Conversion, and found it pretty well advanced, when he came to discourse the King upon such Occasions as he thought most seasonable.

"The King gave him a Paper he had composed himself, and writ with his own Hand, which contained a Summary of the most Material

---

\* Father Francis Brettonneau's Abridgment of the Life of King James II.



and Solid Arguments for the Truth of the Catholic Religion. In fine, Heaven gave a blessing to these good Dispositions, and the Duke had this Comfort, when he lost his Brother, to see him die in the Bosom of the True Church.

“King Charles II. fell sick, and on the 4th Day of his Illness, was by his Physicians given over: When Two Protestant Bishops came to wait on His Majesty, they began the read, as is usual, at the Bed’s Feet, the Office for the Visitation of the Sick. When they came to the Place where the Sick Person is exhorted to make Auricular Confession, but at the same time is told, that there is no Command obliges him to it, and he may if he pleases dispence with it; the Bishop of Bath stepped up to the King, made him a short Exhortation, and asked him if he repented of his Sins? The King having answered, *He did so*; His Lordship pronounced the form of Absolution, after the Manner of the Church of England. When the Office was over, the Bishop returned to the King to ask him whether he was willing to receive the Sacrament; and to exhort him to it. But the King answered him not a Word. His Lordship urged, and the King was pleased to tell him he would think on it. The Bishop still insisting on it, His Majesty still evaded it.

“The Duke of York did not let slip so fine an Occasion. He ordered all those who were by the King’s Bedside to withdraw; and then addressing himself to the King, he testified his Joy to see him at last (as he thought) resolved to execute what his Conscience had so often solicited him to do; and offered at the same time to call for a Priest. *For God’s sake Brother*, answered the King, *go send for one.* But, added he, *Won’t you expose yourself too much?* To which the Duke replied, *Sir, tho’ it should cost me my Life, I will get you one.* He went out immediately, and by a particular Accident, or a very singular Providence, the First Priest he met was Father Huddleston, a Benedictine, the same that contributed much towards the Saving the King’s Life after the Battle of Worcester, when that Prince hid himself all Night in the Hollow of a Tree. Father Huddleston was shewed up a Private pair of Stairs into a Closet near the King’s Bedchamber. As soon as the King knew him, he gave order for all that were in the Chamber to retire, except his Brother.

“The Duke however had a mind that the Earl of Bath, First Gentleman of the Bedchamber, and the Earl of Feversham, Captain of the Guards, both Protestants, should stay and be Witness of what passed. This Precaution he thought necessary to prevent the

malignant Consequences that his Enemies might have made from thence, in case the Duke had staid alone with the King, when His Majesty was in that weak condition.

"Father Huddleston went in, received the King's Abjuration, heard his Confession, and afterwards administered him the Sacraments. There was no delaying the Matter, for a few Hours after the King died. He acknowledged upon his Death-Bed, that next to God, he owed the Grace of his Reconciliation to the Church, to the indefatigable Zeal and tender Affection of the Duke his Brother. Nay more, he asked his Pardon aloud for the severe Treatment he had several times given him ; and testified to those who were present, in terms of Esteem, Friendship, and Tenderness not to be expressed, how much he was touched with the Resignation and Patience which the Duke had all along shewn on these Occasions."

After the Death of King Charles II. the Duke of York was proclaimed King of Great Britain, by the Name of James II. Publick Rejoicings were heard in all Cities ; and the Acclamations, and Shouts of Joy, which were heard from all parts, gave occasion to hope for a very happy Reign both to Prince and People.

If he had followed the Advice of his Council, he would have been a little remiss in the point of Religion : They would have persuaded him to stay some time before he publicly declared himself a Catholic. Of this opinion were several Catholicks themselves ; but all the Reasons they offered him, made no manner of impression on his Mind, and the Sunday after his accession to the Crown he heard Mass publicly.

Not fully content with this Proceeding, he designed to re-establish Liberty of Conscience in England by Act of Parliament, wherein the Catholicks should be comprehended, as well as the rest of the Nonconformists ; mean time he gave it out beforehand, as some of the ablest Lawyers after serious Examination, assured he might by Virtue of his Prerogative Royal.

The present Juncture was favourable enough for the King to make his Orders obeyed, and execute what he had undertaken, as to Liberty of Conscience. One would have thought that the Defeat of the Duke of Monmouth, and the Earl of Argyle, who took up Arms, one in England, and the other in Scotland, should have confirmed his Authority. But the Prejudice to the Catholic Religion had so deeply prevailed in the Hearts of the People, that it soon raised new Troubles, and hindered the King's Intentions.

It was insinuated to the People, that the King designed to destroy the Church of England, and introduce Popery, by main Force ; that their Liberties and Properties were in danger, and themselves of being oppressed by an Arbitrary Government. These Reports eat into the People's Minds, and there lay corroding ; and from that time nothing but Complaints and Murmurings were heard over all the Nation : After all the most Moderate Men confessed, that excepting the Case of Religion, they could not wish for a King fitter to procure the Advantage of the Nation, both in respect to his personal Virtues, and of his great Insight in Trade and Government.

Whilst Affairs were at this Crisis, the Queen, who had already had Four Children, as we have mentioned, was now with child, and sufficient cause of Joy it was to the King's Friends, especially the Catholicks : A Proclamation was published appointing a public Day of Thanksgiving to be observed in the Cities of London and Westminster, and soon after in all other Places of the Kingdom, and a suitable Form of Prayer was likewise ordered to be prepared for that purpose.

This News caused various Reflections throughout the Nation, and instead of allaying the former heat of the People, enflamed them the more. They entertained a Prejudice, which no doubt was instilled into them, that the Queen's Big Belly was only a Feint, an artifice of the R. Catholicks, for some end or other ; but yet they knew not what Name to give it. And as every thing seemed to forward the King's Misfortunes, about this Time the Bishops were sent to the Tower, a Proceeding the King was more to blame in, than the Blackest Incidents they had to charge him with.

On the 10th of June, between the Hours of 9 and 10, a Rumour spread that the Queen was in labor ; the Town took the alarm, and People seemed not a little surprized. This was not only confirmed, but was soon followed with the News of her being brought to bed of a Prince, and in the Afternoon the following Account was published by Authority.

"Whitehall, June 10. This Day between 9 and 10 in the Morning, the Queen was safely delivered of a Prince at St. James's ; His Majesty, the Queen-Dowager, most of the Lords of the Privy Council, and divers Ladies of Quality being by."

The Prince of Orange himself, and the States of Holland, sent to compliment the King upon this Occasion, and acknowledged the new Prince, as did almost all the Cities in the Kingdom, who thereupon

sent their Addresses to His Majesty, full of Expressions that signified a most sincere Fidelity and Zeal. Notwithstanding which there was a very deep Resentment lay hid in the Breasts of most People. The Prepossession they had that the Prince was imposed on them, was agitated by other melancholy Circumstances ; that the Order of the Church and Constitution were in danger of being totally subverted : And this, as a stronger Physic on the Mind, drove out all lesser Humors, and divested them even of the Respect and Allegiance they owed to their Sovereign. It unluckily happened too, that Five Days after this Account was published of the Birth of the Prince, the Bishops were brought to Trial, and the Army lay then encamped at Hounslow Heath: Two things which did grievously alarm and afflict the People : The former needed no Aggravation of Words to provoke them, the Trial was public, and as universally resented : The other required a little Art to possess them, that it was an Irish Catholic-Army, and designed to keep a heavy hand over the Kingdom, if they pretended to dispute the King's Authority in repealing the Tests and Penal Laws, by which Method he designed to introduce his own Religion.

This worked so effectually, that People were every where ripe for Self-Defence, and the King was no less than accused of imposing a Child for his Lawful Successor, to the Prejudice of his own Daughters, for whom he had always expressed all the Affection and Tenderness imaginable, and they to him, and paid all the Duty and Respect due to an indulgent Father : And notwithstanding all the Royal Favors he had bestowed, yet he could depend on nothing but his Army ; nor with any great Confidence on them, which made him resolve to try how far he might trust their Fidelity, and therefore endeavoured to engage them, both Officers and Soldiers, to sign a Writing, whereby they should promise to contribute as far as in them lay, towards supporting the King's Design of taking off the Test and Penal Laws. This Project was thought fit to be proposed to all the Regiments one by one, and the first, His Majesty's Desires were made known to, was the Earl of Litchfield's Regiment, who all thereupon, both Officers and Soldiers (Two Captains and some private Men excepted) laid down their Arms; at which the King being astonished, commanded them to take up their Arms again. This was a sufficient Experiment of the Temper of the Soldiers ; and His Majesty found that nothing but new modelling the Army would do.

Things standing in this disposition, a Memorial of the Church of

England was drawn up privately, and sent to the Prince and Princess of Orange, to implore their Protection, whilst many of the Nobility and Gentry joined in these Sollicitations ; and others withdrew themselves into Holland, where they gave the Prince Assurances of a sufficient Power, that would immediately join him on his landing.

In the mean time, His Majesty had resolved to call a Free Parliament, to establish an Universal Liberty of Conscience, and to remedy all the Complaints of his Subjects. The Charter of the City of London was restored, the Suspension of the Bishop of London taken off ; the Deputy Lieutenants and Justices of the Peace, who had been removed for disputing His Majesty's Commands, were suffered to resume their Commissions ; and a Proclamation was published for restoring Corporations to their ancient Charters.

The Rumor of the Prince's being an Impostor began to spread with greater Warmth, and to this was added, that his true Mother was to be brought over with the Dutch Fleet : Being now about Four Months old, he received private baptism in the Chappel of St. James's, on the 15th of October, of which the Following Account was published by Authority.

"Whitehall, Oct. 15. This day in the Chappel of St. James's, His Royal Highness the Prince of Wales, being before christened, was solemnly named (amidst the Ceremonies and Rites of Baptism) James, Francis, Edward. His Holiness, represented by his Nuntio, Godfather, and the Queen-Dowager Godmother. The King and Queen assisted at the Solemnity, with a great Attendance of Nobility and Gentry, and a Concourse of People, all expressing joy and satisfaction, suitable to the Place and Occasion.

And now to stifle the Suspicion and Report, which had gained but too much credit, that the Prince was not lawfully born of the Queen's Body, the King assembled an Extraordinary Council, where the Queen Dowager, the Peers that were in Town both Spiritual and Temporal, the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, the Judges, and His Majesty's Council at Law, were present.

To whom His Majesty delivered himself in this manner,

"My Lords,

"I Have called you together upon a very extraordinary Occasion ; but extraordinary Diseases must have extraordinary Remedies. The malicious Endeavors of my Enemies have so poisoned the Minds

of some of my Subjects, that by the Reports I have from all hands, I have reason to believe, that very many do not think this Son, with which it hath pleased God to bless me, to be mine, but a Supposed Child. But I may say, that by particular Providence, scarce any Child was ever born, where there were so many Persons present.

"I have taken this time to have the Matter heard and examined here, expecting that the Prince of Orange, with the first Easterly Wind will invade this Kingdom: And as I have often ventured my Life for the Nation before I came to the Crown, so I think my self more obliged to do the same now I am King; and do intend to go in person against him, whereby I may be exposed to Accidents, and therefore I thought it necessary to have this now done, in order to satisfy the Minds of my Subjects, and to prevent this Kingdom being engaged in Blood and Confusion after my Death; desiring to do always what may contribute most to the Ease and Quiet of my People, which I have shewed by securing to them their Liberty of Conscience, and the Enjoyment of their Properties, which I will always preserve.

"I have desired the Queen-Dowager to give her self the trouble to come hither, to declare what she knows concerning the Birth of my Son; and most of the Ladies, Lords, and other Persons who were present, are ready here to depose upon Oath their knowledge of this Matter.

After His Majesty had ended his Speech, the Queen Dowager rising from her Chair, which was placed on the King's Right Hand, was pleased to declare in the manner following.

"**T**HAT when the King sent for her to the Queen's Labor, she came as soon as she could, and never stirred from her till she was delivered of the Prince of Wales." To which she signed

"Catherina R."

The Clerk of the Council was then ordered to receive the Oaths of the Ladies, Lords, and other Persons, who had any Evidence to deliver in this Matter.

These were

THE Marchioness of Powis.

The Countess of Arran.

The Countess of Peterborow.

The Countess of Sunderland.  
 The Countess of Roscommon.  
 The Countess of Fingal.  
 The Lady Bulkley.  
 The Lady Belasyse.  
 The Lady Waldgrave.  
 Mrs. Mary Crane and Mrs. Anne Cary, Gentlewomen of the  
 Bedchamber to Queen Dowager.  
 Mrs. Isabella Wentworth, Mrs. Catherine Sayer, Mrs. Isabella  
 Waldgrave, Mrs. Margaret Dawson, Mrs. Eliz. Bromley,  
 Mrs. Pelegrina Turini, Gentlewomen of the Bed-chamber  
 to the Queen.  
 Mrs. Mary Ann Delabadie, Dry Nurse to the Prince.  
 Mrs. Judith Wilkes, Her Majesty's Midwife.  
 Mrs. Eliz. Pearce, the Queen's Laundress.  
 The Dutchess of Richmond and Lenox.  
 The Countess of Litchfield.  
 The Countess of Marischal.  
 George, Lord Jefferies, Lord Chancellor.  
 Robert, Earl of Sunderland.  
 Henry, Lord Arundel of Wardour, Lord Privy Seal.  
 John, Earl of Mulgrave, Lord Chamberlain of the Household.  
 William, Earl of Craven.  
 Lewis, Earl of Feversham, Lord Chamberlain to Catherine,  
 Queen Dowager.  
 Alexander, Earl of Murray.  
 Charles, Earl of Middleton.  
 John, Earl of Melfort.  
 Sidney, Lord Godolphin, Lord Chamberlain to the Queen.  
 Sir Stephen Fox. Kt.  
 Lieutenant Colonel Edward Griffin, afterwards Lord Griffin.  
 Sir Charles Scarborough, Kt. First Physician to the King.  
 Sir Thomas Witherley, Second Physician to the King.  
 Sir William Waldgrave, Kt. First Physician to Her Majesty.  
 Dr. Robert Brady, One of His Majesty's Physicians in Ordinary.  
 James St. Amand, Their Majesties' Apothecary.

All these declared, with some little Differing Circumstances, the  
 Birth of the Prince ; the greatest part, as they attested, having seen  
 it before it was cleansed from the Impurities of its Birth, with all

other infallible Tokens of his being immediately born of the Queen's Body.

After these Depositions were taken, the King was pleased to acquaint the Lords, that the Princess Anne of Denmark, his Daughter, would have been present, but that she being with Child, and having not lately stirred abroad, could not come so far without Hazard. "And now, my Lords," adds the King, "altho' I did not question but all here present were before satisfied in this Matter; yet by what you have heard, you will be the better able to satisfy others. Besides, if I and the Queen could be thought so wicked as to endeavor to impose a Child upon the Nation, you see how impossible it would have been; neither could I my self be imposed upon, having constantly been with the Queen, during her being with child, and the whole time of her Labour. And there is none of you but will easily believe me, who have suffered so much for Conscience-sake, incapable of so great a Villainy, to the Prejudice of my own Children. And I thank God, that those who know me, know well it is my Principle to do as I would be done by; *For that is the Law and the Prophets*; And I would rather die a Thousand Deaths, than do the least wrong to any of my Children."

"If any of my Lords think it necessary the Queen should be sent for it shall be done;" which the Lords declined, saying, they had received satisfaction enough from what the King had declared.

Then an Order in Council was made, "That the Declarations before made, by His Majesty and by Her Majesty the Queen Dowager; together with the several Depositions then entered, should be forthwith enrolled in the Court of Chancery.

In pursuance of which Order in Council, the Lord Chancellor, on Saturday the 28th of October following, in the High Court of Chancery, many of the Nobility, and the Lords of His Majesty's most Honourable Privy Council, being present, caused the aforesaid Order of Council, and the Declarations of His Majesty, and the Q. Dowager, to be openly and distinctly read in Court, as the same were entered in the Words aforesaid in the Council Book. And the Lords and Ladies, who made the respective Depositions aforesaid, being present in Court, were sworn again, and having heard their Depositions distinctly read in the Words aforesaid, and being severally interrogated by the Court to the Truth thereof, they all upon their Oaths affirmed their respective Depositions to be true; and did likewise depose (except some few, who came late into the Council Chamber, or some who



stood at too great a distance) that they heard His Majesty, and Her Majesty the Queen-Dowager, make the several Declarations aforesaid, and that the same, as they had been read, were truly entered into the Council Book, according to the Sense, Intent and Meaning of what His Majesty the King, and Her Majesty the Queen-Dowager did then declare. And for as much as the Earl of Huntingdon, and the Earl of Peterborow, who were able to depose to the Matters aforesaid, had not been Examined at the Council Board, but had brought their several Depositions in Writing, which they delivered into Court, and were to the same effect with the rest, the Lord Chancellor, caused them to be openly read, and examined them severally upon their Oaths to the Truth thereof. Whereupon His Majesty's Attorney General moved the Court, that the said Declarations of his Majesty, and of Her Majesty the Queen Dowager; and the several Depositions, and the Order of Council, should be enrolled in the Petty Bag Office, and in the Office of Enrolments in the Court of Chancery, for the safe Preservation and Custody of them, which the Lord Chancellor ordered accordingly.

Before this His Majesty had received the Compliments of Congratulation from most of the Princes of Europe, the Prince and Princess of Orange not excepted; and Addresses from all Parts of the Kingdom to the same purpose. And not only this, but the most Spritely and Ingenious of the Two Universities employed their Pens in celebrated Verses, to congratulate the King on this Occasion. There seemed a glorious Interval of Peace and Happiness, and a hopeful Promise of Lasting and Infinite Blessings to the Nation; but in the Mazes of Providence there is something ordained for Man not to see, and which the most glorious and fair Appearance of is only delusive. In One of those famous pieces of Poetry I have mentioned, the Author seems to have had much such another Thought, and indeed to prophesy something of Futurity.

*ONCE more my Goddess, hear thy Priest,  
Indulge me, O indulge this last Request!  
The Mightiest Boon thou hast in store,  
I ask, but grant, and I will ask no more.*

*Oh let me enter to the Inmost Room,  
The darken'd Retirement of Apollo's Doom.*

*The sacred Mirror there expose,  
The Wondrous Magic-Glass,  
Which from its bright reflective Face,  
Fate's inmost Secrets shows,  
And great Futurities already come to pass.*

*There I would view when James shall late repair,  
In the first Orbs to shine a Star ;  
And guide with guardian Rays, his People from afar.  
There I would view his Godlike Son  
With Shouts ascend his Father's Throne ;  
And cheer, with mighty Hopes, the drooping Albion.*

*Next, Goddess, I would see him reign,  
Crown'd and uncontrol'd, the Monarch of the Main.  
Whilst humble Belgians sue for Peace,  
And the far East and West the British Power confess.  
Let him next on land appear,  
Bold, yet cautious, open, and yet wise;  
Generous, and yet frugal, good without Disguise.  
With Justice mild, and piously severe.  
Shew me Goddess, shew me this,  
And let thy Oracles to morrow cease.*

*Alas, the Muse the well meant Pray'r denies,  
She struts, frowns, and thus replies :  
" With Furious Folly, and with Zeal Profane,  
The uneasy Britons still would pry  
Into the Depths of late Futurity ;  
Whilst Heaven showers present Blessings down in vain.  
What Time shall come, and what the Fates will do.  
Concerns not thee, O Man to know ;  
To-day is thine, O seize the useful Now !  
But nothing happy, Man can please,  
Wanton and lawless grown, with Luxury and Ease."*

How near this Poet hit the Temper of his Countrymen, I need not shew ; they were not to be pleased, Cabals were formed against the King, and an Intelligence kept with the Prince of Orange, who was invited over, and being succoured by the Hollanders, appointed a

numerous Fleet, with which he passed into England with an Army of 13000 Men. The King in a very indulgent manner, offered whatever his Subjects could reasonably require, if Reason and their own Interest could have reclaimed them ; but the Frenzy was grown too strong : The Prince was advancing with his Troops, and the King seeing no other means of healing this Breach, put himself at the head of his Army, and marched against the Enemy, when drawing near to them, he soon found what he had to trust to ; his Army was instantly abandoned by almost all its Officers, most of which had been gained by the Prince of Orange's Emissaries, who instead of doing their Duty to attack him, went over to him.

The Desertion in short was so general, that the King's own Creatures forsook him, and even those he had overwhelmed with his Royal Goodness were found in the Confederacy. In this Confusion of Affairs he judged it improper to continue at the head of such an Army, from whom he could promise himself no Subjection, and therefore retired again to London.

Mean time provision was to be made for the Security of the Queen, and Prince of Wales (then so called) who was now not above Six Months old, whom the King caused privately to pass into France ; and intended himself soon to follow them. At length he got out of Whitehall, parted from London, and embarked ; but being obliged to put ashore again for Ballast, he was arrested and discovered near Feversham, where he was so rudely treated by the Mob, as very much exercised his Royal Patience ; the Dignity of his Person not being sufficient to guard him from those mean Insolencies, which but to a Private Person would have been accounted infamous Outrages. Here however he received the courtesy of having his wearing Cloaths brought him, being sent on board a Man of War then in the Hope, below Gravesend, for that purpose ; and as soon as 'twas known at London of his being stopped at Feversham, the Lords sent him his Coaches and Guards, and at the same time deputed the Earl of Feversham to go and engage him to come back.

The King had no time to deliberate, for he was no longer Master of his own Proceedings, and therefore took Coach and submitted to be conducted to London : The People, by their loud Acclamations, testifying an extraordinary Joy and entire Devotion to the King's Interest ; which was but a Transitory Comfort, for about Midnight, when the King lay fast asleep void of all Fear and Suspicion, the Lords Hallifax, De la Mere, and Shrewsbury, came to awake him, and

to tell him from the Prince of Orange, that it was found necessary for him to retire from London. They offered him at the same time his choice of Hampton Court or Ham, for the Place of his Retreat, but the King desired to go to Rochester, which was granted him, and thither he was carried Prisoner.

Here he continued some few Days, always bearing in mind that he was a Christian and a King, till he met with a favorable Opportunity for his Escape. There was a Boat waited for him at the Seaside, the King passed unobserved thro' a Garden, stepped into the Boat, and set sail for France, whither in a day or two he happily arrived. He was received in France with all the Marks of Honor and Distinction suitable to his Character, and hasting to St. Germans he there found the Queen and Prince (so-called) newly arrived. And here one may pretty well judge what were the Sentiments of the Hearts of their Britannic Majesties at this afflicting, yet joyful Interview. They now saw one another again after so sorrowful a Parting, and so many Dangers they had both undergone; but at the same time could not but reflect deeply on the Condition they were reduced to, which yet was very much alleviated by the obliging and generous Offers of the King of France, and the repeated Promises he made them, to succour and assist them with all his Power.

But this mutual Comfort of seeing one another again did not last long, the King had not been above Two Months at St. Germans, before he thought himself obliged, for the Good of his Affairs, to pass into Ireland, where the Lord Tyrconnel, at the head of the Catholics, still maintained the King's Authority. The King sailed thither, and there sustained the War against Duke Schombergh for above a Twelvemonth, till King William arriving with a numerous Force of veteran Troops, had the advantage of the King's Army, and defeated him at the Passage of the Boyne; after which he was advised by My Lord Tyrconnel, and all the General Officers to retreat to France, where, about Two Years after, his Queen bore him a Daughter, who was born the 28th of June, 1691, and christened Louise Marie, about the time of her Father's Disappointment by the Defeat at *La Hogue*; from which time the Residue of his Life was wholly employed in Exercises of Piety and Devotion, of which he was a very shining Example to the time of his Death.

For some time before which he made it his daily Prayer to God, that He would be pleased to take him out of this troublesome World, and on this Subject he had some conversation with the Queen, who

seemed very sensibly afflicted at his having so passionate a desire of Death, telling him that she looked upon the Preservation of his Person as necessary for the Good of her and her Children. But she received no other Answer but this, "That God Almighty would take care of her, and her Children, and that his Life gave him no Capacity of doing any thing for them." He would often have communication with his Children, especially the Prince of Wales (as they then called him) in whom the King was infinitely delighted, as finding in him, tho' yet very young, a Genius capable of arriving at the highest Accomplishments, which the King would passionately indulge him in, and by repeated Instructions take all imaginable care to fructify his tender Mind with the most Useful and Noble Sentiments, to which in Nature he seemed so apparently inclined.

About Midsummer, 1701, the King was seized with a dead Palsy, and grew dangerously ill upon it. The Physicians being of opinion that he might receive some benefit from the Waters of Bourbon, he went thither, and took them with some Success: But some Months after he began to spit Blood again, as he had done before his Journey to Bourbon; and on the 2d of September he was taken very ill; in which State he continued for Two Days, and then his Physicians began to Despair of his Life. The same Day he made a general Confession, which he had scarce finished before he was taken with such a Weakness as was followed by a Vomiting of Blood, which had like to have choaked him, however, he recovered himself a little, and called for the Prince of Wales (as then called) who immediately entered the Chamber; but it was a sad Spectacle for him to see the King covered with Blood, and half dead. He ran to embrace him, and the King held out his Arms to him himself, and embraced him with all the tenderness imaginable. He blessed him, and as he gave him his benediction, recommended to him above all things to stand fast by his Religion, and the Service of God, whatever came of it, and to have always for the Queen all the respect and submission due to the Best of Mothers. He likewise let him understand how much he was indebted to the King of France, which he charged him never to forget: What else the King had to say to him, he gave him in Writing, and bid him read it often when His Majesty was gone; a Copy of which is hereafter printed.

It was not without some Violence that the Prince was taken from him, the King would fain have held him; "Leave me my Son," said he, "let me give him my Blessing once more;" which when he had

done, he suffered him to retire to his own Apartment. After which the King ordered the Princess his Daughter to be brought him ; to whom he spoke much in the same Terms ; and gave her his blessing : And the Princess, melted into Tears, gave him to understand by the Abundance of them the inward Sorrow of her Heart.

When the King had done speaking to his Children, he ordered the Protestant Lords, and his Domesticks of the same Religion, who were in his Chamber, to come near him. He exhorted them every one in particular to embrace the Catholic Religion, assuring them that if they followed the Advice he gave them, they would feel the same Consolation that he did, whenever they found themselves in the same Condition they then saw him in. Nor did he forget the Catholicks, whom he exhorted to live according to their Faith, and all together to pay a lasting and just obedience to the Prince.

The King of France, who had not missed One Day to inform himself of the state of his Health, and had been already twice to see him, paid him a third visit. His Most Christian Majesty went first into the Queen's Chamber, where he declared to her the Resolution he had taken, That "provided it pleased God to take the King her Husband, he would acknowledge the Prince of Wales (as he was then called) for King of England," Upon which the Queen sent immediately for him, and acquainted him with what His Most Christian Majesty designed to do in his favour ; to whom the King, resuming the Discourse, said, "Sir ; you are going to lose the King your Father, but you shall always find another in me, and I shall look on you as my own Child." At which the Prince, embracing the King's Knees, assured him, "That he would also have the same respect for his Majesty, as he had had for the King his Father. That he would never forget how much he was indebted to him, but preserve the Acknowledgement of it whilst he lived."

The King of France passed from thence into the King of England's Apartment, and went to his Bedside. The Courtiers out of Respect would have withdrawn ; but His Most Christian Majesty signified to them, that he would be glad to let the World know what he had to say ; then addressing himself to the Sick King, he repeated aloud what he had before declared to the Queen concerning the Prince, adding withal, to the King's Consolation ; "That he perceived in him those early Appearances of Vertue and Honor, that could not but strengthen His Majesty in his Affection to him, besides the Obligations of Conscience and Affinity, which he had always indispensably thought himself under."

It is impossible to represent the Sentiments of the English Court upon this Occasion. Without any regard to the measures of Decency, every one was eager to testify their grateful Acknowledgements to the Most Christian King. They threw themselves at his Feet, and in Sentiments mingled with Comfort and Sorrow, made the Chamber ring with Applauses and Sighs, insomuch that the Thanks of his Brittanic Majesty could not be heard : And the Most Christian King found himself so sensibly touched, that he could scarce restrain from Tears, and therefore retired.

I shall here repeat no more of this sad Catastrophe of the English King, he lay till the 16th of September, when he resigned his Soul to God, and was with very little Pomp and Ceremony interred in the Parish Church of St. Germans, as a private Gentleman, according to the Request of his Will, and no Epitaph on his Tomb, but these four words, "Here lies King James."

Thus I have run thro' the Life of this unfortunate King, which I shall conclude with the Instructions he left in Writing to the Prince of Wales, as he was then called : but penned some time before his Death.

"KINGS not being responsible for their Actions, but to God only, they ought to behave themselves in every thing with more circumspection than those that are of an Inferior Condition ; and if Subjects owe a faithful Obedience to their King, and his Laws, the King is likewise obliged to take a great care of them, and to love them like a Father. Then as you hold the first rank among them, and that you must be one day their King your self, I believe it to be my duty, as your King, and your Father, to give you the following advice : And I find my self yet more obliged to it, when I reflect on your Age, my own, and the present State of my Affairs.

"I. Serve God as a perfect Christian, and be a worthy Child of the Roman Church. Let no Humane Consideration, of what nature soever, be ever capable to draw you from it. Remember always that Kings and Princes, and the Great Ones of the Earth, shall give an Account of their Conduct before the Dreadful Tribunal of God, where every one shall be judged according to his Works. Consider that you are come into the World to glorify God, and not to seek your Pleasure. That it is by Him that Kings Reign ; and that without His particular Protection, nothing can prosper of all that you undertake.

Serve then the Lord in the Days of thy Youth, and you shall receive a Recompence in the Land of the Living. Begin by times, and without Delay. Never forget that there are greater things expected from Persons in High Stations, than from others : Their Example gives great impressions, and is always most followed, be it as it will.

“II. If it pleases God to re-establish me upon my Throne, I have reason to hope that I shall put things in that Condition, that it shall be more easy for you to govern my Kingdoms after me, with Security of the Monarchy, and intire Satisfaction of all the Subjects. A King cannot be happy if his Subjects be not at ease, and the Subjects also cannot securely enjoy what belongs to them if their King be not at his ease, and in capacity to protect and defend them. Therefore preserve your Prerogatives, but disquiet not your Subjects, either in their Estates or their Religion. Remember the great Precept, Do not to others what you would not have done to your self. Take great care that no body oppresses the People with Vexatious Law-Suits, or Undertakings that are chargeable to them : I told you, and it is true, that a King ought to be the Father of his People, and consequently to have a tenderness for them that is altogether fatherly.

“III. Live in peace with your Neighbors, and know that Kings and Princes may commit the same Injustice with the most notorious Robbers, that openly attack the Passengers upon the High-Ways, or the Pyrates, that take whatever they meet : Without doubt they'll be punished for it at the Judgment of God. Then suffer yourself not to be drawn away by Ambition, and the Desire of a False Glory, so far as to forget the Precept of the Law of God and Nature, which I told you but just now. Harken not to the Counsels of those that shall persuade you to Enlarge your Estates and Dominions by Unjust Acquisitions, but be content with what is your own.

“IV. Do your endeavour to establish by a Law the Liberty of Conscience ; and whatever may be represented to you about it, never leave that Design until you have compassed it. It is a grace and particular favor that God does them, whom he enlightens with His Knowledge, in calling them to the True Religion ; and it is by Mildness, Instructions, and a good Example, that they are won, much more than by Fear or Violence.



“V. If you begin early to live well, it will be much easier to you to preserve your innocence, than to recover it after once you shall have lost it. Forget not the good Instructions that have been given you, to shun Idleness, and Bad Company. Idleness will expose you to all sorts of Temptation, and Bad Company will be a Poison to you, of which you’ll hardly scape the Influences. Suffer no Persons to come near you that talk obscenely or impiously, and by their Railleries endeavor to destroy Christianity it self, and turn into ridicule the most Holy and Religious Practices.

“VI. Nothing is more fatal to Men, and to the Greater Men (I speak with a dear-bought Experience) than to be given over to the Unlawful Love of Women, which of all Vices is the most seducing, and the most difficult to be conquered, if not stifled in its Birth : It a Vice that is but too universal and too common in Young People ; there are but few that apply themselves to know the Danger of it, and are not drawn to it by Bad Example, as well as the Suggestions and Artifices of the Devil ; no body ought to be so much on guard as your self ; because it has pleased God to make you, by your Birth, what you are ; for the more Men are elevated, the more they are exposed ; especially if they live in Peace and Plenty. But what ought more to oblige you to watch over your self, is the Remembrance of the terrible Example of David ; he was hardly established in his Throne, but he forgot the great Things that God had done for him, and suffered his Eyes to be dazzled by the Sight of a Woman, so far as to fall into the Sin of Adultery, and from Adultery into that of Murder. Could but all, that, with him, have had the misfortune of falling into those heinous Crimes, remember the sincere Repentance he had of them, and imitate him ; not forgetting the Chastisements and Afflictions that God sent him in this World, to save him in the next.

“VII. Master your self so much as never to be transported by Anger. That Passion offends God, and is grating to Men, and while it lasts, takes away the Reason and Judgment of him that gives himself over to it. It has been the Ruin of Several Great Men. What a King says is not easily forgot ; and there is nothing but Fear and Religion that can hinder Men from resenting it, and being revenged of it. Anger makes a Prince incapable of governing ; for how shall he rule others, when he cannot rule himself.

“VIII. Take not pleasure in feasting ; but shun all sorts of Excesses that ruin Health, and makes Men unfit for Business. It is very hard to leave the Habit of them when once it is contracted. The Excess of Wine kills in a short time those that are of a Hot Constitution, and besots them that are Phlegmatic. I believe it is not necessary to enlarge upon this Point, since few Princes among the Civilized Nations are addicted to so foul a Vice.

“IX. I must yet give you warning not to suffer your self to be engaged, either by the Heat of Youth, Ambition, Interest, or flattering Councils, into an Offensive War that is not evidently just : Otherwise it would be all at once to violate the Divine and humane Laws. Kings and Princes, to come again to the Comparison which I made you, can no more justify the Injustice which they do to their Neighbors, in taking (unless it be by way of Reprisal) their Cities and Provinces, than the Highway-men and Pirates can that which they do to Private Persons, when forcibly they take away their Goods. You ought, when Necessity requires it, to preserve and defend what is lawfully your own, in taking up Arms, and repelling Force by Force. You owe that to your self ; you owe it to your Subjects. But to be the Aggressor in an Unjust War, is an Undertaking of Fatal Consequence for this Life, and that to come. For in the first place, God pardons not if we make not restitution : And that Princes seldom do. In the second place, what Devastation makes not War in Provinces and whole Kingdoms, by the Ruin of so many Thousands of innocent Persons ? Besides these general Rules of Conscience, a King of England ought of good Politicks to be more circumspect in this Point, than any other. For not being able, without the assistance of his People to begin and carry on a War, and the People of England never believing it their Interest to furnish Money for making conquests abroad, it follows necessarily, that the Charges of the War fall upon the King's Funds, and upon what we call the Civil List, and that so the King gets in debt.

“X. For the same reason a King of England ought to take care that in his Expences he exceeds not his Revenue, and that he applies himself to what is agreeable to the People, and tends to the Public Good. If you find any of your Ministers, or Officers, that abusing the Power with which you have trusted them with, employ it to vex and oppress your Subjects, take away their Places, and punish them

your self, without giving them over to the Examination of a Parliament, who desire no better than to snatch them out of your hands, and bring them to justice themselves ; which would but weaken your Authority, and discourage those that serve you faithfully.

“ XI. Apply your self principally to know the Constitution of the English Government, that you may keep, both you and your Parliament, each in the due Bounds that become the one and the other. Further, be instructed concerning the Trade of the Nation, make it flourish by all Lawful Means. It is that which enriches the Kingdom, and which will make you considerable abroad. But above all, endeavour to be and to remain superior at Sea, without which England cannot be secure.

The Prince (as he was then called) was about Thirteen Years of Age at the Death of King James, fraught with the blooming Appearance of all manly Virtues, which now began to ripen in him, so as to attract the eyes of the Court of France. 'Tis true, the King's generous Design of declaring him King of England, according to the Promise he had given, did not pass uninterrupted through the Council; yet even those who disapproved it, took pride in excusing themselves from any manner of Prejudice and Disrespect, but on the contrary declared, “ They should be glad of any Opportunity to serve him, whose Interest they could never think of deserting, were not that of their own Country in the Scale, the inevitable Commencement of a War depending from the express Terms of a Peace very lately concluded. And therefore if they did not think this a proper Season to proclaim his Title, they could not doubt but they should merit His Majesty's, and the Prince's Excuse in what they had said.” The D—— de T——, the D—— de M——, the Counts of V——e, d—— C——, M. Ch——d, and others, were of this opinion ; but the King was steadfast in his Resolution, and the Dauphin, who was the last that spoke in Council, left no objection unanswered, either in respect to the King's Honor or Advantage, that did not entirely convince His Majesty of the Justice and Integrity of such a Proceeding ; and of the same opinion were all the Princes of the Blood.

The King, who in his Heart was resolved before, took a great deal of pleasure in the Dauphine's Words, and immediately gave Orders for the proclaiming him King of Great Britain, &c. as soon as the Breath was out of King James's Body, and the People very willingly

proclaimed their Satisfaction, by joining in it their loud and hearty Acclamations. The usual Ceremony on this Occasion being punctually observed : The Queen Mother was appointed Regent, my Lord Middleton gave up the Seal, all the Lords took the Oaths of Fidelity, the Servants kissed his Hand, and every thing stood as it did in King James's Days.

The King of France (who had not only Proclaimed him in his own Dominions, but had likewise given Orders to his Embassadors to do the same in all the Courts of Europe) thought it now a very great Argument of his Affection to him, to take care of his future Education : Thus far he had proceeded in all necessary Literature, and was ready to be initiated in the more Manly Exercises of Life : His most Christian Majesty therefore ordered him proper Masters at his own Expence, to instruct him in the most useful parts of the Mathematics, particularly Navigation, Fortification, and the like ; the former of which (Navigation) he is said to be an exquisite Master of, as he is likewise of most of the European Languages. To these more Masculine Accomplishments were added Riding, Dancing, Fencing, Shooting ; and such like Embellishments, as together made up the Character of the Person that the French had proclaimed him to be.

Those who have conversed with him, allow him to be endued with excellent Wit, and those who have seen him under the trials of it, are of the same opinion as to his Courage. In the Twelfth Year of his Age, as he was Hunting with the Duke of Berry and others in the Forest of St. Germain, they had a monstrous Boar in Chase, the Company were dispersed and the (pretended) Prince meeting the Boar separately, having only with him one Servant, shot him in the Body and ended the Pursuit. At which kind of Exercises of Shooting, Running, or Flying, there are few among the French, tho' they are very Excellent at it, that exceed him. His Dexterity in Riding and Fencing might likewise be added among these other Qualifications, but it is enough to say, that there was nothing wanting to contribute any thing to his Education. Thus far the Accounts of French Authors go. He is proclaimed there, and stiled King of England, a Detachment of Fifty of the French Guards appointed him, with Twelve Yeomen of the Guard, Six Guard du Corps, a proper Division of Household Servants, and an Allowance of 50000 Livres a Month, conveyed constantly to St. Germain in an Iron Cart ; together with a Private-Purse from the French Court of near as much more : And here we leave him a little to see how this is relished in other Places,

In England, the People seemed to be in a wonderful Surprise. For they had been taught to look on him as an Impostor, and his most Christian Majesty had, to reap the Fruits of Peace, but a little before acknowledged King William, as King of Great Britain, who being a Prince of a very great Spirit, was sufficiently roused by such a Proceeding. He immediately writ to the King of Sweden, as Guarantee of the Treaty of Ryswick, to give him an Account of the manifest Violation thereof, and at the same time sent an Express to the Earl of Manchester, his Ambassador at Paris, to come immediately away, without taking leave ; and Monsieur Poussin, the French Secretary here had suddain Notice to depart the Kingdom, The Nation addressed the King, and agreed in an unanimous adherence to his Majesty, expressing an Abhorrence of this Action in the French King, so that many who were no Enemies to the Person proclaimed, began to fear his most Christian Majesty had proceeded a Step too far.

King William was so Active, that he immediately formed the Grand Alliance, which the French were not able to prevent, and then Dissolving the Parliament, called a new One, before whom he laid the Copies of those Treaties, which they unanimously approved; and one of the first Things transacted, was the passing an Act for the Attainder of the (Pretended) Prince of Wales. But this was hardly done before King William died ; yet Matters were so far carried in Parliament, that a War was inevitable, which had been already begun in Italy, of which I have not room here to repeat any thing, if it were material, more than saying, that the French King meerly drew it on himself thro' his immovable and generous Principle of supporting the (Pretended) Prince ; for he might otherwise have made very good terms for his Grandson, by a reasonable Partition, or at least have warded off the English share in it, which has been much the heaviest, and without which, this War could not in human Probability, but have proved successful on his side.

On the contrary, in the Year 1706. The most Christian King found himself under the Necessity of suing for Peace ; yet it was not without severe struggles of Conscience to depart from the Promises he had made the late King James II. He consulted the Court of St. Germans, and in a private Conference with the Queen Dowager, and the (pretended) Prince at that time, "assured them that he would never depart from their Interest, tho' the present Exigency of Affairs, and the pressing Instances of his Subjects had obliged him to make

some Overtures of Peace to the Enemy." They returned his Majesty's Compliment with Sighs ; and the (pretended) Prince himself replied, "That not only his Interest, but even his Life it self, was too small a Consideration for his most Christian Majesty to put in Composition with the Good of his Kingdom. I am Content," says he, "to leave my Cause to Providence, being entirely assured of your Majesty's sincere Affection to me."

However, for the present, his Majesty's good Wishes for Peace were baffled, by some who thought it their Interest to carry on the War, and would be contented with nothing but the utter Ruin of the French Nation, which when the King found, he exerted himself in a very wonderful Manner ; the Offers of Peace that he had made, softened the Hearts of his Subjects, and very much helped to alleviate the Hardships they lay under, so that his Majesty, contrary to the Expectations of the Enemy, and even surpassing their Belief, was in a Capacity next Year, not only to stop the Torrent of the Confederates in Flanders, but to be victorious in Spain, at the Battle of Almanza. In Germany the Marshal de Villars likewise made a very advantageous Irruption into Germany ; and in Provence the Allies had been forced to retreat from before Toulon. As these Successes did not a little Elevate the drooping Spirits of the French Nation, so it likewise put some Life into the Court of St. Germain.

Another thing was likewise before the French Court, that promised them some Advantage. The Scotch Lords at St. Germain, had not been idle, in improving the Opportunity the Union of the two Kingdoms had given them to sound the depth of the Male-contented Party in Scotland ; and so good a Correspondence was held there, that they had the earliest notice of all that passed, and how the Nation stood affected, which was constantly communicated at Versailles. The French King, however, with his usual Caution, was not too hasty to credit the Business ; tho' it appeared to have a very good face, till a List was produced of the Names of many Leading Men in Scotland that were ready to receive (as they called it) their lawful King James VIII. The King therefore, at the repeated instances of the Scotch Lords, dispatched thither the Marquis de Nangis, by whom he sent the necessary Arms for an Expedition, and ordered him to bring back the best Intelligence possible, not only of the Truth of what had been laid before him, but what Force would be required to put it in action, and what Strength the English would be able to send thither on a sudden ; who upon his Return brought

the King large Assurances of having a strong Party in that Kingdom ready to join them, and all manner of reasonable Hopes of succeeding in the Enterprize.

Under these Circumstances, the Affair was dispatched to the Court of Rome, and related with such feeling Aggravation of being a great Means towards promoting the Cause of the Holy Catholic Religion ; and likewise so tenderly remonstrated by the (pretended) Prince himself in a dutiful and moving Letter to His Holiness ; that he was prevailed with to furnish a considerable Sum of Money towards so hopeful an Expedition, which he remitted to France ; And so diligent was His Most Christian Majesty in expending it in the necessary Preparations for this Expedition, which were transacted with such Secrecy, that the Design was rather guessed at than known, and every thing got ready before the Spring.

The Chevalier de St. George (for this was the Name he had now assumed) who had had several Interviews with the French King on this Occasion, was charmed with this new Opportunity of putting himself into the World, having a secret Impulse of Glory that spurred him forwards to appear in something worthy of the Character that was given him ; and of putting in Action those Rudiments of Honor, which he had learned with so much Pleasure. He now received the compliments of the Chief of the French Nobility on his intended Expedition, who flocked to wish him good success therein : and he likewise in his turn visited the Princes and Princesses of the Blood, and if we may believe Report (for it will be no Wonder to find Love in the Breast of a sanguine Prince at the Age of 20) he paid something more than a formal visit of leave to the blooming Mademoiselle de C——, on whom he had looked for some time with passionate eyes, as made it whispered at Court, that they too apparently betrayed something more than a common Respect due to so celebrated a Beauty. Why this Affair has been no more talked of, is perhaps the Reasons of State that moved in the Necessity of dissipating such a Match ; and tho' of late, thro' the prevailing persuasions of the Queen, it has been less a Subject of Discourse at Court, yet 'tis certain he never speaks of her to this Day without discovering the tender Remains of a broken and disappointed Passion.

To return therefore to his Military Affairs ; the day before his Departure from St. Germans, the K. of France came thither to pay him a visit, and bid him adieu. He received the King in the most dutiful and affectionate Manner, having a great crowd of Courtiers

about him, and began with expressing some extraordinary Sentiments of Thanks for what the King had been pleased to do for him in this Affair. The King told him very gayly, that he came not to receive his thanks for it, but to wish him good success, and likewise to furnish him with a Sword, which he desired him to wear in the Cause he went on, and to remember if it proved successful that it was a French Sword. The Chevalier returned the Compliment, by assuring His Most Christian Majesty, "That if it were his good fortune to get possession of the Throne of his Ancestors, he would not content himself with returning him Thanks by Letters and Embassadors, but would shew his Gratitude by his Actions." The King likewise asked him if he was satisfied in the choice of Officers and Servants that he had made to attend him? To which the Chevalier replied, That, as in every thing else, he left it entirely at His Majesty's Disposal.

And now having taken his final leave, he set out for Dunkirk on the 8th of March (N. S.) Nor will it be necessary to reiterate the sad Parting between him and the Queen; as likewise the Princess his (supposed) Sister. The Grief of the former was inexpressible, unless thro' the Multitude of Tears which she shed, that could best delineate it; she embraced him often, and sunk under a Thousand Fears and Cares for his Safety, as if she seemed to doubt of ever seeing him again: The latter likewise drowned in Tears, hung about him in a very tender and affectionate Manner, and Expressed very dreadful Apprehensions she conceived of his Safety.

In the mean time, while every thing was hurrying on for that Expedition, the French King who had entertained great Hopes of its Success, thought it no longer worthy to be made a Secret, and therefore sent the following Circular Letter to his Ministers at Rome, Switzerland, and Geneva, and other Neutral Places, the very next Day after the Chevalier's Departure.

"I Have long been of Opinion, that the assisting the King of England to possess the Throne of his Ancestors, would be for the general Good of Europe; I believe a Peace would be the Consequence of its Success; and that this Prince's Subjects will esteem themselves equally happy to Re-establish him in the Place of his Predecessors, and in being themselves delivered from the continual Impositions, wherewith they are Overwhelmed, to maintain a War altogether Foreign to them.

"As the Scots have yet more Reason than the English to be



Disatisfy'd with the present Government of England, it appears to me a convenient Opportunity to restore that Nation her Lawful Sovereign, and to enable the Prince to deliver it from the Oppression it has suffered since the Revolution, which happened under the late King of England James II.

"These are Reasons which have determined me to Equip a Squadron of my Ships at Dunkirk, and to furnish the King of England with a considerable Number of my Troops, to accompany him to Scotland to support those his faithful Subjects, who shall Declare for him.

"He left this Place Yesterday, to go to Dunkirk, in order to Embark and get with all Expedition to Scotland. His Intention is not to enter the Kingdom by Right of Conquest, but as Legal Possessor of it. He will behave himself in like manner with Respect to all his Dominions, who shall pay the Obedience they owe him, and his Subjects will only be distinguished according to the Zeal and Affection they shew to him, without Examining what Religion they professed in which he leaves them to their entire Liberty.

"I have not Thoughts of enlarging my Power by assisting to Re-establish this Prince. 'Tis sufficient that I do an Act of Justice in Vindicating the Honour of Crowned Heads, highly Affronted in the Person of the King his Father; and my Wishes will be entirely accomplished, if by God's Blessing on the Endeavors, the Success become the Means of procuring a lasting Peace, so necessary to all Europe.

"As this Resolution of mine will soon spread itself thro' Europe, my Will is, that you speak of it in the Manner I Direct you. Given at Versailles this Eighth of March, 1708."

His Holiness upon this appointed public Prayers, in the English, Scotch, and Irish Churches at Rome, for the Success of the Undertaking, and granted Indulgences to such as should put up those Prayers.

The Chevalier, upon his arrival at Dunkirk, found fresh Marks of the French King's Esteem. He was furnished with very Fine Tents, a Considerable Quantity of Gold and Silver Household Plate, of curious workmanship; Cloaths for his Life-Guards, Liveries for his Household, and all other Necessaries for his Expedition. The Mottoes or Devices on his Colors and Standards were adapted to the Purpose. On some there was that of the Royal Standard of England—"Dieu et

*mon droit*, God and my Right : On others, *Nil desperandum Christo Duce et Auspice Christo*, I don't despair since Christ is my Guide and Helper ; And on others, *Cui Venti et Mare obediunt, impera Domine, et fac Tranquillitatem!* O Thou whom the Winds and the Sea obey, command Lord, that it be calm." Whilst he is here, waiting only the favorable Event of Wind and Weather, let us see what is doing elsewhere.

Notwithstanding the great Secrecy with which this Expedition had been Concerted, it could not be supposed but that Time would bring about the Discovery of it. It was at first suspected in Holland, who gave intimation to Her Majesty's Minister, M. Cadogan. This Gentleman had a watchful Eye on these Preparations ; but it was not till the Chevalier came to Dunkirk that he made any real Discovery (nor even then as to the Place where they were designed) at what time he sent immediate notice to England ; where on the 4th of March (O. S.) Mr. Secretary Boyle acquainted the House of Commons, That Her Majesty had ordered him to lay before them several Advices received the Night before, and that Morning, of great Preparations that were making at Dunkirk, for an Invasion upon England by the French, and the (pretended) P. of Wales was come to Dunkirk : Which produced the following Address to Her Majesty.

"WE Your Majesty's most faithful and obedient Subjects, the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and Commons of Great Britain in Parliament assembled, do beg leave to return our most hearty Thanks to Your Majesty, for being generously pleased to communicate to your Parliament the Intelligence you have received of an intended Invasion of this Kingdom by the pretended Prince of Wales, supported by a French Power.

"We are so sensible of the Happiness we enjoy under Your Majesty, and are so afflicted with the dangerous Consequences of such an Attempt both to your Person and Government, that with Hearts full of Concern to Your Majesty's Safety, we beseech Your Majesty that you will be pleased to take particular care of your Royal Person, and we on our parts are fully and unanimously resolved to stand by and assist Your Majesty with our Lives and Fortunes, in maintenance of your undoubted Right and Title to the Crown of these Realms against the pretended Prince of Wales, and all other your Enemies both at home and abroad.

"The care Your Majesty has taken for the defence of your

Dominions, and particularly in fitting out so great a Fleet in so short a time, gives satisfaction and encouragement to all your Good Subjects who are likewise very sensible of the Zeal the States-General have shewn upon this Occasion.

"As a farther Instance of our Duty we humbly desire that you would be pleased to order that the Laws against Papists and Non-jurors be put in Execution, and that directions be given to seize and secure such Persons, with their Horses and Arms, as Your Majesty shall have cause to suspect are disaffected to your Person and Government.

"And as we doubt not but by the Blessing of God, upon the Continuance of Your Majesty's Care, your Enemies will be put to Confusion, so we readily embrace this Opportunity to shew to Your Majesty and the whole World, that no Attempts of this kind shall deter us from supporting Your Majesty in a vigorous Prosecution of the present War against France, till the Monarchy of Spain be restored to the House of Austria, and Your Majesty have the Glory to compleat the Recovery of the Liberties of Europe.

To which the Queen replied :

"My Lords, and Gentlemen,

"**I** Have such entire Dependence on the Providence of God, and so much Trust in the faithful Services of my good Subjects, that I hope this Attempt will prove Dangerous only to those who undertake it.

"I am extremely Sensible of your Concern and Affection for me and my Government, and shall have a very particular Regard to the Advice you give Me upon this Occasion.

"I am also very well pleased with the Justice you have done the States General, in taking Notice of their timely Care for our Safety, and their Readiness to give us all possible Assistance.

"The firm Resolutions which you Express upon all Occasions, of Supporting me in bringing this War to a Safe and Happy Conclusion, as it is most essentially obliging to me, so I assure my self it will mightily Dishearten our Common Enemies, and give the greatest Encouragement and Advantage to our Allies."

The Commons likewise ordered a Bill to be brought in, to empower her Majesty to secure and detain such Persons as her

Majesty should suspect were Conspiring against her Person and Government. And pursuant to the Parliaments Desire in their Address, a Proclamation was Issued, declaring the Chevalier and all his Accomplices, Adherents, and Abettors to be Traitors and Rebels. Strictly Charging all Papist Recusants, to repair to their Places of Abode, and not remove from thence above the Distance of Five Miles ; and also to depart out of the Cities of London and Westminster, and from all Places within Ten Miles distance of the same.

And here it is certain, that the Catholicks in England and Scotland in many Places were great Sufferers thro' this Expedition : Who tho' they are by Principle obliged to wish the Chevalier well, yet it is thought that many of them were not over warm in this Affair, as believing if it was Unsuccessful, it would be a means of laying them under fresh Hardships.

A Bill was likewise actually brought in, and ready to pass, wherein there was a Clause, for discharging Vassals from their Allegiance to their Superiors, the Leaders or Chieftains of Clans, in case they resisted them that took part with the Chevalier. Besides the former united Address of the Lords and Commons, there were two other presented on the 13th of March, in Answer to Her Majesty's Speech of the 10th, wherein were contained very warm Expressions against the Chevalier and his Adherents.

Upon the first Notice of the French Armament at Dunkirk, Major General Cadogan had repaired to Brussels, and Concerted with Monsieur de Auverquerque, the March of the British Forces to be Shipped of for Great Britain, and how to supply their Room in their several Garrisons. From Brussels the Major General went to Ghent, and having Conferred with General Lumly the Governor of that Place, and Commander in Chief of the British Troops, Orders were given to Ten Battalions to hold themselves in a readiness to March at an Hour's Warning. This done, that General repaired to Ostend, to forward the Preparations which were making there for the Embarking of those Regiments, as soon as there should be certain Advice, that the Twelve French Battallions that were to attend the Chevalier in his intended Expedition were actually Embarked. On the other Hand, the Admiralty of Great Britain fitted out a Fleet with such incredible Diligence and Expedition, that appearing in sight of Dunkirk before it could have been expected, a Stop was put to the Embarkation of the Troops, and frequent Expresses Dispatched

to Paris for new Orders. The Count de Fourbin who commanded the Squadron, having represented to the French King, That he might indeed get out of Dunkirk Harbour, and perhaps Land the Troops, but that he could not be answerable for his Majesty's Ships. Notwithstanding which, he received positive Instructions to Re-Imbark the Troops, and put to Sea with the first fair Wind. In the mean time, to cover the Reason of Dis-imbarking the Troops, it was given out that the Chevalier was indisposed of the Measles, attended with an Ague ; but the last Orders coming, that pretence vanished. And Count de Fourbin having received Advice that the British Fleet, forced from their Station by the high Winds, was seen off the coast of Bretany, they began to Re-imbark the Troops, and the Wind turning fair on the 17th of March, they laid hold of that Opportunity, and sailed out of Flemish Road ; but the Wind veering towards Night, forced them to anchor again in Newport Pits, where they continued till the 19th, and then sailed directly for Scotland.

In the mean time the British Fleet, under Sir George Bing, which was considerably reinforced, returning to their Station off Graveling, the next day received notice that the French Fleet was sailed, when leaving Admiral Baker with a strong Squadron, to convoy the Troops, they sailed directly after to Scotland. Besides Ten Battalions embarked at Ostend, a considerable Reinforcement was sent from England toward Scotland, consisting of Two Troops of Guards, the Duke of Northumberland's Regiment of Horse, a Squadron of Horse Grenadiers, Two Regiments of Dragoons, One Detachment of 16 Men per Company out of the Foot Guards, besides several Regiments of Foot ; whom the Earl of Leven, before dispatched to Edinburgh, was to command.

On board the French Ships there was 10 Battalions (besides some Troops that were to follow them) with sufficient Stores, and 400 Non-commissioned Officers, for the raising of more Forces : The whole commanded by Count de Gace,\* a Mareschal of France. The Chevalier himself was on board the Mars, with the said Mareschal de Gace, the Duke of Perth, the Lord Middleton, the Lord Galmoy ; and other Officers, and Persons of Distinction. Notwithstanding the Design was given out to be on Scotland in general, yet the Castle of Edinburgh was the particular Place aimed at, the Plan of which had been laid before the Council at Versailles, where the Design was unanimously approved.

---

\* *Sic.* It should be *de Grace*.

In Scotland at this time they were in the greatest Confusion ; those who were Friends to the Chevalier, and wished well to the Expedition, were under various Apprehensions, and not without Fears of being seized and imprisoned, as it happened to a great many; others were in as great Pain, not only from their Apprehensions of the French Fleet, which was to invade them, but likewise of the Chevalier's Friends within, whom they expected to rise in arms in many Places of the Kingdom, which Fleet appeared on the Coast, having reached the Frith of Edinburgh the 23rd of March (N. S.) in the Morning.

Upon Sight whereof the Country was in an alarm. At Edinburgh the Magistrates assembled the Corporations, to know what assistance they could expect from them in defending themselves, and keeping the Peace of the City? Upon which it was resolved that the Freemen should keep guard by turns in their respective Halls, and be ready upon the first Notice of any Disorder.

On the other hand great Diligence was used in observing and securing several Persons, suspected either of holding correspondence with the Chevalier, or at least being inclined to favour his Design ; amongst whom were the Dukes of Hamilton, Athol, and Gordon, and many other Persons of Note. As to the French Fleet, tho' they had been on the Coast a whole Day and Night, yet no body came off to them, and the English followed them so close, as wholly disappointed their Landing, and obliged them to steer out of the Frith, where they were at anchor, and to make use of the Favor of the Night and a small Breeze, to further their Escape. Of which the following Account was given by the Count de Gace, otherwise called the Mareschal de Mantignon, to M. Chamillard.

“SIR,

“I Had the Honor to acquaint you with our Embarkation at Dunkirk, the 17th past, and you shall see by the following Journal what has happened since till our Return.

“The 17th of March, at 4 in the Afternoon, the Chevalier de Fourbin set sail with the Fleet ; but about 10 in the Evening the Wind proving contrary, we were obliged to cast Anchor in the Downs of Newport, where we were detained the 18th and 19th. The *Proteus*, on board of which were 400 Landmen, the *Guerrier* (or *Warrior*) and the *Barrentin* with 200 Men each, were obliged by the

high Winds, to put back into Dunkirk. The same day (19th) at Ten in the Evening, the Wind having chopped about, we set sail again, and having pursued our course the 20th, 21st, and 22d, with a strong Gale, we made the Frith of Edinburgh the 23d in the Morning, and in the Evening, cast anchor at the Mouth of it. The 24th in the Morning, as we made ready to enter the Frith, we discovered a great Number of Ships which we soon found to be the Enemies Squadron, to the Number of Twenty Eight Sail, who we Judged to be the same that appeared off Dunkirk, whereupon Monsieur de Fourbin resolved to bear off by the Favour of a Land Breeze, which very luckily carried us from the Enemy ; The latter pursuing us very close all that Day (24) and four of their best Sailors being come up with our Sternmost Ships, the Enemy's foremost Ship attacked at four in the Afternoon, the *August* with whom she Exchanged some Shot, for some time after the English bore down upon the *Salisbury*, which was more a Stern, and Endeavoured to put her between herself and another English Ship that was coming up to her. The Fight between those two Ships and some others on both sides lasted till Night, during which time, the *Salisbury* made a great Fire with their small Arms.

"Our Fleet being dispersed, and the Enemy near us, Monsieur de Fourbin steered false during the Night, which had a good Effect, for the next Day (the 25th) we found ourselves with twenty Sail at a considerable Distance from the Enemy, whereupon I Discoursed Monsieur Fourbin, to know of him, whether having missed our Landing in the Frith of Edinburgh we might not attempt it in another Place ; He proposed to me Inverness, which is a very remote Part in the North of Scotland, and we went immediately to the (pretended) King of England, who Entertained the Motion with Joy, and told us, 'We ought to Concert together the Measures that were to be taken, and he would pursue our Resolutions.'

"The Question now was to get Pilots to Conduct us thither, and give us the necessary Notice : But there being none in our Squadron that was acquainted with that Port, Monsieur de Fourbin detached a Frigate, with the Sieurs Caron and Bouyn, to fetch some from the Cape of Buccaness. All that Day (25) we steered with a pretty favourable Wind towards the North of Scotland, but about Eleven at Night, there arose a strong contrary Wind, which having continued the next Day with Violence, Monsieur de Fourbin told me, it was high time to acquaint the (pretended) King with the Inconvenience

of pursuing our Course, which were the inevitable Dispersion of the Fleet, the Danger the Ships that should be separated would be in, either of falling into the Enemies Hands, or of Perishing on the Coast, if they were driven thither, and even the want of Provisions.

“The impossibility Sieurs Caron and Bouyn found of approaching the Shoar, by reason of the stormy Weather, and consequently of bringing Pilots to Guide us ; the Uneasiness and Danger of Landing in a Port we were Strangers to, where the Enemy might come up again with us, together with other Hazards and Difficulties, having been represented to the (pretended) King by Monsieur de Fourbin, in the presence of the Duke of Perth, my Lord Middleton, Mr. Hamilton, my Lord Galmay, and Messieurs de Beauharnois and d’Andrezel, the (pretended) King of England, with the unanimous Advice of all those Gentlemen resolved to return to Dunkirk, where we could not arrive before this Day, by the reason of the Calms and contrary Winds.

I am, &c.

The following Letter was likewise wrote from Dunkirk,  
by an Officer of Distinction to his Friend at Paris.

Dunkirk, April 12. N.S., 1707.

“**WE** were in such a Hurry on our Expedition to Scotland, the Design being communicated to none but our Prince’s Privy Council till we were on our March, that I neither could not durst say anything of it, but now we are returned I believe it won’t be disagreeable to you to know the Truth of the Matter.

“When the Prince set Sail, three Battallions and some Provisions that could not be got ready to go with him, were ordered to follow him to Leith Road, which accordingly we did four Days after, in Seven Privateers, Commanded by Monsieur Zoust, and got to Leith Road without meeting any Ships in our Passage. We were much surprised to find no Ships at our Place of Rendezvous, and therefore put out Dutch Colours, and went close in with the Town of Leith, to get Intelligence. A Boat came of to us with two Pilots, who told us, that the French Fleet had not been there, but that Advice was come from the English Fleet, which lay off the Frith Mouth, that the People on Shoar took our Ships to be Dutch East-India Men, that they heard had been upon the Coast.



"We kept the Pilots on Board, and made all the haste we could out of the Firth, keeping close under the South Shoar, to cover us from the sight of the English, whom we saw off Fifeness, about three Leagues to the Northward of us, steering our Course North-East, we came up within two Days with the Body of the French Fleet, all scattered, and resolving homeward. I went on board the *Mars*, where I was told the Prince and Privy Council were, to receive further Orders, and to give an Account of my Expedition, and there heard of their Escape by the luckiest Accident in the World: They had got into the Firth on Friday Night, having heard nothing of the English Fleet, and anchored off Pittenweim and Creil, with Design to Land near Leith in the Morning, when in the Night they heard the English Fleet fire the Signal for their Ships to come to an Anchor. Monsieur Fourbin knowing the meaning of it, immediately sent a Boat on Board of every Ship in his Squadron, ordering them to put out their Lights, and to Sail one by one out of the Firth, and steer a North-East Course till they should come off the town of St. Andrew's, which accordingly they did, but the Wind and tide being against them, the English made them in the Morning and pursued them. In the Pursuit, which lasted three Days, they lost the *Salisbury*, the *Blackwall*, foundered since at Sea, the *Deal*, *Castle*, *Sun*, and *Squirrel* we are afraid are lost on the Coast of Holland, and the *Triumph*, which we thought also lost, is got in, but much shattered. On Thursday, put just off of Zealand, our small Squadron fell in with four English third Rates, which frightened us out of our Wits, for we were in so dismal a Condition, that we could not make any Defence, and we must have surrendered; but they knowing nothing of our Circumstances bore away from us, and we got that Afternoon into Dunkirk Road, and next Day our Prince arrived with the rest in so miserable a Condition all of us, that the Soldiers when they crept on Shoar, looked more like Rats than Men. The Prince suffered much in his Health, and what with Fatigue and Chagrin looked very thin, but to put a good Face on the Matter, Dressed himself very fine, in an Embroidered Suit, and a blue Feather in his Hat; when he went ashore, where he was received by abundance of Ladies in their Coaches, with Looks that put me in Mind of an English Funeral. When he went off the Noise was all over, *Long live the King*; but at our return shrugging of Shoulders and shaking of Heads gave a dismal Welcome. Poor Clermont and his Brother are taken in the *Salisbury*, and my Lord Dumbarton is either with them or lost in the

*Blackwall.* General Dorington, Gilmoy, and some of our Bottle Friends, are now very ill at Mr. Goff's House here, the Macdonalds &c. are gone up to St. Germans with the Prince."

"I need not tell you that the Foundation of our whole Design was the Castle of Edinburgh, which miscarrying by the Arrival of the English Fleet, the Prince's Council did not think fit to land any where else. The Plan of this Castle was laid before a Council of General Officers at Versailles, and it was unanimously concluded, that with the Troops, Mortars, and Bombs, which we carried it could not hold above 3 Days. We designed to have made a False Attack at the Postern Gate, while 3 Battallions should enter the Outworks that front the City, and lodge under their Half Moon, which would oblige them the next day to surrender. By the Taking of this Castle we should have had the Regalia; and I am told, Two Protestant Archbishops would have crowned the Prince in the High Church. The Equivalent from England being also in this Castle, would have been a great supply to us for raising of Men. We have above 400 Officers with us for that Purpose, all Pretty Fellows, that have served in the Wars of Italy and Spain, and above 100 Chests of Money. Some were for Landing in Murray Firth, if it had only been to refresh our Troops, but you know how nicely the French King's Orders are be obeyed, and how little Power he gives of his Troops to any Ally, but always secret ones to his own Generals. We Scots and Irish might have landed, but the French were restrained to Musselburgh and Leith, or no where."

To these Accounts, we shall on the other hand subjoin, those that were written by Sir George Bing, from on board the *Medway*, the 13th and 15th of March, O. S. The first whereof is as follows. "According to the Opinion we had framed when we left the Station of Dunkirk, it has proved that the Enemy was designed for Edinburgh. This Morning we saw the French Fleet in the Mouth of the Firth, off of which Place we anchored the Last Night, and sent a Boat ashore to the Isle of May, from whence we had an account that the French came to an Anchor yesterday in the Afternoon: They sent one Ship up into Leith Road, which had a Flag at the Main Topmast Head: They reported it a Blue one, but we are rather of opinion that it is the Standard. The People of the Island say, that by the time that Ship could get up before the Town, they heard several Guns fire, which were in the Manner of a Salute. The Ship that

went up yesterday, came down this Morning, and is now within Two Leagues of us: She appears to be a Ship of 60 Guns, but has now no Flag on board. We saw this Morning, when they weighed, a Flag at the Main Top-Mast Head on board of one of their Ships. They stand from us, and we after them with all the sail we can."

The Second Letter was as follows, "We chased the Enemy to the Northward of Buchaness, sometimes with reasonable Hopes of coming up with them. The *Dover* and *Ludlow Castle* being the only Clean-Sailing Ships we had: They were the first which came up with part of the Enemy's Squadron, passing by some of the Smaller to engage some of the larger Ships, and stop them till they should be relieved. They attacked 2 or 3 of their Ships, amongst which was the *Salisbury*: They did not part with them till more of our Ships arrived, but worked their Ships in a handsome manner, to cut them off from the rest of the Fleet; but in the Darkness of the Night they all got out of our Sight, except the *Salisbury*, who falling in amongst our Headmost Ships, the *Leopard* entered Men on board her. We were informed by the Officers who were taken, that there were 12 Battallions on board their Squadron, commanded by the Count de Gace, a Marshal of France, the pretended Prince of Wales, Lord Middleton, Lord Perth, the Macdonalds, Trevanion, and several other Officers and Gentlemen on board the *Mars*, in which also was Monsieur Fourbin, who commanded the Squadron. The Number and Strength of their Ships are very near the Account we lately received from Dunkirk, nor were they joined by the Brest Men of War: And they further assure us that the Ships our out Scouts saw off of Calais, were Privateers and their Prizes going into Dunkirk. The Morning after this Chase we saw but 18 of the Enemies Ships as far as we could perceive them from the Mast-head, in the ENE of us. Having no prospect of coming up with them, we lay off and on Buccaness all day yesterday, to gather all our Ships together; and this day it blowing hard at NE with a Great Sea, judging the Enemy could not seize the Shore to make any attempt, we bore up for this Place, which was thought most reasonable, not only to secure, but to give Countenance and Spirit to Her Majesty's Faithful Subjects, and discourage those that could have Thoughts of being our Enemies."

There were taken on board the *Salisbury*, the Lords Griffin and Clermont, Colonel of a Regiment, and Son to the Earl of Middleton,

with Mr. Middleton his Brother, and Colonel Francis Wauchup ; together with the Marquiss de Levy, a French Lieutenant General, one aid de Camp, one Colonel, two Lieutenant Colonels, five Captains, two French Lieutenants, Fifteen Irish Lieutenants, ten Serjeants, ten Corporals, ten Lanspessades, with M. de Segent, Commissary of War ; and about 180 Soldiers : Besides the Ships Company of about 300 Men, Officers included. As for the four first mentioned, as well as the fifteen Irish Lieutenants, being Subjects of Great Britain, they were brought to London, and Committed, the former to the Tower, and latter to Newgate. Many State Prisoners were likewise brought from Edinburgh to London, who had been confined in the Castle of Edinburgh, and that were admitted to Bail, except such against whom there was any particular Information, which I think was very few ; not one Person having suffered on this Account. The Lord Griffin indeed was sentenced upon a former Outlawry for High Treason, a Rule of Court was made out for his Execution, and a Warrant passed for fulfilling the same, but he was reprieved the Night before the Sentence should have been Executed ; and in the End died in the Tower on the 10th of November, 1710. And now Sir George Bing having continued in Leith Road, till he had Intelligence the French Fleet was returned to Dunkirk, he returned to the Downs, and thus ended this memorable Expedition, which had put Britain into a thousand Hopes and Fears. It is therefore time to pursue the Chevalier, who was by this time returned to France.

The Gentleman who wrote one of the foregoing Letters from Dunkirk, seems to be mistaken, when he says the Chevalier returned to St. Germans, for he went from Dunkirk to St. Omers, where he spent some time among the English Gentlemen there, who in the Welcome they gave him, could not but mix with sad and dejected Looks, some Sighs and affectionate Expressions of Sorrow, for the unfortunate Disappointment he had met with : But he had learned so much of the Hero, as to shew a perfect Unconcernedness at what they said, and with a becoming Serenity, very rare in one so young, turned the Discourse to other things.

The Armies being now ready to take the Field in Flanders, he besought the French King that he might serve among his Troops there, then Commanded by the Dukes of Burgundy and Vendosme which the King not only complied with, but permitted the Duke of Berry to accompany him. They arrived in the Army some Days

before the Battle of Audenarde, in which the Chevalier was present during the whole Action, and did the Duty of Aid de Camp to the Duke of Burgundy, whom he constantly attended during the heat of the Day. Not only the *Paris Gazette*, and other French News Papers, gave large Accounts of the intrepid Behaviour of the young Princes, but Officers who were on the Spot could not restrain speaking of it in their Letters, tho' they were writ in a very great Hurry and Perplexity; Which because they are not Foreign to the Subject of these Memoirs; as well as that they give a Concise Account of the Action, it would seem a Neglect to overlook them.

A Letter written by a French Officer the Day after the  
Battle of Audenarde.

“ I Can only send you the unwelcome Relation of the Particulars of the Battle, which happened yesterday about two in the Afternoon near Audenarde. 'Twill prove a great Blow to France; for without Exaggerating the Matter, we had above 10000 Men killed, wounded, or taken. The Action was very ill managed on our side; for instead of attacking the Enemy when they began to pass the Schelde near Audenarde at Eleven in the Morning, we let them come over the River quietly, which they would not have adventured to do, had we in any tolerable Manner offered to dispute their Passage; but seeing us stand still, they were encouraged to prosecute their first Design, and began to pass over two Bridges which they had laid. As fast as their Horse and Foot came over, they ranged themselves in Order of Battle against us, and while our Generals were in Suspense, what Resolutions to take, whether to venture an Engagement or not, the Enemy's Army continued coming over the River, and soon possessed themselves of some Villages and Hedges; so that at last our Generals were compelled to endeavour to dislodge them. Accordingly, our Infantry advanced, and the Ground was disputed two or three Hours, with a terrible Fire and great Obstinacy on both sides; but our Foot being tired with Charging the Enemy five or six times, and disheartened to see themselves not supported by our Horse (who could not act because the Ground was so full of Inclosures) and pressed hard by the Enemy, were at length forced to retire, and quit the Ground to them. We Dragoons were obliged to endure the continual Fire of the Enemies Foot and Cannon, without daring to stir, because we were on the Right of the King's Household, who

suffered as much as we. Toward the Evening, we were fallen upon by a great Number of the Enemy's Horse, to hinder us from succouring the rest, who were put to the Rout; and of Seven Regiments of Dragoons, we lost above half: At last, we saw no other Exedient, but to force our way thro' the Enemy; but first we sent to see whether we could be assisted in that Design by any of our Forces: In the mean time Night came on apace, and we were informed that the King's Household (whose Retreat was covered in some measure by us) were at too great a Distance. Things standing thus, our Resolution of breaking thro' the Enemy sunk, and some of the Enemy's Adjutants summoning us to yield our selves Prisoners of War, we submitted to it, seeing no other way to save our Lives. At least Forty of our Regiments are reduced to a wretched Condition, the greatest part of them being killed or taken, so that it will be long before they can be Re-established. Of four Regiments of the King's Household, at least half were taken Prisoners, and among them are several Persons of Note. The Chevalier de Longville, and 15 other Officers were mortally wounded, and two of them are since dead. The Regiments of Psiffer and Villars are quite ruined, and almost all their Officers are taken, with all their Baggage, &c.

"The Dukes of Burgundy, Berry, and the Chevalier de St. George, staid at the Head of the Household during the whole Action, and Retreated with them to Ghent, where we are just now told they are safe arrived. I cannot pretend to tell you yet what the Result of this Battle will be, or how our Generals will square their Motions, which we are like to have no farther Share in this Campaign."

"Yours,"

Another Letter had in it this Expression.

"That there was not wanting those, who advised the Princes to set out Post for Ipres, but this they generously refused, and staid at the Head of the Troops till the very last." And the Duke de Vendosme in his Letter to the King of France, assured him, "That the Chevalier de St. George, and the Duke de Berry, were very forward during the Battle."

The next Summer, the Chevalier made the Campaign under the Marshal de Villars, who had a particular Charge of him, and with whom during the whole time of continuing in the Field, he

constantly accompanied on all Duties, and rode with him continually when he visited the Lines, or Reconnoitred the Enemy, and in the Battle of Mons; or Blaregnies, was present with him in the Heat of all the Action, as we may find by the Marshal de Boufflers Account thereof to the King, where he has these Words, in the Conclusion of his Letter, applied to the Behaviour of those that Distinguished themselves in the Battle.

“ I Cannot now give your Majesty any particulars of this Action, but will endeavor to send them to morrow, or next day : I can assure Your Majesty that all the General Officers did their Duty perfectly well, and with the greatest Bravery and Skill; but Monsieur d’Artagnan, who commanded the Right of the Foot distinguished himself in a particular manner, as well by his Valor as by his good Orders : He had 3 Horses killed under him, and received 4 Blows on his Cuirass : The D. de Guiche, who was also on the Right, a little forwarder than M. D’Artagnan, behaved himself with all possible Skill and Bravery, and received a Musket Shot in his Leg : The Marquis Damfort and M. de la Frazelliere, who were also on the Right, and in M. d’Artagnan’s Rear, shewed the same Valor and Capacity : M. de Gassion, who commanded the Right Wing of Horse, did Wonders at the Head of your Majesty’s Household, and shewed on this Occasion his Courage and Ability, having pushed and defeated more than 2 or 3 of the Enemies Lines Sword in Hand. The Gendarmes, Light Horse, Musqueteers, and Horse Grenadiers also did wonders : The P. de Rohan, and M. de Vidame did all that could be expected from Persons of the greatest Valor : The Gendarmarie did Wonders also, and the Marquis de la Valiere was everywhere, and charged with all possible Bravery at all the different Charges. The Cavalry behaved themselves very well, and all the Troops, as well as the Foot, stood with incredible Firmness one of the briskest Cannonades that ever was : All the Foot did Wonders and distinguished them.

“ The Chevalier de St. George behaved himself, during the whole Action, with all possible Bravery and Vivacity. I say nothing of Your Majesty’s Left, by reason I was not there, but I know that all the General Officers, and all the Troops, animated by the Mareschal de Villar’s Presence and Example, behaved themselves with all possible Valor.”

Upon his Return from this Campaign, the Chevalier was complimented by the Principal of the Court of France ; for the Mareschal de Villars had likewise given such an account, as served to heighten the public Opinion of him.

I am now, for want of more Room, drawing to a Conclusion of these Memoirs. And it may be well presumed there are many things that will not bear mentioning, with regard to the Strictness of Caution we are now tied up to. As there is no Offence designed, so I cannot but suppose there will be none taken. Were he of no other Consideration but his adding a Clause (and perhaps one of the most considerable) in the whole Articles in this memorable Treaty of Peace, it seems sufficient to warrant an Undertaking of this nature, and to record a NAME in some collected manner, that is; and indeed but barely is, scattered and interspersed thro' so many Scraps of History. I shall only further remember the Reader, that Last Year he made a tour thro' the Eastern Parts of France, while at the same time there was a great Armament to Toulon and Brest ; which amused a considerable part of Europe, and gave foundation to a Surmise, that some Expedition was to be made in his Favor.

He had before had an interview with the French King, who in a very solemn manner, tho' not without Impressions of Concern, told him, that he found himself under the necessity of giving Peace to his People ; and that some Overtures had passed which gave him hopes of obtaining that long desired End : He proposed therefore to him many Places for his Retreat, which he was assured must attend the Issue of the Affair: But remembered to him what he had formerly said on this Subject, for which he assured him he should never alter.

He visited most of the Principal Towns of that Part of France, and likewise the Army of the Duke de Berwick : But as there was a good Space of Time, in which the Public News gave no account of his Journey, it confirms me in the Opinion of what I have been confidently told ; That he then visited the Place of his Retreat, when he quits the Realms of France, and had a private interview with a certain Prince that is to receive him.

The beginning of April last, a few Days after his (supposed) Sister, he was visited with the Small Pox, and in great Danger of Death, but Providence designed to lengthen a LIFE, tho' meanly treated in History, that has a very large share in the most momentous Affairs that relate to this part of Europe, and would yet be of more Regard were not France reduced to the Necessity of Submitting, that the



Preservation of their National Religion in Britain, is the most just and reasonable part of their Government ; and which to Subvert, will not only be the most difficult thing in Nature, but always preferred above the Concern for their Lives and Safety.

I Conclude all with an Account of the Death and Character of the Princess Louisa Maria Teresa, Daughter of King James II. who died of the Small Pox at St. Germain's, the 18th of April, 1712. as it was said to be sent in a Letter from a Nobleman of France, to his Correspondent at Utrecht.

“My Lord,

“ I Send you by these, the sad and deplorable News of the much lamented Death of the Princess Royal of England, who died of the Small-Pox, the 18th of this Month, at St. Germain's, who as she was one of the greatest Ornaments of that afflicted Court, so she was the Admiration of all Europe ; never Princess was so universally regretted. Her Death has filled all France with Sighs, Groans, and Tears. She was a Princess of a majestic Mien and Port ; every Motion spoke Grandeur, every Action was easy and without any Affectation or Meanness, and proclaimed her a heroine descended from the long Race of so many Paternal and Maternal Heroes ; Majesty sat enthroned on her Forehead, and her curious large black Eyes struck all that had the honor to approach her, with Awe and Reverence ; but all her External Glories, though the greatest of her Sex, were nothing to her Internal, and she seems to have established the Opinion of Plato, who asserts, “ That the Soul frames its own Habitation, and that beautiful Souls make to themselves beautiful Bodies.” She had a great deal of pleasant Wit, joined with an equal Solidity of Judgment ; she was Devout, without the Defects that young Aspirers to Piety are sometimes incident to ; and though she complied with the Diversions of the Court, her greatest Pleasure was in pious Retirement. She was very affable, and of a sweet mild Temper, full of Pity and Compassion, which is the distinguishing Character of the Royal Family of the Stuarts. To sum up all in a few Words, she was a dutiful and obedient Daughter, an affectionate Sister, tenderly loving and beloved by the Hero her Brother. On both their Countenances were divinely mingled the noble Features and Lineaments of the Stuarts and the D'Este's, and Beauty triumphed over both, with this only Difference, That in him it was

more Strong and Masculine as becoming his Sex, in her more Soft and Tender as more suiting with hers ; in both, excellent and alike. She was four Years younger, as if designed by Providence to confute the black Calumny of her Brother's Birth, and her Royal Mother's Inability of having Children. To be short, in her the Distressed have lost a certain Comforter, her Servants an excellent Mistress, and the World one of its most precious Gems. She died expressing the warmest Sentiments of Piety, and the most perfect Resignation, uttering often her Royal Father's dying Words and Ejaculations, as Inheritrix of his Piety. The great Discomposure of my Mind on this sad Occasion, and my gushing Tears hinder me to add any more. Adieu."

**F i n i s .**

"Inter Folia Fructus."

A FAITHFUL  
M E M O R I A L  
OF THAT  
REMARKABLE MEETING

OF  
Many Officers of the Army in England,  
at Windsor Castle, in the Year 1648.

1659.

~~~~~  
"HISTORY IS BUT THE UNROLLED SCROLL OF PROPHECY."

~~~~~  
—JAMES A. GARFIELD

PRIVATELY PRINTED  
FOR THE CLARENDON HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

—  
1885.

*This edition is limited to 120 large paper and 400 small paper copies,  
for Subscribers only.*

A FAITHFUL  
M E M O R I A L  
OF THAT  
REMARKABLE MEETING

OF  
Many Officers of the Army in England,  
at Windsor Castle, in the Year 1648.

AS ALSO,  
A DISCOVERY

OF THE  
Great goodness of God, in his gracious meeting of them, hearing and answering their suit or supplications, while they were yet speaking to him.

ALL  
Which is humbly presented, as a precious Patern and Prefident unto the Officers and Souldiers of the said Army (or elsewhere) who are or shall be found in the like path, of following the Lord in this evil day; searching and trying their waies, in order to a through Return and Reformation.

---

By William Allen, late Adjutant-General  
of the Army in Ireland.

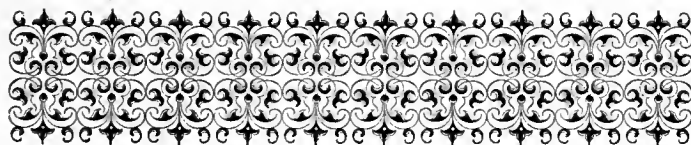
---

*Turn you at my reproof: behold I will pour out my wrath upon you, I will make known my words unto you.*

---

LONDON,  
Sold by Strivewel Chapman, at the Crown in Popes-head Alley. 1659.





To Lieutenant-General Fleetwood, and other the Officers of the Armies in England, Scotland, and Ireland, especially to such of them, who in the fence of the dangers of the day, have been of late (as is said) betaking themselves to that most necessary duty of solemn Addresses, and fervent supplications to the Lord, humbling their souls before him, in the fence of their own and others abominations abounding in this day; with unfeigned desire and endeavour to find out, and forsake them accordingly; with all others in the Armies, that are or shall be found searching and trying their waies in order to return: The following Narrative is humbly tendered by a late member of them, and now a mourner for them; yet unfeignedly desiring their prosperity in the path of repentance.

**H**AVING understood, that you have of late been much conversant in seeking the Lord, in th's day of distress, and enquiring (as becomes you) into the causes of his displeasure against us (which seems to wax hot) all which if performed in a right fence, observing right rules and ends, may be of much use to help in time of need. Yet knowing the aptness of our own with others hearts to miscarry in such duties, and thereby miss of the desired success, by either setting up the stumbling-block of our iniquity before our eyes, or having any secret regard thereto in our hearts, the effect of which is to shut out Prayer; I held it my duty to contribute my mite to this work of weight, by presenting you with a president once famous

amongst us, by the success the Lord crown'd it with, and us in that path in a day of very great distress round about : and desire that so far as you shall see this practise here presented, with the method therein observed, to agree with the revealed will of God contained in the Scripture, relating to the duty of his people, in such a posture, that you will not be afraid to make it your pattern, since the Lord hath formerly born such a witness to it, and written such blessing upon it, as may well be set up as a Pillar of Remembrance in the midst of us, to his praise, as well as our direction to, and in like duties in future streights.

In the year 47. you may remember, we in the Army were engaged in actions of a very high nature, leading us to very untrodden paths, both in our contests with the then Parliament, as also conferences with the King ; in which great works wanting a spirit of faith, and the fear of the Lord, and also unduly surprized with the fear of man, which alwaies brings a snare ; we, to make haste, as we thought, out of such perplexities, measuring our way by a wisdom of our own, fell into Treaties with the King and his party ; which proved such a snare to us, and led into such labyrinths by the end of that year, that the very things we thought to avoid, by the means we used of our own devising, were all with many more of a far worse and more perplexing nature, brought back upon us, to the overwhelming our spirits, weakning our hands and hearts, filling us with divisions, confusions, tumults and every evil work, and thereby endangering the ruine of that blessed cause we had with such success been prospered in till this time : for now the King and his party, seeing us not answer their ends, began to provide for themselves, by a Treaty with the then Parliament, set on foot about the beginning of 48. The Parliament also was at the same time highly displeased with us, for what we had done, both as to the King and themselves ; the good people likewise, even our most faithful friends in the Nation, beholding our turning aside from the path of simplicity we had formerly walkt (and been blest and thereby much endeared to their hearts, began now to turn and withdraw their affections from us in this politick path in which we had stept, and walkt in, to our hurt, the year before. And as a farther fruit of the waies of our own backsliding hearts, we were also filled with a spirit of great jealousy and divisions among our selves, having left that wisdom of the word, that is first pure, and then peaceable, that we were now fit for little but to tear and rend one another, and thereby prepare our-selves, and



## The Meeting at Windsor.

the work in our hands, to be ruined by the common Enemy, as these that were ready to say, as many others of like spirit in this day, of the like sad occasions amongst us, Lo, this is the day we looked for. The King and his party prepare accordingly to ruine all, by suddain insurrections in most parts of the Nation, the *Scot* concurring with the same designs, comes in with a potent Army under Duke *Hamilton*. We in the Army in a low, weak, divided, perplexed condition in all respects, as aforesaid, some of us judging it a duty to lay down Arms, and quit our stations, putting ourselves into the capacities of private men, since what we had done, or was yet in our hearts to do, tending as we judged to the good of these poor Nations, was not accepted by them.

Some also encouraging themselves and us to such a thing, by urging for such a practice the example of our Lord Jesus, who when he had born an eminent Testimony, to the pleasure of his Father, in an active way, sealed to it at last by his sufferings; which was presented to us as our pattern for imitation.

Others of us were different minded, thinking something of another nature might be farther yet our duty, and therefore were by joynt advice, by a good hand of the Lord led to this result, *viz.* to go solemnly to search out (and humble our souls before the Lord in the fence of) our iniquities, which we were perswaded had provoked the Lord against us, to bring such sad perplexities upon us, as at that day, out of which we saw no way else to extricate our selves.

Accordingly we did agree to meet at *Windsore* Castle, about the beginning of 48. and there spent one day together in Prayer, inquiring into the causes of that sad dispensation. Coming to no farther result that day, but that it was still our duty to seek; and on the morrow we met again in the morning where many spake from the Word, and Prayed; and the then Lieutenant-General Cromwell did press very earnestly, on all there present, to a thorough consideration of our actions as an Army, as well as our waies particularly, as private Christians, to see if any iniquity could be found in them; and what it was, that if possible we might find out, and so remove the cause of such sad rebukes, as were upon us by reason of our iniquities, as we judged at that time. And the way more particularly the Lord led us to herein, was to look back, and consider what time it was that we could with joynt satisfaction, say to the best of our Judgements, the presence of the Lord was amongst us, and rebukes and judgements were not as then upon us. Which time the Lord led us joyntly to

find out and agree in ; and having done so, to proceed, as we then judged it our duty, to search into all our publick actions as a Army, afterwards duly weighing (as the Lord helpt us) each of them, with their Grounds, Rules, and Ends, as neer as we could ; and so concluded this second day with agreeing to meet again on the morrow : which we accordingly did, upon the same occasion, reassuming the consideration of our debates the day before, and reviewing our actions again ; by which means we were by a gracious hand of the Lord led to find out the very steps (as we were then all joyntly convince'd) by which we had departed from the Lord, and provoked him to depart from us ; which we found to be those cursed carnal conferences, our own wisdom, fears, and want of faith, had prompted us the year before, to entertain with the King and his party. And at this time, and on this occasion, did the then Major Goff (as I remember was his title) make use of that good word, *Prov. 1. 23, Turn you at my reproof, &c.* which (we having found out our sin) he urged as our duty from those words, and the Lord so accompanied by his Spirit, that it had a kindly effect, like a word of his, upon most of our hearts as were then present ; which begot in us great sence, shame, and loathing our selves for our iniquities, and justifying the Lord as righteous in his proceedings against us : and in this path the Lord led us not only to see our sin, but also our duty ; and this so unanimously set with weight upon each heart, that none was able hardly to speak a word to each other for bitter weeping, partly in the sence and shame of our iniquities of unbelief, base fear of men, and carnal consultations, (as the fear thereof) with our own wisdoms, and not with the word of the Lord, which only is a way of wisdom, strength and safety, and all besides it waies of snares : and yet were also helpt with fear and trembling, to rejoyce in the Lord, whose faithfulness and loving kindness we were made to see yet fail'd us not ; but remembre'd us still, even in our low estate, because his mercy endures for ever. Who no sooner brought us to his feet, acknowledging him in that way of his, *viz.* searching for, being ashamed of, and willing to turn from our iniquities, but he did direct our steps, and presently we were led, and helpt to a cleer agreement amongst our selves, not any dissenting, that it was the duty of our day, with the forces we had, to go out and fight against those potent enemies, which that year in all places appeared against us, with an humble confidence in the name of the Lord only, that we should destroy them ; also enabling us then, after serious seeking his face, to come

to a very cleer and joynt resolution on many grounds at large then debated amongst us, that it was our duty, if ever the Lord brought us back again in peace, to call *Charles Stewart*, that man of bloud, to an account, for that bloud he had shed, and mischief he had done, to his utmost, against the Lords cause and people in these poor Nations : and how the Lord led and prospered us in all our undertakings this year, in this way, cutting his work short in righteousness, making it a year of mercy equal, if not transcendant to any since these Wars began, and making it worthy of remembrance by every gracious soul, who was wise to observe the Lord and the operations of his hands, I wish may never be forgotten ; bringing us together again, from all parts shortly after, with admiration ; each ones heart as it were filled with the wonders beheld, and occasion given to all to say each to other, Lo, what hath God wrought ! the Kings Armies in all places broken, his strong holds most of them taken : he himself all that time treating with the then Parliament, and both of them desirous to conclude ; yet by an over-ruling Providence hindred, and the King so infatuated, as he stands disputing Punctilio's till he loses all, and himself with it, and is fetcht away from his place of Treaty to a Prison, in order to execution, which suddenly followed accordingly ; and all this done within less then three quarters of a year, even to astonishment of our selves, and other beholders both at home and abroad ; yea our very enemies then were made to say, God was amongst us of a truth, and therefore they could not stand against us.

But alas, who would have thought that so few years would have worn out the memory of such a not-to-be-forgotten mercy, or that any of those that then saw his works, and sang his praise, should so soon forget what their eyes had seen, as not to wait for his faithful counsel in future streights ! Yet behold, how some directly, and others consequentially are now saying, All these things were but the product of a potent politick partie flusht with success ; and others, though more modest and moderate, yet it's to be feared, in too eager a pursuit of falling in with, or fear of being hurt by what is uppermost, if not timely complying, at once in the lump adventure to cry up absolute obedience to the powers that are, though thereby they condemn themselves and others, as transgressors and rebels for opposing those that were ; together with the whole series of action made glorious by Gods appearances with us, beyond parallel of any late years : and thus doth the name and works of the Lord suffer (as Christ of old) between these two, who almost equally, though not

alike intentionally, rob the Lord of his glory, and give great occasion to the worst of our enemies the more to blaspheme.

This is the brief, yet true account of this matter, with the blessed effects of it, as a manifestation of the Lords inclination and disposition to poor returners; who is still the same, because he hath said, and will perform it, as in *Jer.* 29. 12, 13. *Then shall ye call upon me, and ye shall go and pray unto me, and I will hearken unto you. And ye shall seek me and finde me, when ye shall search for me with all your hearts.* And I have a little hope that this precious patern, thus presented, may not be without some use to you in this day, if the Lord lead your hearts rightly to consider it. That we are a poor broken, divided, intangled, bewildered people in our publick affairs; none but they that are very great strangers in our Israel can be ignorant: for who hath known and observed former daies, when the Candle of the Lord shin'd on Tabernacles, by the light of which we walkt thorough darkness, and shall compare those daies with these four or five years past, can look upon them without a heart deeply affected, to think what once we were (when we followed the Lord, though in a land that was not sown, when we were a more plain simple-hearted people, yet prospered by the Lord to the terrour of enemies abroad and at home, through an eminent presence of God with us) and what now we are, since we have turned aside into the carnal, empty, formal shews of the Nations, admiring, (and acting by) their Policies, and saying a confederacy with them, fearing their fear, and not sanctifying the Lord in a way of believing: how are we become the tail, and not the head, a hissing, yea, a scorn to the basest of Nations! what rebukes at Sea, at Land! what disappointments of enterprizes! what stroaks on many formerly eminent publick instruments! what impoverishing of those poor Nations, by decay of Trade in all parts, to the ruine of many! what sore visitations, and of long continuance on the Nations throughout, by deaths, and lingering pining diseases! Yea, what heart-dividings are amongst those that have been as one stick together, used in the hand of the Lord, in his works of wonder in the midst of us, and thereby endangering the whole interest we have fought for, into the hands of such as are known enemies, or at best have been but faint friends to it and us, in daies of distress? And are not all these things worth considering and enquiring into, by every gracious heart, with the causes of them? for sure the Lord afflicts not without cause, nor grieves not the sons of men willingly.

And would you inquire aright, pursue the method laid down in the

Cafe presented; inquire when could you with joynt satisfaction, say, At such a time the presence of the Lord was with you; and these fore hands of displeasure that have of late years attended you, were not upon you, nor works in your hands as now. And if you can but find that, let me advise and beseech you, as you tender the delivery of your own souls, and good of these Nations, weigh action by action since, and see where you have gone out of that prosperous path you were formerly in, and fear not to look into any action you are, or may be concerned to look into, in which you think evil may be at the bottom; for that remaining, will cause greater shakings then the most strict enquiry you make can do: and consider what as an Army you have done, with the grounds of it, and what you have engaged before God, Angels and Men to do; and either, if it be your sin, make your repentance as publick as your evil hath been, and so clear your selves; or else up and be doing, whatever you judge your duty, in the face of whatever difficulties you meet with; and in that path doubt not of Gods being with you, while you are with him: but if you will neither pursue your duties in one respect or other, know of a certain, the Lord who is a jealous God, will not be mockt by any who is not stronger then he, but will be above men, and make them know, he will be so in those things in which they deal most proudly, and deliverance shall arise some other way, with sore rebuke to you, for your shameful neglects of duty in such a work of weight which you have been entrusted with, and must ere long be called to an account how you have discharged it.

Alas, may we not say, and shall we be afraid to say, We, our Rulers, Prophets, Armies, People, have sinn'd; yea, have grievously departed from the Lord, and help nor healing is not to be had, but in returning from what evil soever is in our hands or hearts? It is not Power, nor Policy nor Forraign confederacies; 'tis not Prayers, though frequent, or seemingly fervent, no, though attended with tears and confessions, without thorough forsakings, will be a path of safety for us, *Isa. 58.* No, the voice of the Lord is plain to Rulers, Armies, People, *Thus saith the Lord, Consider your waies: Why do we labour in the fire for very vanity?* Why is wisdom hid from the Prudent? Why do we sow much in prayers, tears, confessions, and hazardous undertakings at home and abroad, and bring in little, and what we get is as it were put into a bag with holes, and the Lord in a way of rebuke seems to blow upon it? is it not that we should consider our waies! Oh search and try, yea call in the help of God and good men in this, to

see if there be any way of iniquity in your hearts or hands, and clear your selves of it, with manifesting most indignation against it. And for your help herein, if it may be, let me humbly caution you to take heed of advising only with such that may be most pleasing to you; self-love is apt in such cases to blind much: yea, or with such only or chiefly, that are or may be under the influencing power of profitable employments, steer'd by the favours, or fear of the frowns of Rulers; but rather with such who have been persons of known integrity, and ancient constant friends to the good old cause of God, and their Country, in all its vicissitudes and lowest ebbs; not *Shimei*-like cursing and deserting in a day of distress, and changing their Languages when it tended to the change of their conditions, for outward advantage; but such as have not been pleased with their highest, most profitablest promotions and preferments, when they could not see the cause of God and their Country promoted also; and let not those names of *odium*, of dissatisfied, &c. (that they have been clothed with, the better to answer the evil designs of some) affright you in this matter: and if you dare thus pursue duty in this path of simplicity presented to you, without setting up the stumbling-block of any your iniquities before you, I am persuaded (not without many demonstrable grounds producible from the word) you will find it a path of peace, through the Lords blessing it; and you, in the sincere applying to it, will be directed and led to grounds more clearly laid, for an unanimous, vigorous prosecution of the old dying cause, by its best and truest friends, then hitherto you have found; or at least will find it effectual to the rescue of your own souls out of paths of danger, which for want of pondering according to the Word, you may be walking in to your great hurt. And therefore, let me beseech you in all sincerity, as you tender your own, and these poor Nations welfare, apply to it with speed. For your betaking your selves to any other courses, will prove fruitless as aforesaid; for the Lord hath smitten, and can only heal; and if ever he do, he will do it in this way, *Hof.* 5. If what I have proposed, prove any way advantageous to the ends for which it is offered, *viz.* to cause you to search, try, and turn from the evil of your ways; I have my end, and let the Lord have glory: but if this poor means, in much faithfulness and tenderness presented to you, be rejected or slighted by you; I shall, I hope, be enabled to mourn in secret for you before the Lord: and shall have this satisfaction, when I shall have come to lye down in the dust, which how soon it may be I know not, that I have in

some measure delivered my own soul, and endeavour'd the like for yours ; and shall earnestly entreat the Lord, that this poor word of warning amongst many others in this day presented to you, may not one day meet you, as a witness against you, for not regarding it : for I am well assured it shall live, speak, and have its fruit, when you and I shall cease to be.

*William Allen.*



## POSTSCRIPT.

*THIS Paper was sent to the Press about six weeks since, to have been made publick at that time ; but by an unexpected obstruction, hath hitherto been hindred: but hoping it may be yet of some use, is therefore now publisht.*

April 23, 1659.



"Inter Folia Fructus."

A

# DIALOGUE

BETWEEN A

**Whig and a Jacobite**

UPON THE SUBJECT OF THE LATE

REBELLION

AND THE EXECUTION OF THE REBEL  
LORDS, ETC.

1715-16.

~~~~~  
"HISTORY IS BUT THE UNROLLED SCROLL OF PROPHECY."

~~~~~  
—JAMES A. GARFIELD

PRIVATELY PRINTED  
FOR THE CLARENDON HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

—  
1885.

*This edition is limited to 120 large paper and 400 small paper copies,  
for Subscribers only.*

A  
D I A L O G U E  
B E T W E E N A  
W H I G A N D A J A C O B I T E  
Upon the Subject of the late  
R E B E L L I O N  
And the EXECUTION of the  
Rebel-Lords, &c.  
OCCASION'D by  
The Phœnomeon in the Skie, March 6,  
1715-16.

---

*O Ye Hypocrites, ye can discern the Face of the Skie, but  
can you not discern the Signs of the Times? Mat. xvi. 3.*

---

LONDON:  
*Printed for J ROBERTS, in Warwick Lane:  
And Sold by the Book-sellers of London and  
Westminster. 1716.*

*Price Fourpence.*





A

## DIALOGUE

BETWEEN A

**Whig and a Jacobite, &c.**

---

*Jacobite.*—SO, Neighbour, now I hope you are convinc'd: Did you observe the *Appearances* in the Skie t'other Night? The very Heavens testify against you. I must own, I did not myself see what some fancy'd resembl'd Men, whether with Heads or without; but I saw what satisfy'd me that God Almighty is displeas'd with such Proceedings, I wish the Blood of these Gentlemen don't cry for Vengeance against us. *Deus avertat Omen!* Tho' after all, God, I hope, will plead the Cause of the Church.

*Whig.*—You wou'd amaze me, but that I know what Company you keep, and have heard enough of such Stuff as this of late; tho' I am sorry to hear One with grey Hairs on his Head talk so extravagantly: And I must tell you, after all your Noise and Din for the Church, as if you, and the Gentlemen of your Stamp, were the only Pillars of it, you take Methods to make yourselves and the Church too ridiculous. The Blood of these Gentlemen cry for Vengeance! Pray, Sir, what can you say for these Gentlemen? If you, or any *Jacobite* in *Britain*, can offer one Word of sober Reason to justify what they have done; to excuse, or so much as palliate the Crime of their Rebellion, I'll be willing to die to atone for the Blood that's shed, and to redeem what's behind.

J.—You are warm, Neighbour; I perceive I've rais'd the Old Man in you. I hoped when God himself had taken the Work into his own Hand, you wou'd have been more soft'ned; but it seems you are the same Man still, and 'tis like your Party will pursue the same Measures, notwithstanding Heaven so openly declares against—

W.—Against what? Speak out, if you have any Thing to say: If you mean, against the Ingratitude of a stupid Nation, that have enjoy'd the Blessings of the Reformed Religion, and a free Government so long, and yet know not how to value them; If you mean against the present unnatural, unreasonable, horrid Rebellion, there's some sense in it: But, I suppose, 'tis something else you point at; *You would insinuate some extraordinary Iniquity in the present Times, that the Foundations are out of course, the Government usurped, the Administration corrupt, and, as was said, of the Old World, the Land filled with Violence;* and that all this was legible in the Face of the Skie on Tuesday Night.

J. Ah Sir, such Reflections are but too well grounded, tho' I know you make light of them.

W. You seem to express yourself with an Air of Concern, as if you was in earnest; and tho' I've very little Hopes of removing the obstinate Prejudices you have imbibed, yet having found you a Person of good Nature, and in other Matters not unpersuadable, I shall be willing to talk a little with you, if you please, upon the Subject you have started; and all that I shall ask of you, as a *Postulatum*, is, That you will not renounce common Sense, deny palpable Matter of Fact, and evident Reason. I shall fall directly upon the Point in Hand, and desire we may use as few Words needlessly as possible, because I have but a little Time to spend with you.

1.) Don't you think that Rebellion is a very heinous Sin?

J.—Yes certainly, the Scripture says, *'Tis as the sin of Witchcraft.*

W. You alledge the hackney Text of your Party on such Occasions; but excuse me, if I say, 'tis impertinent, it speaks of King Saul's Sin against God, and not of Civil Rebellion; however, it shews the Sense you have of the Thing, and that is enough for my present Purpose.

(2.) Don't you allow, if King George be the rightful Sovereign of these Realms, that then the present Insurrection is Rebellion, and the Gentlemen, you so tenderly sympathize with, are *Rebels*?

J. *If he be?* Now you make me smile; I thought you wou'd show your weak Side presently.

*W.* Smile! But surely it must be at your own Folly; I know Nothing else you have to smile at: I'll go further, and assert, He has as full and as just a Title to the Crown he wears, as any Prince in *Christianity* to his; and I challenge you, and all the *Jacobites* in *England*, to dispute that Point with you; and that you may not think me confident without Reason, I shall let you see the Grounds I go upon.

(1.) 'Tis certain, and even capable of Demonstration, that the Right and Title any Prince on Earth has to his Crown, or the supreme Government, depends upon the Constitution, Law, or Custom of that Country where he governs: It would be but an odd Complement to any Man's Intellectuals, to suppose he needed a formal Proof of this. I speak not here of extraordinary Cases, as a divine Appointment formerly among the *Jews*, or Conquest now: But ordinarily no Man has any Right but what the Law derives to him; which is true of all universally, from the meanest Subject, to the Sovereign upon the Throne.

Hence (2.) Look round the World, (and you'll find the Foundation or Rule of Right to the Crown or Government) is not every where *one and the same, fix'd and invariable*, but *different*, according to the different Laws and Constitutions of the several Countries: In *Poland*, 'tis the Election of the People, that gives Right according to their Constitution: In *France*, and some other Places, a Female, tho' next in blood, and the only Issue of the Prince that reigns, has no Right, being excluded by what they call the *Salique Law*: Here in *England*, the Crown is partly Hereditary, and the Right of succeeding to the Government from Birth, tho' with Limitations and a Power in the Government of setting aside the next in Succession, and fixing on another, as the Exigencies of the State are judged to require. Thus by the 13th of *Eliz.*, Cap. 1. 'tis made High-Treason to affirm, *That the Laws and Statutes do not bind the Right of the Crown, and the Descent, Limitation, Inheritance, and Government thereof.* Which is renew'd in these Terms by the 4th of *Q. Anne*, Cap. 8. *That if any shall affirm, That the Kings and Queens of England, by and with the Authority of Parliament, are not able to make Laws and Statutes of sufficient Force and Validity to limit and bind the Crown of this Realm, and the Descent thereof, every such Person shall be guilty of High-Treason; and being convicted, &c. shall suffer of Death, and all Losses and Forfeitures, as in Case of High-Treason.* So that tho' we have, to avoid the Confusion of frequent Elections, settled the Crown on Families, 'tis with Restriction, and a Power of limiting the

Succession ; no Man's Birth alone makes him King, unless he has the Qualifications the Laws require: to deny this, is no less than High-Treason.

(3.) In Pursuance of this inherent, necessary Power in the Government, of providing for its own Safety, and Limiting the Succession, our States have wisely excluded all *Papists*, and made them for ever incapable of succeeding to the *British* Crown; the Words of the Act are: \* *Whereas it has been found by Experience, that it is inconsistent with the Safety and welfare of this Protestant Kingdom to be govern'd by a popish Prince, or by a King or Queen marrying a Papist; Be it therefore Enacted, That all and every Person that is, or shall be reconciled to, or hold Communion with the See, or Church of Rome, or shall profess the popish Religion, or shall marry a Papist, shall be excluded, and be for ever incapable to inherit, possess, or enjoy the Crown of this Realm, or to use, or exercise any Regal Power, &c. And in such Case, or Cases, the People shall be, and are hereby absolv'd of their Allegiance.*

(4.) Besides this general Exclusion of *Papists*, your Pretender is by Name excluded,† and attainted of High Treason; nay, 'tis declar'd High-Treason, advisedly, and directly to maintain and affirm, *That the pretended P. of Wales, styling himself K. of England, by the name of James the Third, hath any ‡ Right or Title to the Crown of these Realms.* And I need not tell you, That the same Law that has put an unmovable Bar in the Way of the Pretender, has settled the Crown on King George and his Family, being Protestants, 12. W. Cap. 2. 5. An Cap. 8. And in the present Oath of Allegiance and Abjuration, which several of you Gentlemen have taken, you own King George's Title in the strongest Terms. I'll rub up your Memory, by reciting a Part of it: *I, A. B. do sincerely acknowledge, profess, testify, and declare in my Conscience before God, and the World, That our Sovereign Lord King George, is lawful and rightful King of this Realm, &c. And I do solemnly and sincerely declare in my Conscience, that the Person pretending to be the Prince of Wales, during the Life of the late K. James, and since his Decease taking upon himself the Style and Title of K. of England, &c. hath not any Right or Title whatsoever to the Crown of this Realm: And I do renounce, refuse, and abjure any Allegiance or Obedience to him, &c.* Now, Sir, this being the State of the Case, this being the Law and Constitution of England, 'tis so evident, as not to admit of Debate, That King George is the only Person that hath any Right to the British Crown, and to whom the Subjects can with

\* W. & M. Seff, 2 Cap. 2.

† 4 W. Cap. 3.

‡ 4 An Cap. 8.



*a safe Conscience pay Allegiance.* And I scarce need make the Inference for you, That *therefore* the *Pretender* has no Claim or Right : And again, *therefore* those concern'd in the present Insurrection, are *Rebels*.

J. You have been very particular on this Head. I am sensible where the Right is, *according to your Acts of Parliament* ; But you take no Notice of a *divine Right*, which all the Acts of Parliament in the World can't affect : Kings are born to their Crowns, as other Heirs in a Family to their Estates, and their Right is divine, hereditary, and unalienable.

W. You would not be pleas'd, should I give such Talk its proper Name : However, I shall take the Freedom to tell you, That I have examin'd your Notion carefully, and am well assur'd 'tis meer Whim, and subsists no where but in the confus'd Imagination of a *Tory*. Pray, what do you found this Dream of a divine, indefeasible Right upon ? Is there any Declaration from Heaven for it ? When was it made, and to whom ? For my Part, I have read the Bible from first to last, and can't find one Word of it ; and I dare say no Body else, unless instead of seeking it there, he bring it along with him. You can't prove, nor all the *Jacobites* on Earth, that God has appointed any one particular Species of Government, as what he would have obtain universally and in every Nation : Much less has he fix'd the Right, the Manner, and Order of Succession. The *Jews* indeed, were put under Kingly Government, at their own foolish and sinful Request (after they grew weary of the Theocracy) and against the Remonstrances of God and the Prophet. Their first King (*Saul*) had a divine Right, being chosen immediately by God, as well as the People ; and yet this was so far from being indefeasible and hereditary, that he forfeited the Crown by his Male-Administration, was rejected of God, and his Posterity depriv'd of the Succession. *David*, their next King, was chosen out of a mean Family, and was the youngest of all *Jeſſe's* Sons, (1 *Sam.* xvi. 11.) And tho' he was a good Prince, and the Crown was settled in his Family ; yet so as no Way favours your Notion of hereditary Right, *Solomon*, one of his younger Sons being appointed to succeed him, to the Exclusion of *Abſalom*, *Adonijah*, &c. who according to the Law of Birth-right, might claim before him : And if you pursue the Scripture History of this Matter, you'll find other Instances enow to the like Purpose. Now I ask you, Where's your divine, indefeasible, hereditary Right of Kings ? You see it has no Foundation in Scripture. When God chose a King for his People the *Jews*, the first Royal Family was depriv'd of the Crown

after a single Reign ; the second had the Crown continu'd in a younger Branch : And are not these admirable Precedents for divine, hereditary, indefeasible Right ? Or can it be imagin'd, That if there was any such Thing, these first Examples shou'd be so absolutely against it. You say, your Pretender has an hereditary Right, which no humane Laws or Settlements can make void. But whence is this Right ? If you answer, Because he's of the Family of the *Stuarts*, who had a divine, indefeasible Right : I reply, *Saul* had a more divine Right than they, and yet his Children were excluded : Tho' after all, I don't suppose the Jewish Polity was design'd for a Pattern to all the World, or that these Instances absolutely bind us either in one Respect or another : However, they may serve for what we call, *Argumentum ad hominem*, and shew how lame your Plea is from Scripture in Behalf of a divine Right. Not that I deny Government in itself to be divine, and that Monarchy is an excellent Species of it, (for some Countries ;) but what particular Form of Government, whether Monarchy, Aristocracy, or a Common-wealth, shall be establish'd in this or that Nation ; what Persons shall be entrusted with the Administration, and how the Right of Succession shall descend ; *all this is humane* : The Scripture meddles not with it : which it may be is what the Apostle *Peter* intends ; when speaking of \* Government, he calls it *an Ordinance of Man*, or a humane Creature. Government in general, is the Ordinance of God, as the Apostle *Paul* calls it ; but the Specification of it is from Man, and humane. I might further take Notice, what Confusion your Notion would involve the World in : It would unking the greatest Part, if not all the Monarchs on Earth. And pray look over the List of our own Princes, since the *Norman* Conquest, and see what Work it wou'd make among us. What Right *William I*, whom we call, the *Conqueror*, had, I can't imagine, if your Scheme have any Sense in it ; and I am sure, his Son, *William II*, had none ; he being a younger Brother, and the eldest Son (*Robert*) alive when he was made King. Nor had *Henry I*, *Stephen*, *John*, *Henry IV*, *Henry V*, *Henry VI*, *Richard III*, any Right by Proximity of Blood : So that you wou'd do well to consider, that while you turn so many of our Kings into Usurpers, you turn their Laws into Nullities, undermine our Titles to our Estates, and set us together by the Ears, scuffling for them.——But I'll have done with this *Chimera*, which indeed is regarded no where, any further

\* 1 Pet. ii. 13.

than Mens particular Interests are serv'd by it ; no, not in *France* ; Witness the *Salique Law*, mention'd before ; witness the present King of *Spain's* renouncing the Crown of *France*, for himself and Heirs ; as his Grandfather did that of *Spain*, when he marry'd the *Infanta*. 'Tis plain, they admit of no Notion of a divine Right, *but what is subject to Reasons of State*, and varies, as their Interest varies ; if they did, they wou'd not surely pretend to controul it by humane Compacts.

J. But you'll grant, if K. *James II.*, had not been a *Papist*, nor his Son bred up in the Catholick Religion, he wou'd have had a Right, nor wou'd our Law-Makers have gone about to exclude him ; and is it not hard a Man should lose his Birth-Right, *purely for Conscience Sake*, and on the Account of Religion ?

W. I find you take your *Pretender's* Royal Birth for granted, and 'tis like, think I do so too ; because I did not before call it in question : But I must tell you, it has so many Marks of Imposture in it, that if a Son in my Family was half so suspicious, I shou'd not esteem it honourable to make him my Heir, and bestow my Estate upon him. And since, without Design, I have fallen upon this Subject, I shall mention to you some Circumstances of his Birth, which you may find more at large in the *Memorial* of the *English Protestants* to the Prince and Princess of *Orange*. They take Notice, "That the Custom in *England*, of Notifying to the next Heir the approaching Delivery of the Queen, was omitted. Her Breasts never swell'd, nor was any Milk ever seen in them. The Queen, contrary to her former Custom, withdrew into a private Room, when she chang'd her Linnen, and wou'd never suffer any Protestant Lady to be by. The Place of her pretended Lying-in was so variously reported, that the Ladies most concern'd knew not how to prepare for Attendance : Her Royal Highness, the Princess of *Denmark*, was kept at the *Bath* till the Time was over : The Queen was late at Cards on *Saturday Night*, very well ; and on a sudden said, she wou'd Lie-in at St. *James's* : She cry'd-out the very next Day about Ten a Clock, when most of the Protestants Ladies were at Church. In the Room where the Queen lay, there was a private Door within the Rail of the Bed into another Room, from whence a Child might be convey'd into the Queen's Bed unseen. Three popish Confidants, the Midwife, Mrs. *Labadie*, and Mrs. *Tourain*, pas'd thro' that secret Door backward and forward, none of the Lords of the Council being able to see any Thing that was done ; only they were seen in the Bed-Chamber with the King, that their Names might be publish'd to the People. The

Queen was Deliver'd in a very little Time. No Signs of Her Majesty's known Weakness in the Pangs of Birth appear'd ; but all was suddenly dispatch'd, and the Midwife delivering something close cover'd to Mrs. *Labadie*, they went both thro' the private Door in so great haste as to leave her Majesty in those Moments, when her (the Midwife's) Assistance was most wanted ; and as none saw what was taken out of the Bed, none heard any Child Cry in it." Now considering the violent Suspicion of the Nation of a Cheat, in so much that the Queen's great Belly was ridicul'd in Lampoons, that flew even about *Whitehall* itself, 'tis strange, to Amazement, that no more Care was taken to give the Publick Satisfaction. I remember, that 'tis said of the Empress *Constantia*, Wife to *Henry IV*, Emperor of *Germany*, That being in Years, and the People suspecting she was past Child-bearing, she prepar'd a Place in publick, where she remain'd till her Labour, with Keepers, that no Supposititious Child might possibly be convey'd to her ; and there, in the Sight of the Citizens, she brought forth a Prince, who was afterwards *Frederick II*. But here, all Things are huddl'd up in Darknes ; and so manag'd, that if the Birth was real, 'tis impossible for an unprejudic'd Person, not to question it.

It increases the Suspicion, that the *Papists*, (who knew their Cause was like to be ruin'd, if *K. James* died without an Heir Male, that might exclude his *Protestant* Daughters) were so mightily solicitous in the Affair ; which no doubt would set their Heads at Work : And tho' at the Time of the Birth, many of them call'd it miraculous, yet they spoke of it before with strange Assurance, That the Queen would have a Child, and that it would be a Son. When the Earl of *Castlemain* was sent Ambassador to the Pope by *K. James*, the *Jesuits* shew'd one of his Retinue a Device, signifying their Expectation and Confidence with Reference to this Matter, and implying, as one wou'd think, that they were let into the Secret : The Device was a Lilly, from whose Leaves distill'd some drops of Water, which, as *Naturalists* say, becomes the Seeds of new Lillies ; and the *Motto* was, *Lachrymor in prolem*, I weep for a Child ; and underneath was this *Distich* :

*Pro Natis, Jacobe gemis, Flos candide Regum ;*  
*Hos Natura tibi si neget Astra dabunt.*

"O *James*, thou best of Kings, dost thou weep for Children, if Nature denies, Heaven will grant the Blessing." But that neither Nature, nor the Stars gave *K. James* this Son, but that he was the Birth of a

*popish Juggle, and Imposture*, the Circumstances before-mention'd render it at least grossly suspicious. So that I must tell you, had I as great an Opinion as you, of Nearness and Relation of Blood, I should prefer, on that very Account, the Title of King *George* (in whom the Royal Families of *Plantagenet* and *Stuart* are united) to that of the *Pretender*, whom no Body knows (except a Few in the Secret) *whence he is*.

And besides, when you talk so much of his Right, and his Birth-Right, you should call to Mind, that the good People of *England* have their Birth-Rights as well as your *Pretender*; even tho' his Birth was unquestionably Royal. We have all of us a Birth-Right to our Estates, Religion and Liberties: And pray how comes his Right to *supersede and null all our Rights*? Who gave him, or any One else, a Right to ruin Mankind? to trample on the Necks of Millions of People, and tear out their Bowels? which must be the Consequence of owning the Right of a *Papist*, and submitting to the *Pretender*: For my Part, as the Law has made me free (the Law of God has left me so, the Law of Nature, and the Law of the Land has made me so) I'm resolv'd to stand fast in my Liberty, as long as I can, and never sacrifice the Blessings of my Birth and dear Country, to the Lust of your Sham-Sovereign.

J. This is all Exclamation: Can you imagine, we desire to be undone any more than you? We are not for parting with our Religion, or Liberties either; but expect to have them better secur'd, by that Sovereign you speak of, with so much Contempt, *under whom we may be all happy*.

W. Better secur'd! Why; were they ever safer than under the present Administration? or humanely speaking, is it possible they should? But suppose, that really your Religion and Liberties were in Danger, where lies the Wisdom of seeking to a popish *Pretender* to rescue them? If you knew what Popery is; if you knew the Conscience of a popish Prince; you wou'd never wish to see a Protestant Church under his Protection; which is just the same Thing, *as for a Flock of Sheep to choose a Wolf for their Shepherd*. The *Pretender* is a Wolf by Principle, whatever he is by natural Inclination: As a pupil of *France*, bred up in the Maxims of arbitrary Government, he's taught to destroy our Civil Liberties; and as a *Papist*, he's sworn to destroy our Religious. Methinks, you cannot but reflect upon his refusing just now the Coronation-Oath in *Scotland*; which must be because he wou'd not come under any Obligations to favour your Heresy; nor have his Oaths cast up at

every Turn by you, and thrown in his Way, while he was accomplishing the Work he has undertaken : And for the same Reason, no Question, 'tis, that he does not so much as promise to support our Church and Religion, in his Declaration, Dated from *Commercy*. He says indeed, *Let the Religious Right of all our Subjects receive a Confirmation in a Free Parliament ; let Consciences truly tender, be indulged.* But he promises Nothing. Which I mention, not to his Reproach at all ; for I look upon this plain Dealing, to be the most honourable Thing I ever heard of him. In the mean time, 'tis no small Reproach to you, who call yourselves Protestants, that you thus stickle for one that does not so much as speak you fair, nor give you any Assurances for the Security of your Religion : It shews your Credulity, the Grossness of the Infatuation you are under ; and I must needs say, looks like a Judgment of God upon us, who for our Sins has given up so great a Body of Unthinking People to strong Delusions : I wish it be not to theirs, and all our *Ruin*.

I know but one Thing you can suggest against what I have been hinting ; I don't say one Thing, which has any Weight in it ; for that it has not, but with which you can possibly cheat yourselves into a Confidence in the *Pretender* ; and that is, That tho' he has been a little upon the Reserve with you ; yet his known Goodness, the Obligations he'll be under to you for his Advancement, and even his own Interest will oblige him to be kind to the Church of *England*, and protect you in all your Privileges both Civil and Religious. To this I answer (1.) That you have a Prince upon the Throne from whom you may justly expect all this : I would not lessen the great King *George* so far as to compare him with your *Pretender* ; but surely it must argue Distraction in a Church of *England*-Man to think himself and Religion Safer, under such a Tool as the *St. German's* Pupil, than under a stanch Protestant, *The wisest and bravest Prince in Christendom.* *Pretender* designs you no such Favour as you expect, from his saying *Nothing of it*, when it might have serv'd his Interest with some of you at least ; tho' others are resolv'd to espouse him upon any Terms, and to run all Hazards for him, without so much as looking before them or asking Questions. (3.) I add, should his Inclinations be never so kind to you, (and I believe he never intends you the Honour of Martyrdom if you don't prevent him by your Apostacy) nay, should he promise and swear by all that's sacred to maintain your Establishment, 'tis what he can't do : Principle would controul Nature, and the prior and superior Obligations of Conscience cancel the most solemn

Stipulations with *Protestants*. The religion he has learnt teaches him, That *Faith is not to be kept with Hereticks*. He's bound on Penalty of Deposition and Damnation, to destroy them out of his Dominions. The Decrees of two General Councils (*Constance* and *Lateran*) hang over his Head, arm'd with the most terrible *Anathemas* in Case he should be remiss in the Discharge of his Duty, and shew Mercy to Hereticks contrary to his Vows. I'll give you the Words of the Council of *Lateran*: \* *If the Temporal Governour, being requir'd and admonished, shall neglect to purge his Country of Hcrefy, let this be signify'd to the Pope, that from henceforth he may declare his Subjects free from their Allegiance.* Nay, Pope *Martin V*, went so far as to tell the Duke of *Lithuania*, That he Sin'd mortally if he kept his Oath with Hereticks. So that should this Youngster you dote on, give you the Security of Promises and Oaths, he would regard them no more than his pretended Father did, who, you know, made all the haste possible to break them: Nay, should he be touch'd with Compassion, with a Sense of Honour and Gratitude towards a Company of Mad-men, that were willing to ruin themselves and Posterity to serve him; yet the Terrors of the holy Father's Rod, the *Anathemas* of the Church, the Dread of a future Purgatory, and Hell, would force him thro' these lesser Restraints: *He must persecute and destroy you whether he would or not*; the same Argument would urge him to it, that one of the *Papists* Lords is said to make use of when he engag'd in this Rebellion, *viz. his Salvation lay at Stake.*

J. But still, methinks, 'tis a little harsh, that a man who has done Nothing to forfeit it, should lose his Right, *purely on the Account of his Religion.*

W. Harsh! Not at all, when what you call his Right would be the Ruin of the Community, as in this Case, I have undeniably prov'd it would; so that I do and must maintain, was his Birth less suspected and absolutely necessary for the Safety of the State, (*Protestant*;) nor would you yourself think it any greater Hardship (had you not lost the Power of sober Consideration) than 'tis to deprive a Lunatick of his Estate, and dispose of it to the next Heir of a sober Mind: For who sees not that a *Papist* is far more unfit to be entrusted with the Government of a *Protestant* Kingdom, than a Lunatick with a private Estate; the one would only injure a particular Family, the other destroy a Community. Pray reflect on the Practice and Conduct of the *Papists*

\* Sub. *Innocent*. III. An. 1215 Can 3.

in this Matter, of whom of late you begin to speak so favourably ; Do they allow *Protestants* any Right to Crowns among 'em ? 'Tis their avow'd Doctrine, That Herefy in a Prince is an universal Forfeiture of his Crown, his Life, and All : accordingly their Church deprives, depose, excommunicates heretical Kings, and leaves them to the Mercy of Russians, who may murder them and be guiltless. You remember the Fate of *Henry IV*, of *France*, who was forc'd to declare himself a *Papist* before he could sit quietly on his Throne ; and being afterwards suspected to incline too much to the *Hugonots*, *Ravilliac* was employ'd to assassinate him. Now pray, my good Neighbour, can you give me any Reason why we in *England* should not exclude a *Papist*, as well as the *Papists* every where exclude *Protestants* ; especially when the Religion of the latter includes, as its essential Principles, universal Love, Charity, and Compassion ; and the Religion of the former breathes nothing but Fire and Faggot, Desolation and Slaughter.

J. You're a warm Advocate for your Cause ; and I must confess have offer'd more for it than I expected could have been said ; But you must grant the present Government has not taken the most proper Methods, to reconcile its Enemies, and recommend it self to the Nation : Our Church can go as far as any Society in the World in true Loyalty ; but has not lost the Sense of Feeling ; *Oppression will make a wise Man mad.*

W. I am glad you have mention'd this ; it being the common Topick your Party insists upon to asperse the present Government, and spread their Venom among the People ; but really 'tis the most unreasonable and impudent Slander, that ever was invented : Full two Years are not expir'd since his Majesty's happy Accession ; 'tis easy to look back upon the Occurrences of so short a Reign ; and to recount the several Transactions thereof ; which surely must be fresh in their Memories, that cry out so loudly of Oppression, as to take up Arms, and attempt to dethrone their lawful Sovereign on that Account : Now Sir, we'll bring this Matter to a speedy Issue. I have only one Thing to demand of you, than which Nothing can be more reasonable, *viz.* That if neither you nor any of your Party throughout *Britain*, can produce a Single Instance of Injustice, Tyranny, or Oppression, in his Majesty's whole Administration hitherto ; that you'll then grant the Clamour raised against the King, must be Nothing but Malice, and the Contrivance of a base Faction, that have vile Ends to serve thereby. This, Sir, is what I ask of you, and if after all your



Noise you can alledge Nothing in the Government *that has so much as the Appearance of Tyranny in it*, and I challenge Malice itself to do its worst; then I expect you'll desert your Party, and be ashamed of your Cause and Company for the future.

J. You come close now, and think to pinch me: I own I have not been so busie in Politicks, as to be able to answer you fully in this Matter; but I have heard several Complaints, that I can't think are wholly groundless: You may be sure we can't but with Concern see the Friends of the Church all turn'd out of Place and in Disgrace: If a Man speaks a word amiss, he's presently bound over and hal'd to Prison: The *Habeas Corpus Act*, the greatest Relief of the oppress'd Subject, is now suspended, that no Man can have the Benefit of that Law; nor is this the worst of it, a standing Army is kept up to awe the Subject, and terrify the Nation.

W. You need not plead Insufficiency; you understand well enough the *Shibboleth of your Party*, and have alledg'd all that ever I heard from any of them; and how perfectly nothing 'tis, I shall shew you in a few Words. Your *first* Complaint, that the Church has suffer'd, and is in Danger, by the Change of the Ministry, is odd enough at this Time a Day. I'm satisfy'd many who once fell in with that Cry, are now ashamed of it, when they see what Course some of those Gentlemen were steering; and indeed if your disgrac'd Friends are necessary to the Safety of the Church, you must mean the *Pretender* is so too, (for thither they were carrying you); which is so senseless a Sham, that I leave you to blush at it when you become capable of calm Reflection: I might further re-mind you, that They in Place now, are all Church-Men; yea, better Church-men than those that are turned out: Nor has there been one Act of Injustice or Unkindness done to the Church, since the Change you make such a Stir about. What you talk of a Standing-Army is most absurd, when you your selves have occasion'd it by your Conspiracies and Rebellion; nor have you any Thing after all to fear from this Standing Army. The King was Absolute in his own Country, and had an arm'd Force ready to execute his Pleasure at any Time, and yet none ever heard the least Attempt or Inclination to Oppress any of his Subjects there. Besides, you shou'd consider this standing Force is judg'd necessary by the Government; is rais'd and continued by Consent of the Parliament, and will you call this Oppression and Tyranny, &c. especially when the Necessity is from your selves? As for what you say of Persons being taken up and imprison'd for a Word &c. 'tis a

poor Pretence, I hardly believe you can think the Government ought to pass by such Insults as are offered it, without shewing its Resentment ; and indeed you might as well desire the King to resign all at once, and leave you *Tories* and *Jacobites* to fill his Throne as you please, and trample upon his faithful Subjects. The Suspension of the *Habeas Corpus* Act may appear to some a more serious Matter, and look like an Hardship ; but really is no such Thing : This Act was made in the 31st Year of K. *Charles II* : In the 1st Year of K. *William* and Q. *Mary*, two Acts pass'd to suspend it, *i.e.* to enable their Majesty's to Apprehend, Detain, and Commit without Bail, such Persons as they should find just Cause to suspect were conspiring against the Government, which was thought in that Time of Confusion, necessary for the common Safety. At the Time of the horrid Assassination-Plot, in the 7th and 8th Year of K. *William*, the like Act pass'd ; and upon the *Pretender's* attempting to Land in *Scotland* in the 6th of Q. *Anne*, the same Power was given Her Majesty by Parliament, to Apprehend and Detain such Persons, as Her Majesty should suspect were conspiring against her Person and Government ; and now on Occasion of the present Rebellion, which makes the Reason and Necessity as urgent as in any of the former Instances, the same Power is granted his Majesty ; and pray what is there amiss in this ? Where lies the Oppression of it ? The King does not dispense with the Law by his own absolute Authority, as you know the Prince did whom your *Pretender* calls Father ; but 'tis done by the Legislature, *pro re natâ*, for a limited Time only, and to answer a present Necessity.

*J.* But sure you can't justify the Severities us'd of late : *Never was there such Slaughtering before* ; you may well imagine it will occasion Murmuring and Uneasiness among the People, to see so much noble Blood attainted, and so many Lives taken away for I know not what : Read all our Histories, and I don't believe you'll be able to parallel this in any Reign since the Reformation, nay since the Conquest : Mercy and Goodness is the Glory of a Prince ; and methinks a Government that owes its Being to a Pretence of securing us from Tyranny and Cruelty, shou'd not lay its Foundation in those very Crimes.

*W.* I know the poor Sots, that range about the Streets, between Drunk and Sober, talk at this Rate ; but I'm sorry the Infection shou'd reach above the Mob. However, since you have espoused this Notion, weak as it is, and own it as one of your Prejudices against the Present Government, I shall debate the Matter a little with you,

and so take Leave. It may be necessary to put you in Mind (for I see you have very mistaken Apprehensions of governing Mercy) that when God himself was pleas'd to do the Part of a Sovereign Magistrate (as I may express it) and take the Administration of Government into his own Hand more immediately, as in the Jewish Theocracy, he appointed Capital Punishments for Offenders against the State ; and you know, or may know, that when these Criminals were conniv'd at, and exempted from Punishment in such Instances as the Law requir'd it, the Land was esteem'd polluted, as by the Execution of Justice it was esteem'd cleansed, and the political Guilt expiated : *Now shall Man be more Righteous or more merciful than God?* Or shall that be call'd unmerciful in an earthly Sovereign, which the God of Heaven, when he stood in the Relation of a King to his People, so strictly requir'd and executed : I grant that Mercy is the Excellency of a Governor, and shou'd triumph when there's Room for it, and it may consist with the publick Safety ; but in many Cases, what some call Mercy, is not Mercy but foolish Compassion ; and the Exercise of it argues such Weakness in the Prince, as would expose his Government to Contempt and Ruin.

But to come directly to the Point in Hand, *viz* : the Rebellion and Sufferings of the Rebels : I find you make light of the former, and strangely aggravate the latter : Let me ask you one plain Question : You know that in the Reigns of K. *Charles II.* and K. *James II.* several took up Arms against the Government, at first under more obscure Leaders ; the second Time under the Dukes of *Monmouth* and *Argyle*, and were proceeded against with Rigour : Now I ask what you think of this ? Were these Insurrections, Rebellion ; and the Executions done upon those concern'd in them, just and necessary ; or were they Acts of Tyranny and Unmercifulness in the Government ?

*J.* No Man of Sense and Loyalty ever thought other, but that these Insurrections were *an hellish Rebellion*, and the Government acted honourably in prosecuting the Rebels in the Manner they did. *Those Fanatics deserv'd ten times more !*

*W.* Very well, then I hope you'll grant that if the present Insurrection your Friends engag'd in, hath more of the horrid Nature of Rebellion in it, and many Aggravations, the former had not ; and if the Proceedings of the Government against the Rebels of that Time, were more severe than his present Majesty's against the Rebels of this Day, then you'll grant I say, *Your Clamours against King George on this*

*Head are unreasonable*, and must acquit the present Government, or condemn the former you so much applaud.

*J. If* and *If*: This *If* spoils all: If you can prove what you suppose, I'll grant you all you ask; but I defy you.

*W.* I shall prove it presently; and defy you and all your Party to object one Word of Reason against what I say. The Thing I have to do, is to shew that the present Rebellion is *worse* than that under King *Charles* and King *James* the II; and yet the Sufferings of the Rebels *less*: In order to which, I shall compare the one with the Other, with respect both to the *Crime and Punishment*. I shall begin with the Crime, the Rebellion it self.

(1.) In the former Rebellion, there was a *Papist* at one Time near the Throne, at another Time, (as in *Monmouth's* Rebellion) actually upon it; whom they consider'd as bound to destroy them and their Religion, as they knew he intended it. In this Rebellion here's a Protestant upon the Throne; whose Family has been celebrated for their Steadiness to the Protestant Interest; and his present Majesty is not a Whit behind his Illustrious Ancestors in this Respect: So that *They* took up Arms against a *Papist* ready to devour them; *your Friends* join with *Papists* against a *Protestant*, Zealous to Defend and Protect them.

(2.) In the former Rebellions they had the *utmost Provocation given them*. They did not fright themselves with Imaginary Evils; but saw their Religion and Liberties invaded; felt themselves almost undone by continued Acts of Violence against and contrary to Law. I can't pretend at this Time to enumerate all the Oppressions of those Reigns; they would fill a Volume. But since you seem quite to have forgot these Things, I shall a little refresh your Memory. In *Scotland* the poor People were almost harrassed out of their Lives. *Lauderdale*, the Tool of the Court at that Time, obtained an Act of Parliament declaring; *That by virtue of the King's Supremacy, the ordering of the Government of the Church do's properly belong to his Majesty; and that he may Enact and Emit such Orders and Constitutions, concerning Church-Administrations, Persons employ'd in the same, and all Ecclesiastical Meetings, &c. as he shall think fit, &c.* In Pursuit of this, to force the People to Conformity, and to comply with the King's Will in Matters of Church-government and Religion, *high Commission-Courts* were set up, (too like the *Spanish* Inquisition) and several severe Orders were made. It was requir'd of the People to give Bond for themselves, Wives, Children, and Servants, to frequent the Parish-Church, never to go to the

Worship of the *Presbyterians* in their Field-meetings whither they were driven ; Nay an Oath was put upon them to discover all they knew that resorted to these Meetings, and deliver up all Vagrant Preachers. These Orders were executed by Dragoons, who exacted the aforesaid Bond, which if any refus'd, they had 10 or 12 Soldiers quarter'd upon them, and Sums of Money demanded besides the Free-Quarters. And when they had drain'd the poor People to that degree, they had Nothing left to answer the Soldiers Demands, they were tied Hand and Foot, and dragg'd to Prison like Beasts. At last these Methods not prevailing to suppress their Meetings as they desir'd, Orders were given for the Soldiers to Attack the People wherever they were assembled for Worship, which they often did, *mingling their Blood with their Sacrifices*. Now it was upon such Oppressions as these, that they took up Arms ; first at *Pentland-hills*, and afterwards at *Bothwell-bridge* in 1679. How the Case was in *England*, I need not tell you ; all the World saw King *James* aim'd at nothing less than the utter Subversion of the Government and Protestant Religion ; the preventing of which was the Occasion of *Monmouth's* Insurrection, as he owns in his Declaration. "Unless, says he, we could be contented to see the Reformed Religion and such as profess it, extirpated ; Popish Idolatry establish'd, the Laws of the Land trampled under Foot, and all that is sacred and civil violated : And unless we could be willing to be Slaves as well as *Papists*, and forget the Example of our noble Ancestors, who convey'd our Privileges to us at the Expence of their Blood and Treasure ; and withal be unmindful of our Duty to God, our Country, and Posterity ; deaf to the Cries of our oppress'd Friends ; and be content not only to see them and ourselves imprison'd, robb'd, and murder'd, but the *Protestant* Interest throughout the World betray'd to *France* and *Rome* ; We are bound as Men and Christians to betake ourselves to Arms, &c."

(3.) They were depriv'd of all Prospect of Relief, and Hopes of Redress : In *Scotland* the Law was over-ruled, and suspended in a great measure : And in *England* all Methods imaginable were us'd, to subvert the Law, and both the Makers and Interpreters of it to the Will of the Prince. The Declaration mention'd before takes notice, "That perjur'd Judges were suborn'd to declare for the King's *dispensing Power* : That such were advanc'd to the Bench that were the Scandal of the Bar : That by packing Juries, by false Returns, new illegal Charters, and other corrupt Means, they were depriv'd of all Expectation of Succour where their Ancestors us'd to find it ; so that,

say they, that which ought to be the Peoples Fence against Tyranny' is become the Means of establishing arbitrary Power, and confirming their 'Thralldom.'" Thus Matters were circumstance'd with them ; They were undone, *without any Remedy*, unless what the Sword brought, which they look'd upon as their last Resort, and only possible Means of Safety : How far this is your Case, I leave the most harden'd *Jacobite* among you to consider ; and only desire you to reflect upon one Particular relating to the Judges : That now they not only hold, *quam diu bene se gesserint*, but his present Majesty has generously increas'd their Sallaries, that they might be more above Temptation, whereas before they were not only Closetted, but to render 'em more obsequious, their Patents ran *durante Beneplacito*. Upon the Whole.

(4) 'Tis evident those Rebels fought for their Religion, Laws, Liberties, against Oppression, Popery, and Tyranny : 'Tis as Evident you are Free, and fight for Slavery : are at Liberty, and seek for Chains : Both your Religion and Estates are Safe, and have, it may be, the best Guardian of any *Protestant* Church or Nation in the World ; and yet Nothing will serve you but *a raw Youth, a Dependant on France, and Tool of Rome*, that hates both you and your Profession. Blush O ye Heavens at the Stupidity and Folly of these Men ! Don't mistake me, I'm not vindicating the former Insurrections headed by *Monmouth* and others, that's none of my Business ; but 'tis as clear as the Sun at Noon-day, that your's is a black Crime compared with Theirs : If they were Offenders, *you are Sinners before the Lord exceedingly*, as was said of the Men of *Sodom* ; And if you'll allow me to speak my Thoughts freely, I must say the present Rebellion is the most Complicated Villany that ever was acted among Mankind, since *Absalom* drew the Sword against his own Father.

J. I'm a little surpriz'd, I confess, at your Discourse ; I did not imagine Things had been thus : I must own if what you say be true ; they had far more Cause to complain than we have : But do you say *they suffer'd more*, if you can make that out, you'll silence me for ever.

W. I shall make it out presently : I'm glad 'tis with any Prospect of Success with you. A few Remarks upon the Methods taken with the Rebels then, compar'd with what you so much complain of now, will be sufficient for your Conviction.

(1.) The Number of Sufferers at that Time was considerable. In *Scotland* They were driven *like Sheep to the Slaughter*. Both the Noblemen that led the Parties, *Monmouth* and *Argyle*, lost their Heads : *Jefferies* condemned above 500 Persons in two Places only, *Taunton*

and *Wells*; whereof 239 were executed; besides what were dispatch'd at *Dorchester*, *Exeter*, and *Winchester*; so that he had some Grounds for his brutish Boast, when he return'd from the West, (*viz.*) *That he had hang'd more Men than all the Judges of England since William the Conqueror*. Nor would so many have escap'd as did, had not the Judge's Covetousness pleaded stronger than the King's Mercy for their Lives: Pardons were sold at all Prices, from 10*l.* to 14000 Guineas: and those that had no Money rarely found any Mercy.

(2.) Several suffer'd without any Legal Trial and Conviction: Which was common in *Scotland*; where the Soldiers, being impower'd by the Council, us'd to tender an Oath to such as they suspected, and if they did not answer to Satisfaction, *they shot or stabbed them upon the Spot*. There were near 100 sacrificed to the Rage of the Soldiers in this manner: And if they desir'd Time to recommend themselves to God, they were answer'd with a Scoff: *What the Devil have you been doing so many Years; han't you had Time enough to pray in the Caves and Mountains?*

(3.) When they allow'd them the Formality of a Trial, the Injustice and Tyranny appear'd as flagrant in perverting the Law, as when they set it wholly aside. They would try Prisoners without either Accusers or Libel, requiring them to answer *super Inquirendis*, to any Questions that should be put; And some times they would offer them such Oaths as they knew they would not take, and then proceed against them without any more ado: And if in some notorious Cases the Jury scrupled to bring in the Person Guilty, the King's Advocate by Threatnings forc'd them to it; as did *Jefferies* in the Case of Mrs. *Lisle* whom the Jury brought in 3 Times, *not Guilty*, but were so Hector'd by the Judge, that they were forc'd to comply and cry *Guilty*.

(4.) A Variety of Arts were us'd to trick People out of their Lives, and involve them in the Guilt of Rebellion against whom they had no Proof at all. Witness the State-Questions in *Scotland*, invented to insnare such as they had a Mind to destroy: *As what they thought of the Rising at Bothwell-Bridge, and of the Death of the Bishop of St. Andrew's*, whether the one was Rebellion, and the other Murther? Many were imprison'd for a Year together, and never told for what; and not having sufficient Matter of Accusation against them, Spies were sent in among them under the Pretence of being Prisoners, who by conversing with them might fish out something which their Enemies might make an Handle of to condemn them. Nay, those that were

never concern'd in their Insurrections, if they gave a Night's Lodging to any of the Rebels, or a Meal of Meat, it wou'd be made a Sort of Treason, and cost them their Necks. *Jefferies* trapan'd a great many out of their Lives, by telling them, "If they pleaded *not Guilty*, and were found so, they should have little Time to live ; but if they expected Favour, *they must plead Guilty*." By which Eighty Persons were deluded and immediately condemn'd and executed. Mrs. *Lisle*, mention'd before, a Woman of extreme Age, suffer'd for High Treason, upon *Jefferies's* Sentence, for only harbouring a Non-Conformist Minister, tho' in no Proclamation.

(5.) Their Manner of Proceeding against the Criminals, either upon their Trials, or at their Executions, was barbarous to the last Degree. The *Bothwell-Bridge* Prisoners were brought to *Edinburgh* and kept in an open Church-yard, for Days and Nights, without any Thing to shelter them from the Cold or Rain : Sometimes a Number of them were cram'd into the same Room, and so wedg'd together, that they could not stoop but their Excrements went from them standing : Some of them by Boots and Thumkins had the Marrow squeez'd out of their Legs and Thumbs, to make them confess : Others, when under Examination, were kept waking by the Soldiers eight or ten Nights together till they were almost distracted, and ready to say any Thing their Enemies would have them : And when they came to execute any of them, they generally put off all Humanity : Often the Sufferers might not have Leave to speak a Word at their Death, in Vindication of themselves, but were hurried out of the World ; or at least the Drums were kept beating, &c. that they could not be heard. Some had their Ears cut off upon one Sentence, and were hang'd upon another : Some were tied to a Stake within the Sea-Mark, and there left to perish leisurely by the increasing Waves : Others had their Hands and Privy Members cut off, and their Heart pluckt out and thrown into the Fire before their Face.

In *England* Matters were carried much after the same sort. To say nothing of *Jefferies*, whose very Name is Infamous, and gives a Sort of Horror and Indignation, especially in the *West*, Collonel *Kirk* acted the Butcher beyond most you have heard of: He caus'd Ninety wounded Men at *Taunton* to be hang'd, not only without permitting their Relations to speak to them, but with Pipes playing, Drums beating, Trumpets sounding, and all other Military Rejoycings. At another Time he invited his Officers to Dinner, near the Place where some of the condemn'd Prisoners were to be executed, and order'd



Ten of 'em to be turn'd off with a Health to the King, Ten with an Health to the Queen, and Ten more with a Health to *Jefferies*: But nothing is more Infamous in the Brute, than his Decoying a fair Virgin to his Embraces, with the promise of saving her Brother's Life; and when he had gratify'd his vile Inclinations, hang'd the Man on the Sign of the House before the abus'd Damsel's Face.

(6.) I shall only further observe, that great Numbers were made Criminals, Indicted, Imprison'd and Punish'd even to Death (some of 'em) for *slight Offences*: Much less than many of your Party are guilty of every Day. I could give you the Names of Scores that were Fin'd and Whip'd for speaking against the Government, and complaining of Oppression: The *Taunton* Girls were Fin'd Forty and Fifty Pound a Piece for flourishing *Monmouth's* Colours: Nay, a Constable was hang'd for executing *Monmouth's* Warrant; and 'tis said another poor Man met with the same Fate, for the horrid Treason of *Three Pennyworth of Hay for his Horse*.

And now, Sir, I leave it to your own Ingenuity and Conscience, to determine the Case between the Sufferers, (the former and present Sufferers.) Can you find any Passages in the Proceedings of the Government against the present Rebels, that answer the strange Inhumanities I have been speaking of? Is there as much Blood-shed now as there was then? Tho' the Crime of this Rebellion is a Thousand Times greater, and many Thousand Times more have espous'd it directly or indirectly. Are any executed now without a Trial, or condemn'd without Evidence? Do you know of Arts us'd to trick Men out of their Lives, or to involve innocent Persons in the Guilt of such Crimes they have never been concern'd in? Are any Prosecuted or Hang'd for harbouring Rebels, or giving them a small Relief, when almost ready to famish for Want? Is every Word spoke against the Government made criminal, as heretofore? If so, the Women and Girls durst not talk so much saucy Treason at their Tea-Tables as they do, but would be taken up, and whipp'd for it, as indeed they well deserve. Act impartially, Sir, as becomes an honest Man, and then I need say no more, but refer the Matter wholly to your self: Only I must tell you what I expect from you, unless you can except against what has been said; *viz.* That you'll never after this pretend to excuse the present most unreasonable Rebellion: That instead of reproaching his Majesty's Government your self, you'll Rebuke such as do: And that as an *English-Man* and *Protestant*, you'll shew your Gratitude; That those unhappy Men, whom you're

now convinc'd you have thought too well of, have not been able to ruin themselves, their King and Country, as they attempted

J. Sir I thank you for your free Conversation : I shall endeavour to recollect what you have said, and impartially consider it : I hope it will at least have this Effect, that I shan't be so easily impos'd upon, and carried away with every foolish Prejudice, as I perceive I have too much been heretofore. But pray, Sir, what do you think after all, of the *odd Appearances* the other Night ?

W. We have spent too much of our Time in Politicks to enter upon Philosophy now. They might proceed from a Natural Cause, and be no more Monitory and Ominous than the Moon-shine. However let them signify what they will, I'm sure They can't signify *God's Approbation of the horrid Enterprize of these Rebels*, or his Displeasure at the Punishment that has overtaken them. 'Tis no less than Blasphemy thus to interest Heaven in so great a Villany. I think the Country-man put a far better Sense upon the *Phænomenon*, (viz.) *That it was an Illumination and publick Rejoycings in the Heavens, for the Defeat of King GEORGE's Enemies.*



Finit.

"Inter Folia Fructus."

THE  
*EXECUTION*

OF  
**MARY, QUEEN OF SCOTS.**



"HISTORY IS BUT THE UNROLLED SCROLL OF PROPHECY."

—JAMES A. GARFIELD.



PRIVATELY PRINTED  
FOR THE CLARENDON HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

1886.

*This edition is limited to 120 large paper and 400 small paper copies,  
for Subscribers only.*

*AN ACCOUNT*  
OF THE  
**EXECUTION**  
OF  
**Mary, Queen of Scots,**  
NOT HITHERTO PUBLISHED.

Being a Letter from  
Robert Wyngfield, *Esq; to Lord Treasurer Cecil.*

---

*LONDON:*  
Printed for and sold by JAMES CROCKATT, in Prujeian-Court, over  
against Surgeon's-hall, in the Old-Bailey. MDCCLII.





A CIRCUMSTANTIAL ACCOUNT  
OF THE  
EXECUTION  
OF  
**MARY, QUEEN OF SCOTS.**

By ROBERT WYNGFIELD, Esq.



**I**T maye please your good Lordshipp, to be advertised, that according as your Honour gave me in command, I have heer sett downe in writting the trew Order and Manner of the Execution of the Lady *Mary* last Queen of *Scots*, the 8th of *February* last, in the great Hall within the Castle of *Fotheringtray*, together with relation of all such Speeches and Actions spoken, and done by the sayde Queen, or any others, and all other Circumstances and Proceedings concerning the same, from and after the Delivery of the said *Scottish* Queen, to *Thomas Andrews*, Esq; high Sherife for hir Majestyes County of *Norfolk*, vnto the End of the sayde Execution, as followeth :

It being certyfyed the 6th of *February* last, to the sayde Queen, by the Right Honourable the Earl of *Kent*, the Earl of *Shrewsberry*, and also by Sir *Amias Paolet*, and Sir *Drue Drurie*, hir Governors, that

shee was to prepare himself to die the 8th of *February* next, shee seemed not to be in any Terror, for ought that appered by any of hir outward Gesture or Behaviour, (other than marvelling shee should die) but rather with smiling Cheer and pleasing Countenance digested and accepted the sayde Admonition of Preparation to hir (as she sayde) unexpected Execution; saying that hir Death should be welcome unto hir, seeing hir Majestie was so resolved, and that that Soule were too too farr vnworthye the Fruition of the Joyes of Heaven for ever, whose Bodye would not in this World be content to endure the Stroake of the Executioner for a Moment. And that spoken, shee wept bitterlye and became silent.

The sayde 8th Day of *February* being come, and Tyme and Place appointed for the Execution, the Queen being of Stature tall, of Bodye corpulent, rownde shouldered, hir Face fat, and broade, double chinned, and hazell-eyed, hir borrowed Hair aborne; her attyre was this, on hir Head shee had a dressing of Lawne edged with Bone-lace, a Pomander Chayne, and an *Agnus Dei* about hir Neck, a Crucifix in hir Hande, a Payre of Beades att hir Girdle, with a golden Crosse at the End of them, a Vale of Lawne fastened to hir Caule, bowed out with Wyer and edged round about with Bone-lace; hir Gowne was of black Sattin printed, with a Trayne and long Sleeves to the Grounde, with Acorn Buttons of Tett, trymmed with Pearle, and shorte Sleeves of Sattin black Cutt, with a Pair of Sleeves of purple Velvet whole under them, hir Kirtle whole of figured black Sattin, and hir Petticoate Skirts of crimson Velvet, hir Shoes of Spanish Leather with the rough Side outward, a Payre of green Silk Garters, hir nether Stockings worsted colour watchett, clocked with Silver, and edged on the Topp with Silver, and next hir Leg a payre of Jarfye Hose white, &c. Thus apparreled she departed hir Chamber, and willinglye bended hir Stepps towards the Place of Execution.

As the Commissioners, and divers other Knights, were meeting the Queen coming forthe, one of hir Servants called *Meluin*, kneeling on his Knees to his Queen and Mistresse, wringing Handes and shedding Tears, used these Words unto hir: "Ah! Madam, unhappy me, what Man on Earth was ever before the Messenger of so important Sorrow and Heaviness as I shall be, when I shall Report that my good and gracious Queen and Mistresse is behedded in *England*?" This sayde, Tears prevented him of any further speaking; whereupon the sayde Queen powring forth hir dying Tears, thus answered him, "My good



Servant, cease to lament, for thou hast Cause rather to joye than to mourne, for now shall thou see *Mary Stewarde's* Troubles receive their longe expected End, and Determination, for know (sayde shee) good Servant, all the World is but Vanity, and subject still to more Sorrow, than a whole Ocean of Tears can bewayle. But I pray thee (sayde shee) carry this Message from me, that I dye a trewe Woman to my Religion, and like a trewe Queen of *Scotland* and *France*, but God forgive them (sayde shee) that have longe desired my End, and thirsted for my Blood, as the Harte doth for the Water Brookes. Oh! God (sayde shee) show thou art the Anchor of Truthe, and Truthe it selfe, knowest the inward Chambar of my Thought, how that I was ever willing that *England* and *Scotland* should be vnited together. Well, (sayde shee) commend me to my Sonne, and tell him, that I have not done any Thinge preiudiciall to the State and Kingdome of *Scotland*;" and so resolving hirselfe agayne into Tears, sayde, "good *Meluin* farewell," and with weeping Eyes, and hir Cheekes all besprinkled with Tears, as they were, kissed him, saying once againe farewell, good *Meluin*, and praye for thy Mistris and Queen." And then she turned hirself unto the Lordes, and told them shee had certayne Requests to make vnto them. One was, for certayne Monye to be payde to *Curle* hir Servant; Sir *Amias Pawlet*, knowing of that Monye, answered to this Effect, It shoulde: "Next, that hir poor Servants might have that with quietnes which shee had given them by hir Will, and that they might be favourably intreated, and to send them safely into their Countries," to this (sayde shee) "I conjure you last, that it would please the Lordes, to permitt hir poor distressed Servants to be present about hir at hir Death, that their Eyes and Harts maye see and witnesse how patiently their Queen and Mistris would endure hir Execution, and so make Relation when they came into their Country, that shee dyed a trewe constant Catholique to hir Religion," Then the Earle of *Kent*, did answer thus. "Madam, that which you have desired, cannot conveniently be granted, for if it should, it weare to be feared, least somme of them, with Speeches or other Behaviour, would bothe be grevous to your Grace, and troublesome and vnpleasing to vs and our Companye, whereof we have had somme Experience, they would not sticke to putt somme superstitious Trumpery in practise, and if it were but in dipping their Handkerchieffs in your Grace's Blood, whereof it were very vnmeet for vs to give Allowance."

"My Lords, (sayde the Queen of *Scots*) I will give my Worde

although it be but dead, that they shall not deserve any blame in any the Actions you have named, but alas (poore Soules) it would doe them good to bidd their Mistris farewell; and I hope your Mistris (meaning the Queen) being a Mayden Queen, will vouchsafe, in Regard of Woman-hood, that I shall have somme of my own People about me att my deathe, and I know hir Majestie hath not given you any such streight Charge or Commission, but that you might grant me a Request of farr greater Courtesie than this is, if I were a Woman of farr meaner Calling than the Queen of *Scots*." And then perceiving that shee could not obtayne her Request without some Difficultye, burst out into Tears, saying,

"I am Cosen to your Queen, and discended from the Blood Royal of *Henry* the VIIth. and a marryed Queen of *Fraunce*, and an annoynted Queen of *Scotland*." Then upon great Consultation had betwixte the two Earles, and the others in Commission, it was granted to hir, what shee instantly before earnestly intreated, and desired hir to make Choice of six of her best beloved Men and Women. Then of hir Men shee chose *Meluin*, hir Apothecary, hir Surgion, and one old Man more, and of hir Women, those two which did lye in hir Chamber. Then with an unappalled Countenance, without any Terror of the Place, the Persons, or the Preparations, shee came out of the Entrye into the Hall, stept upp to the Scaffold, being two Foote high, and twelve Foote broad, with Rayles round about, hanged and covered with black, with a lowe Stoole, longe fayre Cushion, and a Blocke covered also with blacke. The Stoole brought her, shee sat downe; the Earle of *Kent* stood on the Right Hande, and the Earle of *Shrewsbury* on the other; other Knights and Gentlemen stood about the Rayles: The Commission for hir Execution was redd (after silence made) by Mr. *Beale*, Clark of the Counsell, which done, the People with a loude Voice sayde, God save the Queen. During the reading of this Commission, the sayde Queen was very silent, listning vnto it with so careles a Regard, as if it had not concerned hir at all nay, rather with so merry and cheerfull a Countenance, as if it had been a Pardon from hir Majestie for hir Life, and with all used such a strangenes in her Wordes, as if shee had not knowne any of the Assembly, nor had been any Thing seene in the *English* Tongue.

Then Mr. Doctor *Fletcher*, Deane of *Peterborough*, standing directly before hir without the Rayles, bending his Bodye with great reverence, vttered this Exhortation followinge.

"Madame, the Queen's Most Excellent Majestie (whom God

preserve longe to reigne over us,) havinge (notwithstanding this Preparation for the Execution of Justice justly to be done vpon you, for your many Trespases against hir Sacrid Person, State, and Government) a tender Care over your Sowle, which presently departing out of your Bodie, must either be seperated in the trew Fayth in Christe, or perish for ever, doth for Jesus Christe offer vnto you the comfortable Promises of God, wherein I beseech your Grace, even in he Bowells of Jesus Christe to consider these three Things.

"First, your State paste, and transitory glorie: Secondly, your Condition present of deathe: Thirdly, your Estate to comme, eyther in everlasting Happines, or perpetuall infelicitye. For the first, lett me speake to your Grace, with *David* the King, forgett (Madam) yourfelfe, and your owne People, and your Father's House; forgett your natural Birthe, your royal and princely Dignitie, so shall the King of Kings have Pleasure in your spirituall bewtye, &c.

"Madam, even now, Madam, doth God Almightye open yow a Doare into a heavenly Kingdom; shutt not therefore this Passage by the hardening of your Hart, and grieve not the Spirit of God, which may seale your Hope to a Day of Redemption."

The Queen 3 or 4 tymes sayde unto him, "Mr. *Deane*, trouble not yourself nor me; for know that I am settled in the auncient Catholique and *Romaine* Religion, and in Defence thereof, by God's Grace I minde to spend my Bloud."

"Then," said Mr. *Deane*, "Madam, change your Opinion, and repent you of your former Wickednes: Settle your Faythe only upon this Grounde, that in *Christ Jesus* yow hope to be saved." She answered agayne and agayne, with great Earnestness, "Good Mr. *Deane*, trouble not yourself any more about this Matter; for I was borne in this Religion, have lived in this Religion, and am resolved to die in this Religion."

Then the Earles, when they saw how farr unconformable she was to hear Mr. *Deane's* good Exhortations, sayde, "Madam, we will praye for your Grace with Mr. *Deane*, that you may have your Minde lightned with the trew Knowledge of God and his Worde."

"My Lordes," answered the Queen, "if yow will praye with me, I will even from my Harte thanke you, and think myselfe greatly favoured by you; but to joyne in prayer with you in your Manner, who are not of one Religion with me, it were a Sinne, and I will not."

Then the Lordes called Mr. *Deane* agayne, and badd him saye on,

or what he thought good els : The Deane kneeled and prayed, as follows : *Oh most gracious God, &c.*

All the Assembly, save the Queen and her Servants, sayde the Prayer after Mr. *Deane* as he spake it, during which Prayer, the Queen sat upon her Stoole, having her *Agnus Dei*, Crucifix, Beades, and an Office in Lattyn. Thus furnished with superstitious Trumpery, not regarding what Mr. *Deane* sayde, she began very fastly with Teares and a lowde Voice to pray in *Lattin*, and in the Midst of hir Prayers, with over much Weeping and Mourning slipt off hir Stoole, and kneeling presently sayde divers other *Lattin* Prayers. Then she, rose and kneeled down agayne, praying in *English* for Christ's afflicted Church, an end of hir Troubles, for hir Sonne, and for the Queen's Majestye, to God for Forgiveness of the Sinnes of them in this Islande : She forgave hir Enemyes with all her Harte, that had longe fought hir Bloud. This done she desired all Saints to make Intercession for hir to the Saviour of the World, *Jesús Christ*. Then she began to kifs hir Crucifix, and to Crofs herself, saying these Wordes : "Even as thy Arms, oh *Jesu Christ*, were spread here upon the Crofs, so receive me, so receive me into the Armes of Mercy."

Then the 2 Executioners kneeled downe unto hir, desiring hir to forgive them hir Death : Shee answered, "I forgive you with all my Harte ; for I hope this Death shall give an end to all my Troubles."

They, with her 2 Weomen helping, began to disroabe hir, and then she layde the Crucifix upon the Stoole. One of the Executioners, took from her Neck the *Agnus Dei*, and she layde hold of it, saying, she would give it to one of hir Weomen, and withall told the Executioner that he should have Monye for it. Then they took off her Chayne, she made herself unready with a kind of Gladness, and smiling, putting on a payre of Sleeves with her owne Handes, which the twoo Executioners before had rudely put off, and with such Speed, as if shee had longed to be gone out of the Worlde.

During the Disroabing of this Queen she never altered hir Countenance ; but smiling, said, she never had such Groomes before to make hir unreadye, nor ever did putt off hir clothes before such Company, At lengthe unattired and unapparelled to hir Petticoate and Kirtle, the 2 Women burst out into a great and pittifull Shrieking, crying, and lamentation, crossed themselues, and prayed in *Lattine*. The Queen turned towards them, embraced them, and sayed these Words in *French*, *Ne cry vous j'ay praye pur vous*, and so crossed, and kissed them, and bad them praye for her.

Then with a smiling Countenance she turned to her Men Servants, *Meluin*, and the rest, crossed them, bad them farewell, and pray for hir to the last.

One of the Weomen having a *Corpus Christi* Cloathe, lapped it up three Corner wise, and kissed it, and put it over the Face of the Queen, and pynned it fast vpon the Caule of hir Head. Then the 2 Weomen departed. The Queen kneeled downe on the Cushion resolutely, and without any Token of Fear of Death, sayde allowde in Latine, the Pfalme, *In te domine confido*: Then groaping for the block, shee layde down hir Head, putting hir cheane over hir backe with bothe hir hands, which holding there still, had been cut off, had they not been espyed. Then she laid herself upon the blocke most quietly, and stretching out hir Armes and Leggs, cryed out, *In Manus tuas, Domine, commendo Spiritum meum*, 3 or 4 times.

Att last while one of the Executioners held hir streightly with one of his Hands, the other gave two Stroakes with an Axe before he did cut off hir Head, and yet left a little gristle behinde.

She made very small Noyse, no Part stirred from the Place where shee laye. The Executioners lifted upp the Head, and bad *God save the Queen*. Then her dressing of Lawne fell from hir Head, which appeared as graye as if she had been threescore and ten Years olde, powled very shorte, her Face much altred, her Lippes stirred upp and downe almost a Quarter of an Hower after hir Head was cutt off. Then said Mr. Deane, *So perish all the Queenes Enemyes*. The Erle of Kent came to the dead Body, and with a lower Voice sayde, *Such end happen to all the Queenes and Gospells Enemyes*.

One of the Executioners plucking off her Garters, espyed her little Dogg, which was crept vnder her Cloathes, which would not be gotten forth but with Force; and afterwards would not departe from the dead Corps, but came and layde between hir Head and Shoulders, a Thing much noted. The Dogg, embrewed in her Bloud, was carryed awaye and washed, as all things else were that had any Bloud, save those Things which were burned.

The Executioners were sent awaye with Money for their Fees, not having any one thing that belonged vnto her.

Afterwards every one was commanded forth of the Hall, saving the Sheriff and his Men, who carryed hir upp into a great Chamber, made ready for the Surgeons to embalme hir, and there she was embalmed.

And thus, I hope, (my very good Lord) I have certified your

Honour of all Actions, Matters, and Circumstances, as did proceed from hir, or any other att hir Death : Wherein I dare promise vnto your good Lordship (if not in some better or worse Wordes then were spoken I am somewhat mistaken) in matter, I have not any Whitt offended : Howbeit, I will not so justifie my Duties herein, but that many things might well have been omitted, as not worthy notinge. Yet, because it is your Lordship's Faulte to desire to know all, and so I have certyfied all, it is an Offence pardonable, so resting at your Honors further Commandment, I take my leave this 11th of *February*, 1586.

*Your Honour's, in all humble Service to Command.*

R. W.



"Inter Folia Fructus."

# Twenty Looks

OVER ALL THE

## ROUND-HEADS

That ever lived in the World.



"HISTORY IS BUT THE UNROLLED SCROLL OF PROPHECY."

—JAMES A. GARFIELD.



PRIVATELY PRINTED  
FOR THE CLARENDON HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

1886.

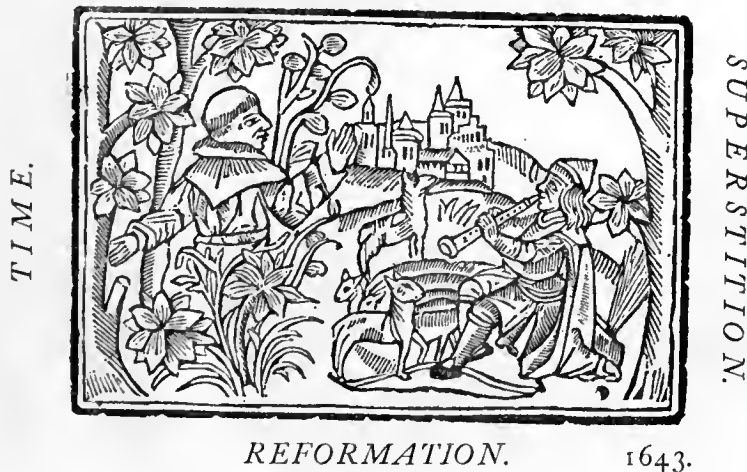
*This edition is limited to 120 large paper and 400 small paper copies,  
for Subscribers only.*



TVVENTY  
LOOKES

Over all the  
ROVND-HEADS  
that ever lived in the World.

- |                                    |                                     |
|------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>Heathenish Round-heads.</i>  | 11. <i>English Round-heads.</i>     |
| 2. <i>Round-head Vowers.</i>       | 12. <i>Essex Round-heads.</i>       |
| 3. <i>Aged Round-heads.</i>        | 13. <i>Women Round-head.</i>        |
| 4. <i>Dauids Round-heads.</i>      | 14. <i>Court Round-heads.</i>       |
| 5. <i>Round-head Mourners.</i>     | 15. <i>Round-head Cat.</i>          |
| 6. <i>Israelitish Round-heads.</i> | 16. <i>Round-head Friers.</i>       |
| 7. <i>Round-head Corinthians.</i>  | 17. <i>Round-head Citizens.</i>     |
| 8. <i>Golgothan Round Heads.</i>   | 18. <i>Strange Round-heads.</i>     |
| 9. <i>Feminish Round-Heads.</i>    | 19. <i>Round-head Seperatists.</i>  |
| 10. <i>Oxford Round-heads.</i>     | 20. <i>Round-heads of the time.</i> |







## TWENTY LOOKES

OVER ALL THE

## ROUNDHEADS

IN THE WORLD.

---

### 1. *Heathenish Round-heads.*

THE first Round-heads that I have read of, were the Heathen in the land of Canaan, whose manner was, to cut their locks round, as some doe now, hanging equally to one proportion about their heads: but the Lord commanded the Israelites, that they should not transforme nature, but cut their haire according to the fashion that God had made it to grow; and therefore charged them not to round their heads, nor shave off their muchatoes, Lev. 19. 27. By these Round-heads is meant such as is when the lockes are cut round, as *Tindall* translates it.

### 2. *Round-head Vowvers.*

There was a custome in the old Law, to dedicate a mans selfe to God by a vow for a certaine time; and whosoever did cut and trim the haire of their head in pride, during the time of that vow, were termed Round-heads; and therefore the Lord forbad them so to doe. Num. 6. 5. The Lord forbad them to cut their lockes during the time of the vow.

### 3. *Aged Round-heads.*

Sometimes the crowne of the head is bare by reason of age, when the haire of the gray head fall off, and so leave a round baldnesse on the top of the head, as *Elias* his head was, by reason of which a company of unruly boyes mocked him, and called him Round-head, or bald-pate.

## 6 The Clarendon Historical Society Reprints.

But we may read in 2 Kings 2. at the latter end, immediately two and fourty of those boyes were torne in peeces by two beares which God sent amongst them out of the wood, which could not chuse but bee a heavie spectacle to their parents and friends when they came and saw their children torne in peeces, and pulled into morsels bit by bit by the cruell beares.

### 4. *David's Round-heads.*

The messengers of *David*, that were sent to *Hanun* King of Ammon, were shaven and made Round-heads: for the Kings Counsell had perswaded him to deride them in great scorn of the children of Israel the people of God, when as they were sent from *David* with an intent to prepare a way for *David* to doe good to the children of Ammon; which by reason of this their derision of the people of God, it brought upon them a great overthrow, when *David* was hereby stirred up to come against them, as it is 1. Chron. 19. These had their haire shaved off quite round.

### 5. *Round-head Mourners.*

There was a custome in the Judaicall Law to shave the crowne of the head in time of mourning, as the Friars doe now; which ceremony is at this time superstitious. Thus did *Job* round his head when he saw himself in that sudden great affliction, Job. 1. 20.

### 6. *Israelitish Round-heads.*

The Prophet *Ezay* told the Israelites, that God would make them round-heads by shaving all the haire off from their heads, &c. Isai. 7. 20. They had highly offended God, and therefore this judgement was denounced against them, meaning the taking away of their nobles and rulers by the shaving of the head.

### 7. *Round-head Corinthians.*

There is a decent wearing of short haire, such as Citizens and civill men weare, which was derided and scorned of some shag-hair'd Ruffians amongst the Corinthians; which *Paul* reproves them for so deriding the decent wearing of the haire, and exhorts those that scorned them for it, to cut their haire short also, as it is 1 Cor. 11. at the beginning. I wonder how such shag Ruffians dare now scorn at the decent wearing of haire, when indeed themselves are the *Abfolonians*

that provoke the Lord to curse the land for their foolish pride, and wanton wearing of love-lockes and unseemly haire, (I had almost said periwig.)

8. *Golgotha Round-heads.*

In the Gospel we find a place called Golgotha, that is, dead mens sculls, the round sculls of dead men, Joh. 19. 17, whither our blessed Lord and Saviour was led to be crucified; and happy are those round-heads that receive the benefit of his blood, and rise to glory by the vertue of his resurrection.

9. *Feminish Round-heads.*

In the reigne of Henry 1. the Englishmen shaved off their beards, and made their faces smooth like women, and let their haire grow round their heads in its full length, wherein they gloried, contending with women who should bee the most absolute feminine Round-head. *Lib. Dunelm.*

10. *The Oxford Round-heads.*

In the reigne of Henry 3. King of England, there were divers Oxford schollars who flew their chiefe cooke at Osney Abbey: for which fact 12. of them went bare-head from Pauls Church in London to the Abbey to doe penance, for which they were derided a long time after. *Mat. Par. Ypodigm.* These were called the Round-heads of Oxford. *L.D.*

11. *English Round-heads.*

In the reigne of Edward 3. the English men used to weare their haire cut short, round their heads: but after that King John of France was taken and brought over into England, it grew a fashion (in a short time) for men to weare long haire over their shoulders, and those that went after the old English decent manner, were called Round-heads. *Stow.*

12. *Essex Round-heads.*

In the dayes of Richard 2. the heads of the Jurors in Essex were chopped off by the countrey that rose against them in that rebellion, *Chro. Ma. Lo.* but some of them were executed for their labours, as traytors.

13. *Women Round-heads.*

About this time also those women were derided as much as men are now by the name of Round-heads, except they wore, as the fashion then was, high attire on their heads, picked like hornes. *Stow.*

14. *Court Round-heads.*

In the dayes of *Henry 8.* it being a fashion to weare long haire, and for men to shave their beards quite off, King *Henry* therefore commanded all about this Court to weare their hair short. And to give them an example, he caused his owne head to be polled, and from thenceforth his beard to be notted, and no more shaven. *Chro. 1. Brist.*

15. *Round-head Cat.*

In the Reigne of Queene *Mary* (at which time popery was greatly exalted) then was Round-heads so odious by them, that in derision of them was a Cat taken on the sabbath day, with her head shorne, and the likenesse of a vestment cast over her, with her feet tied together, and a round piece of paper like a singing cake betwixt them; and thus was she hanged on the gallows in Cheape-side, neere to the Crosse, in the Parish of Saint *Mathew*; which Cat being taken downe, was carried to the Bishop of London, and he very reverently sent it to Doctor *Pendleton* (who then was preaching at Pauls Crosse) for a present, commanding it by him to bee showne to the congregation. *Row. Lea.* The Round-head Fryers cannot abide to heare of this Cat.

16. *Round-head Fryers.*

About the same time, there was a company of Round-head Fryers, in London, who had plotted a notable peece of knavery, and had got one *Elizabeth Crofts*, a maid about 18. years of age, to counterfeit certaine speeches in a wall of an house, without Aldersgate, where they had made her a convenient place for performing that falacy, through the which the people of the City were wonderfully molested, for that all men might heare the voyce, but not see her person; some said it was an Angell, and a voice from heaven; some said it was the holy Ghost, &c. This was called the spirit in the wall; she lay there playing in a strange whistle, made for that purpose, which was by them given to her: *idem*, and they forged constructions of her voyce, which was at last found out, and she confest it openly at *Pauls Crosse*.

17. *Round-head Citizens.*

In these latter times, the shagge head Cavalliers, wearing all long haire, and the Citizens of London cutting their haire short round about their heads, there being so great a controversie between the

Cavalliers and the Citizens, to the end that they might make the Citizens ominous, they branded them, with a resolution among themselves to strive that they might every where be called Round-heads, and therefore spread an univerfall tearme and appellation on all that cut their haire short, to bee called Round-heads, which quickly was every where spread up and downe the Country.

18. *Strange Round-heads.*

This terme of Round-heads became so great a name on a suddaine here in England, that the Kingdome (in most part) and indeed every where most people, wondred what these Roundheads should be; imagining that they were some new sect that was sprung up.

19. *Round-head Seperatists.*

People pausing, and imagining what these Round-heads were, in the end it was taken for granted, that Brownists, Anabaptists, &c. and such like, whose braines say they run round from one schismaticall opinion to another, and is never fixed, are the Round-heads.

20. *The Round-heads of the time.*

But now if a man have any religion in him, then (say they) he is a Round-head, if he professe the truth heartily, then hee is branded for a Round-head; he that is no swearer, curser, cheater, drunkard, whooremaster, quarreller, he is scandalized with the name of a Round-head; he that abhorreth Atheisme, hates idolatry, useth only yea, and nay, in his communication, keepes the Sabbath, loves the King, and Parliament, and is courteous, charitable, chaste and modest; these are the men whom the blades of our time braid with the name of Round-heads, and indeed every honest man is now call'd Round-head.

*As Papists call us Heriticks, so Atheists Round-heads make us,  
Let them joy in their Periwigs, for Rome shall never take us.*







"Inter Folia Fructus."

THE  
**Memoirs**  
OF  
**GEORGE LEYBURN.**  
BEING  
*A JOURNAL OF HIS AGENCY FOR PRINCE  
CHARLES IN IRELAND IN THE YEAR  
1647.*

"HISTORY IS BUT THE UNROLLED SCROLL OF PROPHECY."

—JAMES A. GARFIELD.

——  
PRIVATELY PRINTED  
FOR THE CLARENDON HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

1886.

*This edition is limited to 120 large paper, and 400 small paper copies,  
for Subscribers only.*

THE  
MEMOIRS  
OF  
*GEORGE LEYBURN.*

Doctor of Divinity, Chaplain to *Henrietta Maria*  
QUEEN of *ENGLAND.*

BEING

A Journal of his Agency for Prince *CHARLES* in *Ireland* in the  
Year 1647.

Accompanied with Original Instructions and Letters to  
the Author, from Prince *Charles*, Queen-Mother, the Duke of  
*Ormond*, Lord *Digby*, Lord *Clanriccard*, the Pope's Nuncio, &c.

---

*Publiſh'd without the leaſt Alteration from the Original in the Author's  
own Hand.*

---

To which is prefix'd,

An Account of the Author's Life, with his Remarkable  
Prediction concerning General *Monck*, and the Reſtoration of  
King *CHARLES* the Second, mention'd by Dr. *Thomas Gumble*,  
in the LIFE of that great General.

---

L O N D O N: Printed for W. L E W I S near the Piazza in Covent Garden.  
M D C C X X I I.





## An Account of the Author's Life.



DR. *George Leyburn* was born in *Westmoreland* of a very ancient Family, known in those Parts a considerable time before the Conquest, and which afterwards was distinguish'd by several honourable Alliances, especially with the *Dacre's* and *Norfolk's*. The Estate belonging to the Family was formerly very considerable, but by Degrees much impair'd by Heireffes; and in Queen *Elizabeth's* Days it was still more reduced, by the unfortunate Circumstances of *James Leyburn, Esq*; who was executed at *Lancaster March 22, 1583*. *George Leyburn* was Born in the Year 1597, and sent very young to Study in the *English* College in *Doway*, where he was enter'd a Member of that House *March 13. 1617*, under the Name of *George Bradley*. He made a considerable Progress in all Sorts of Learning, and *June 12. 1618*, answer'd to his two Years Labour in Philosophical Studies, under the celebrated Professor *Thomas White*, otherwise *Blackloe*. Having run thro' two Years of Theological Learning, he undertook to teach a Lesson of Humanity, which Employment he began in *October 1620*, and having perform'd it some Years with singular Applause, he reassum'd his Theological Studies and compleated 'em; during which Time he receiv'd the Order of Priesthood, viz. *August 5. 1625*. In 1627, having laid in a good Stock of Divine Learning, he was desirous to polish it, and improve himself somewhat farther in the famous University of *Paris*, for which Place he set out from *Doway, November 3*, the Year above-mention'd. Here he remain'd two or three Years, and became a noted Tutor in *Arras* College. Afterwards being invited over into *England*, he took *Doway* in his

Way, and began his Journey from thence *August* 29, 1630. He was soon admitted to the Queen's \* Prefence, made one of her Chaplains and Favourites. Some Disturbances happening in the Queen's Family on Account of Religion, the *English* Chaplains were obliged to abscond. It was Mr. *Leyburn's* Misfortune to be apprehended and confin'd. He was design'd to be prosecuted, but by the Queen's Means it was exchanged into Banishment. And now he was again resolved to make a further Progress in Theological Studies, and settling at *Doway*, he spent some Years in teaching Philosophy and Divinity. It was during this Time that he took a Journey to the University of *Rheims*, where he completed the Degree of Doctor of Divinity, and was invited by the Arch-Bishop, at the Head of a Provincial Synod, to answer to his A&t in their Prefence, which Piece of Honour he refus'd with remarkable Modesty. Desiring soon after to return into *England*, which was about the breaking out of the Civil Wars, he found every Thing in great Confusion; and had not been there long before he was taken up and committed to the Tower. It was about 1644, when he became acquainted with Colonel *Monck*, then a Prisoner in the same Place for adhering to the Royal Cause. I must not omit some remarkable Passages which happen'd between these two, and which are related by Dr. *Thomas Gumble* † in his Life of General *Monck*, Page 119. Take 'em in the Author's own words. "*I must here crave leave to tell you a Story, and because none may believe it forg'd, for this Relator hath heard it above fifteen Years ago, and is able to bring good Testimony thereof; while General Monck was in the Tower, one Dr. Leyburn, a Professor in Divinity, and a Romish Priest, came often to see the General in the Tower, and it was upon some little Acquaintance which he had with him in the Company of Sir Thomas Cademan, the late Queen's Physician; some Friends of his ask'd this Leyburn (if I do not mistake his Name) why he gave himself the Trouble to visit this Monck so often. He replies, that within some Years that Person shou'd be the greatest Person of the three Nations, (and so he was for some Time before the King's Return); and long afterwards the same Person being at Supper with the General and other Friends, a little before his Expedition into Scotland with Cromwel, he publickly asserted at the Table, that he shou'd within six Months, or there-*

\* Henrietta Maria.

† Thomas Gumble, D.D., Chaplain to General Monck. "*The Life of Gen. Monck, Duke of Albemarle*, London, 1671, 8vo." In French, 1672, 12mo.—*The London Retrospective Review* (xiii., 265-277; and xiv., 153-179) says: "Curious as a specimen of the Tory or Royalist mode of writing History which prevailed during the period immediately following the Restoration."

abouts, be a General in the North, and within some Years shou'd command the three Nations. This indeed prov'd true, but by what Means this Leyburn pretended this Fore-knowledge I cannot imagine; I do not remember that he ever cast his Nativity; but some think that he took this up, from secret Lines and Marks in his Face; which wou'd render the Story very incredible, tho' the General had a Soldier-like and Majestick Countenance: But this is certain, that Leyburn came out of the Spanish Netherlands after his Majesty's Restoration, and visited the General; and also, that he did Prophecy of this long before: Now that such a vain Prediction should have any Influence upon the General's Faith, is to me very doubtful. I know he never listen'd to such vain Prognosticks. He told me this Story himself in Scotland." Thus far Dr. Gumble, who doubts not of the Fact, but is puzzl'd about the Manner. I have been assur'd by some, who were personally acquainted with Dr. Leyburn, that he was a Person of such extraordinary Piety and Regularity in his Conduct, that few were better intitl'd to the Secrets of Divine Providence, and it seems as much for the Credit of the Royal Cause to make Heaven busie on this Occasion, as to draw unaccountable Inferences from the Lines of the Face. But to proceed, when Dr. Leyburn had obtain'd his Liberty, he went over into France, where he was very serviceable to the Suffering Party. In the Year 1647, Prince Charles and Queen Mother engaged him to go over into Ireland, and report the real Grounds of the Misunderstandings between the two Confederate Roman Catholick Armies. This Journey being over, he drew up the Particulars of his Agency, to give the Prince and Queen a true Idea of their Affairs in Ireland. In 1648, Richard Smith, Bishop of Calcedon, residing then in Paris, appointed Dr. Leyburn to be his Vicar General in England, jointly with Mark Harrington alias Drury, Batchelor of Sorbon. Afterwards, upon the Decease of Dr. William Hyde, President of Doway College, our Author was install'd in that Place June 24, 1652, which he enjoy'd above eighteen Years, and resign'd to his Nephew John Leyburn, about the Middle of 1670, being at that time call'd up to Rome. He remain'd at Rome about a Year and a half, then returning into England, after having settled some Domestick Affairs, he took his leave of it, and spent the Remainder of his Days at Chaalons in Champaign, where he gave up his last Breath December the 29th, 1677, leaving behind him a Character becoming the Primitive Ages; and the Inhabitants of Chaalons to this Day pay a Respect to his Memory, little inferior to that of a canonized Saint. He was Doctor of Divinity of the University of Rheims, President of Doway College, Chaplain to the

Queen of England, Vicar General to the Bishop of Calcedon, and Agent to Prince Charles in Ireland. He was learned, pious, and warm with Zeal, both in Publick and Domestick Concerns. He had been twice a Prisoner, and as often Banish'd. His Life was attended with several Controversies, and Contradictions, which he always made a Hand of to his Improvement in Virtue, and the worst Part of his Character was that of being obstinately Good. Tho' he did not affect appearing in Print, yet he has left some Instances of his Abilities in that Way, *viz.*

1. An Encyclical Epistle to his Brethren.
2. Holy Characters.

3. As to the present Performance it has been reserv'd in Manuscript ever since 1648; now what Credit may be given to him in Regard of the Subject he treats of, may be learnt from these Words of the Lord Clanriccard in Ireland, to Sir John Winter the Queen's Secretary at Paris. "*From this worthy Bearer you may be pleas'd to receive a very clear and perfect Account, both of Persons and Actions here; and his known Piety, and settl'd Zeal to the Service of their Majesties, does most justly deserve a special favourable Regard and firm Belief.*" This Letter of Credence was written by Lord Clanriccard, General of the Confederate Catholics in Ireland for the King, and brought over by Dr. Leyburn, the Original whereof is in my Custody. And what Character is here given of our Author, I believe the History it self will make good, to which I remit the Reader.\*

---

\* Of the 3 works here named, only the last is mentioned by Alibone.







## A Preface.



IN this following Discourse, being accidentally and hastily written for my own Instruction, and the Satisfaction of those, who in that Employment had Authority to take an Account and judge of my Actions ; I have willingly omitted all Circumstances whatsoever, that did not precisely tend to those Ends ; setting down nothing but Matters of Fact. But now that I meet with some Friends, who having heard of this Manuscript, desire to see it, willing, as it seems, to be guided out of those Mazes, into which the Discourses and Reports of several Factions have engaged them, concerning the Passages and Transactions of Things in the Kingdom of *Ireland*, I have thought fit, as well as my Memory will permit me, by way of Preface, to set down so much of the State of that Country, at my Arrival thither, as may serve for the better Understanding of this following Relation ; which, when all is done, whether or no it will give them the Satisfaction they desire, I know not ; and if in the Computations of some Things, as Places, Numbers of Men, or the like, I shall be mistaken, they must pardon me ; for I undertake no exact Description, but only to say so much, as may give a Reader the better means to judge of the whole Matter, and neither indeed at my being there, did I clog my Memory with the Observation of such Things, being more intent on the Business I had then in Hand, than on the Consideration of Matters not so necessary.

*Ireland*, which I judge to be, at least, as great as *England*, take off *Wales* and *Cornwall*, is divided into four Provinces, *Leinster*,\* *Munster*,

---

\* This, throughout the original, is spelt *Leimster*.

*Connaught*, and *Ulster*: In the whole, there were three Parties openly declared against each other, in this manner commanded. The first, by my Lord Marquiss of *Ormond*, Governor of the Kingdom for the King, under the Title of Lord Lieutenant. The second, by that which they called the Supreme Counsell of the Confederate Catholics. The third, by those three (as I conceive, independant of each other) the Lord of *Insequeen*, Sir *Charles Coute*, and Colonel *Monroe*, all under the *English* Parliament, though the last had a more immediate Relation to his Country-men the *Scotts*. The Lord Lieutenant was posses'd in *Leinster* of *Dublin*, the principal City of the Kingdom (and equal to any other I have seen in *England*, except *London*) with the adjacent Territory, some ways twenty, some ways thirty Miles about it; in which he had all the Sea Ports on that Coast, with divers Garrisons, as *Tredaugh*, *Trim*, *Carlow*, and others, out of which he could draw some 2000 Foot, whereof, as I believe, the most part were Catholics, and some 400 Horse, most Protestants, and the Commanders, for the greater part, if not all Protestants, *English* or *Scotts*. Besides those, he had then received from the Parliament of *England*, as I take it, three Regiments of Foot, whereof there were two quartered in *Dublin*, the third in *Trim* and *Tredaugh*; as also some Quantity of Ammunition.

The Supreme Council of the Confederate Catholics were posses'd of all the rest of *Leinster*, in Quantity of Ground, as I guess, three parts of four, wherein *Wexford*, *Rose*, and *Kilkenny*, were the most considerable places; with all the Ports, but those in my Lord of *Ormond's* Quarters. I think likewise, they had much about the same Proportion in *Munster*, with those chief Towns *Waterford*, *Limerick*, and *Clonmell*; with many other Towns and Castles; all the Ports up to *Youghall*: They were likewise posses'd of almost all *Connaught*, with *Galloway* the principal Town and Haven, and all the others except *Sligo*. In *Ulster*, the greatest Province in *Ireland*, they had few Places, except *Charlamont*, and some Castles on the Borders of *Connaught*, though from thence came most of their best Foot under *Oneale* their General for that Province. They had, not long after my coming thither, on foot those Forces, under *Preston* their General for *Leinster*, betwixt six or seven thousand Foot, and one thousand Horse, as I verily believe by the Poll. In *Munster*, under my Lord of *Worcester*, who commanded with the King's Commission, though with their Consent, against my Lord *Insequeen*, five or six thousand Foot, and near one thousand Horse: In *Ulster*, and upon

the Borders of *Leinster* and *Connaught* under *Oneale*, nine or ten thousand Foot and Horfe.

My Lord of *Insequeen*, by the Parliament made President of *Munster*, was in that Province possess'd of *Youghall*, *Kinsale*, and *Corke*, with some other places adjoining; and about as much Territory (as I can guess, having never been there) as my Lord of *Ormond* had in *Leinster*: He was able, out of his Garrisons, to draw into the Field some 5000 Foot, almost all *English*; and some eight hundred or a thousand Horfe, *English*.

Sir *Charles Coote*, by the Parliament made President of *Connaught*, was possess'd in that Province of *Sligo* a Port Town, and *Coleraine*, otherwise called *Londonderry*, with some places on the Borders of *Ulster*. He could make two or three thousand Foot *English* and *Irish*, and some two hundred ill Horfe.

Colonel *Monroe* commanded in *Ulster* for the Parliament, and was in that Province possess'd of *Knockfergus*, *Carickfergus*, and divers others Places: He could draw into the Field three or four thousand Foot, all *Scotts* or *Scottish Irish*, of which there are many Inhabitants of that Country, and some two or three hundred Horfe. Those were the several Parties, or Factions, with their Leaders: These the Places, Territories, and Quarters of which they stood severally possess'd; and these the Forces, they could upon Occasion draw into the Field, at my Arrival in *Ireland*.

And now for the Reader's better understanding, it remains that I briefly, and historically say something of every one of them. And first, of the Marquis of *Ormond*. He, one of the noblest of the old *English* Families, and by King *James* his Command, taken from his Father, brought into *England* young, under *Abbots*, Bishop of *Canterbury* bred a Protestant, after returned into *Ireland*, and there settled, was by the late King *Charles*, about the Year 1645, made Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*; that Kingdom, during the Interval from my Lord of *Strafford's* Death, having been governed by Commissioners, and Those managing things there totally according to the Parliament Interest, gave the King cause to remove them, placing my Lord of *Ormond* in that Government, who receiving the Command of the *English* Army, made War for some time sharply and successfully on his Countrymen, the *Irish* Confederate Catholics, until the Civil War broke out in *England*, between the King and his Parliament. The King finding on the one side that the Money he had consented should be raised for the War of *Ireland*, was employed against himself;

and on the other, needing the Assistance of that Army, caused my Lord Lieutenant to make a Cessation with the *Irish*, and so drew all, or the greatest Part, of those Forces over to him. After which, the Cessations were continued from time to time, until (after the Battle of *Nashy*, where the Blow was so fatal, as the King could no longer make Head against the Parliament) a Peace was concluded between my Lord Lieutenant of the one Part for the King, and four or five Commissioners on the other Part for the *Irish*: Which Peace was no sooner made than broken; the Nuncio, then residing there for the Pope, with the Clergy, protesting against it, and excommunicating all the Adhearers to it, with whom in time joined all the considerable Towns and Castles in *Ireland*, that were not actually in the Possession of the Lord Lieutenant, or the Parliament; and generally speaking, all the People Catholick, who were not otherwise overawed by living within the Quarters of one, or the other; only some of the Nobility and Gentry, as also of the Clergy excepted, induced thereunto, either by their Allegiance to the King, my Lord of *Ormond's* Interest in the Nation, or lastly, Aversion to, and Fear of *Oneale* and the old *Irish*; so as my Lord Lieutenant's Heralds, sent to Proclaim the Peace, were at *Limerick*, the principal Town of *Munster*, beaten and wounded; and himself, attended with some two thousand Foot, and four hundred Horse, thinking by his Authority, so accompanied, to make good the Peace, was, by the Appearance of *Mac-Thomas*, at a distance, in the head of the *Leinster* Horse (from whom he received no satisfactory Answer) and the notice of *Oneale's* march towards him with his Army, forced in great Trouble and Disorder to make his Retreat to *Dublin*; where, expecting a Siege, he presently endeavoured to strengthen himself, within by Fortifications, without by destroying the Country towards the Confederate Quarters, which the *Irish*, by their slow Proceedings, gave him Opportunity enough to do; who some three or four Months after, in the middle of Winter, approached *Dublin* with two Armies under the Commands of *Oneale* and *Preston*, independant of each other; when the Marquis of *Clanrichard*, a Catholick, and the greatest Person of *Ireland*, after the Lord Lieutenant, with whom he was then in *Dublin*, offered to treat, which accepted by *Preston* and his Officers, an Agreement was made and Sworn to, but not perfected by present Execution of the Things agreed, so that it came to nothing; for which my Lord Lieutenant accused *Preston* of too little Care of his Word, and too much Fear of the Nuncio and Clergy; and he again, my Lord, of Subtilty, in set-

ting Division amongst them, and Delay in performing Things to be done on his Part ; whereby, through the Unseasonableness of the Weather, and Want of all things, he was forced to retreat, his Army dissolving of it self. And now the King having put himself into the *Scotts* Hands, with whom he treated, my Lord of *Ormond* did so too ; for surrendering up his Authority, and those Places under his Command into the Power of the *English* Parliament of the same Faction ; during the time of which Negotiation, he was content, for his better Defence against the *Irish*, to receive some Number of Parliament Foot into his Garisons, with certain Quantities of Ammunition, for which, and for Performance of Articles agreed on, or to be agreed on, he delivered his Son, my Lord of *Offory*, as a Hostage. Thus much concerning my Lord of *Ormond*.

And now to say something of the Supreme Counsel, or the Confederate Catholics, I must draw a little higher towards the Spring that so the Reader may the better judge of the whole. The predominant Faction in the *English* Parliament, knowing no so likely Impediment to the Designs they had in hand, as that which might proceed from the Catholick Party, which though not very great in *England*, in respect of their Numbers, yet was numerous in *Ireland*, the Hundredth *Irish* Man not being a Protestant, and abominating all of that Religion, had no so good Way to affright the King from making use of that Assistance, as by all Means they could possible, to thrust the *Irish* into Rebellion, and then to accuse the King, the Queen being a Catholick, as the Author of it ; from whence divers Things would follow. First, that they should, with the help of their *Scottish* Friends, have a good Occasion to destroy and extirpate that People, possessing themselves and their Party of their Lands ; as also, the Catholick Religion in the three Nations. Secondly, the King having this Principle infused into him, that Nothing was so necessary to his Safety, as the clearing himself and the Queen from that Imputation, would be so far from seeking Assistance that Way, as he should not dare to refuse joining with them, in such Acts of Parliament as they should propose to him, for the better perfecting those Designs ; provided, the Pretence were the repressing or punishing of that Rebellion, by which it would come to pass, that they would levy what Forces, or raise what Monies they pleased, which afterwards they might convert to what Use they thought fit ; and all this, as Things were disposed, was no hard Matter to compass : For, the *Irish* had not enjoyed such a pleasant Bondage under the *English*, but

that they had contracted Ill-will enough against their Masters, besides which, other Things contributed. First, The Example of the *Scotts* then marched into *England* against the King with an Army; the manifest Combination with them of the *English* Puritans, then highly Predominant, by Reason of other Circumstances, in the two Houses of Parliament; which, if prevailing, the Destruction of the *Irish* and Catholick Religion must follow. And as those Things, with other Circumstances, might give the most Reasonable amongst them Cause enough to be troubled; so wanted They no Provocation from Those, who sat then at the Helm of the Government, and were totally of the Parliament Faction. But as there is no Cruelty like that of Slaves, when they get the upper Hand; of which we have divers Examples, both *Roman*, *Grecian* and *Carthaginian*, so those People had no sooner shaken off their Fetters, but they did run hastily and furiously to all kind of bloody Executions; and as their Rebellion was without Order, so were their Actions without Measure; none that was called *English*, and was within Reach, escaping their Fury; nor in this first Heat was the Name of Catholick a Protection, but all went together; so that in *Ulster*, *Connaught*, some Part of *Munster*, and generally all Places without the *English* Pale, they either killed the *English*, or forced them to forsake their Habitations: After getting into Bodies, they assailed the Castles and Houses of such of their Catholick Country-men (which were in great Numbers) as would fain have been Quiet, and continued their Obedience to the *English* Government: Those petitioned the Council at *Dublin*, either to be protected, or to have Arms given them, whereby they might protect themselves; but being neglected, both in the one, and in the other, and fearing that the Faults of a Part, would be imputed to the Whole, and consequently the Innocent suffer with the Guilty; made thus desperate, they did for the most part join with the rest, as well those of *English* as *Irish* Extraction, amongst whom were many of very good Quality; and getting into some Form, raised Something like an Army, but were from time to time beaten by the *English*, though in far less Numbers, partly for Want of Arms and Ammunition, of which they were exceedingly destitute; partly, that they trusted more to their Heels than their Hands, which last may proceed of several Causes: As that no Servile Nation were ever good Soldiers, until Custom and Success had given them Spirit; that they are (it may be) the best Footmen in the World; that they have so many Bogs and Fastnesses well known unto them, by which they hope to escape; but

whatsoever the Reason was, they had almost ever the Worst of the *English*, even when they were better Officer'd, and wanted neither Ammunition nor Arms, until the King (as hath been formerly mentioned) called away that Army, which had, with his Consent, been employed against them by the Parliament; and which had more than sufficiently revenged all the Evils committed even by the most Guilty, leaving nothing of Cruelty, either on their Bodies, or Estates, unexecuted; this being the Difference, that the one was done by a rude headless Multitude; the other, by Soldiers under Order and Command. From the Beginning they had endeavoured to put themselves into a kind of Government, by assembling the Nation together, according to the Form before used in their Parliaments, brought in by the *English*, consisting of the Nobility, Clergy, and Commons; chusing Knights and Burgesses out of such Places as were of their Party, or not in the actual Possession of their Enemies: This Assembly made divers Acts or Ordinances, causing a Declaration to be printed, expressing the Motives of their taking Arms, wherein they mention the principal to be the Defence of the Catholick Religion, the King's just Prerogatives, his Person, and the Queen's, with their Liberties, &c. against the Puritans and Sectarists, &c. as may appear in their Declaration, set out in *May 1642*. To which was added, an Oath for all People to take to the same Purpose. They also formed that Body, which they called the Supreme Council of the Confederates, consisting of some of every State, Nobility, Clergy, and Commons, about four and twenty in Number, which during the Intervals of the Assemblies, had a kind of limited Government and Power, to call the Assembly on Occasion: In the mean time, as hath been said, their Armies had commonly the Worst; yet, my Lord of *Castlehaven*, their General for *Munster*, did them some good Services; as also, *Preslon* their General for *Leinster*, though the latter was overthrown by my Lord of *Ormond* in a great Battel near *Rosse*; which Misfortune, it may be, made them first think of employing *Oneale*, who before had been seen walking up and down *Kilkenny* alone and unconsidered; for even then the Supreme Council, whereof the major Part were old *English* Men of States and Fortunes, gotten by their Ancestors from the *Irish*, had no Mind that *Oneale*, or any of the ancient Possessors, should get into Command; but now, Necessity enforcing to make use of all Hands, and almost ashamed to deny him, who, beside the Antiquity of his Extraction, had the Fame of a very good Soldier, as having long served under the *Spaniard*, in Places of

considerable Command ; they made him their General of *Ulster*, then wholly possess'd by the *Scotts* and *English*, except *Charlemont*, which Sir *Philome Oneale*, in the Beginning of their Rebellion, had surprized and fortified. Notwithstanding which, he soon got an Army out of that Province, and some other Places ; very many of the old *Irish*, ranging themselves under him, and became so considerable, as not long after he durst encounter *Monroe*, General for the Parliament of that Province, and in a great Battel overthrew him, with very great Slaughter of his Men, and the taking all his Baggage. Not long before this, while these Things were in Agitation ; of the one Side a Nuncio was come from the Pope, who to that Purpose had been petitioned, by the whole Catholick Party of the Nation ; and on the other Side, the then Earl of Glamorgan, now Marquis of Worcester, with Commission and Instructions from the King, to advance and conclude a Peace with the *Irish*, with whom my Lord of *Ormond* had from time to time continued Cessations : Accordingly my Lord of *Worcester* proceeded so far, as he, for the King, and certain Commissioners appointed for that Purpose by the *Irish*, concluded a Peace ; whereby on the one Part, there was convenient Provision made for Catholick Religion, and Indemnity of the Nation : And on the other, an Army of *Irish* was to be levied, and sent for the King's Assistance into *England* ; the Conditions of which Peace were to be concealed ; the King, it seems, fearing that their untimely Revealing, might Prejudice him with his Protestant Subjects ; so that very few Copies of the Original being dispersed, yet it so happened, that one of them was found (as it was said) in the Archbishop of *Thune* his Pocket, slain by the *Scottish* Forces, and sent to the Parliament of *England* ; which coming to my Lord Lieutenant's Knowledge, the Earl of *Worcester*, ignorant of the Matter, was, by Letters, invited to *Dublin* ; where, accused by my Lord *Digby*, the King's principal Secretary, and then present, of having concluded that Peace without sufficient Authority, he was made Prisoner in the Castle of *Dublin*, and not long after releas'd upon a Bail of 40000*l.* to appear and answer the Accusation, whensoever he should be called ; the King in the mean Time, by his Declaration, disclaiming my Lord of *Worcester's* Act. After which the Cessations being continued from time to time, and certain Conditions for a Peace offered by my Lord of *Ormond*, an Assembly was called, where the greater Part of the Laity was for accepting those Conditions, though thereby Catholick Religion was not so provided for, as in the Peace made with my Lord of *Worcester* ; and though opposed by the



Nuncio, and most of the Clergy, yet was it carried in the Affirmative, that the Temporal Part of the Peace being Satisfactory, there should be no Mention of the Spiritual, but they would trust the King's Goodness ; rather making Choice of that, than to have the Abolition only of the Penal Laws expressed, which by the Lord Lieutenant was, in the King's Name offered ; and so some Plenipotentiary Commissioners were authorized to conclude, which the Nuncio finding himself not able to hinder, all he could obtain was, a Delay of the Signing and Sealing until *May* ; pretending that there was an Agreement made by the Pope, with the Queen of *England's* consent at *Rome*, which he hoped would be sent to him before that time, wherein the Splendor and Safety of Catholick Religion was more amply provided for, than it had been with the Conclusion made with the Earl of *Worcester*. But the Time prefix'd being come, and no News of the other Agreement from *Rome*, the Commissioners did Sign and Seal the Peace ; and all that followed thereon I mentioned before, this only excepted, that not long after, the Commissioners, who had signed the Peace, were accused of not having done their Duty, nor discharged their Trust, and therefore imprisoned ; and an Assembly being called, the Acts done by the Ecclesiastical Authority were confirmed, and the Peace voted invalid ; though at the same Time the imprisoned Commissioners were set at Liberty, and declared Innocent :

But now methinks the Reader should wonder at all those strange Turns ; nor will I undertake to satisfy him, in giving my Judgment of the Reasons, having resolved in the shortest Method I could, to set down only Matters of Fact ; from which yet, my hope is, I shall not be thought to vary, if I here relate, what I have heard the Nuncio, and those of his Party say, in their Justification : For, what hath been said on the other Side is in Print, lately written, as it is reported, by one Doctor *Calligan*, eloquently, and in very good Latin.

First, the Nuncio says, that the Pope, though he was from time to time informed of the merciless Proceedings of the *English* Parliament against the whole *Irish* Nation, for the tumultuous Rebellion of a Part ; thereby demonstrating, it was not so much their Fault, as their Religion, which they meant to punish ; yet he had no Intention otherwise to meddle in the Business, than by his Prayers for them, until his Aid and Assistance was importuned by the Vote of the whole Nation Catholick, which, as the Common Father of the Church, he could not deny.

That himself being chosen to this Imployment, all the Instructions he had from the Pope, tended to those two Ends: First, the Preservation and Increase of Catholick Religion; then, the settling the *Irish* Nation in their due Obedience to the King. Concerning which two Instructions, there was no Prudent Man, let him be of what Religion he will, but must believe the Pope did intend, the first should be first done.

That at his coming into *Ireland*, he found the *Irish* generally inclining to a Peace with the Royal Party; of which some considered the Interest of Religion more, and some less.

That for his Part, none desired that Peace more than he, being a main Part of his Instructions, provided that Religion were first provided for. That it was true, he had to the uttermost of his Power, together with the Clergy, opposed the Conclusion of that Peace, agitated in the Assembly of the *Irish*, *January* 1646, because by it there was no Provision at all for Religion, nor the Church; as also, that when he could not hinder the Vote made for it, he procured a Delay of the Signing and Sealing, until *May* following, and of the Publication until *July*, in Hopes that before that time, he should hear of some Agreement made between the Queen of *England*, and his Holiness at *Rome*, where it was then in Agitation, as he could make appear.

That my Lord Lieutenant being not to be perswaded from publishing the Peace, and attempting to second the Publication with Force, he had proceeded to Excommunication of all the Adherers to it, and opposed Force with Force.

That he was so far from denying or extenuating any Thing he had done, as he should neither have performed the Trust reposed in him, nor his Duty to the Pope and Catholick Religion, if he had done otherwise; to which, besides many other Reasons, those which principally induced him were,

That it was apparent to all such as had sought to inform their Understandings, concerning the modern Differences amongst Christians, that of all the Sects in Rebellion against the Government of the *Roman* Church, none hath been transported with so much Rancour and Malice to Catholicks and Catholick Religion, as those, to whose Heresies, *Calvin* gave a Beginning.

That the whole *Scottish* Nation, to speak generally, and the governing Part in the *English* Parliament, who at this Day both drive one and the same Interest, consist totally and absolutely of those Sectarists.

That the King hath always seconded his Hopes of being restored to his Rights, rather on an Agreement and Accord to be made with them, than either, Conquering or Beating them into their Duties ; as may appear by all his Proclamations, Declarations, and Messages so often sent for Treaties, and in the Treaties themselves.

That in all the Declarations and Messages sent from the Parliament, and in all those Treaties had been with the King, this Demand was principally insisted on, *viz.* the Distinction of Catholicks, and Catholick Religion, in *England* and *Ireland*, and in the last, under the Name of Rebels, in which, generally speaking, they would have included all the Catholick Natives, the Extirpation of the Nation : That as the Recovery of his Crown and Dignity, with the Preservation of his Church, was the King's principal Interest, so was he not to hope his attaining in any Degree to both, or either, by any Accord to be made with those Sectaries, but by consenting to divers their Demands, though never so much contrary to his Inclination and Justice ; of which, one and the principal, on which they did and would still insist, was the last above-mentioned concerning Catholicks.

That these Premises had been so well known to the King and his Ministers, as it had been the true Reason, why he would never treat of any Peace with his *Irish* Subjects, until the desperate Condition of his Affairs compelled him : Neither then would he treat or conclude with them in avowed or express Terms, concerning the Particular of Religion ; because he would not do, what he should again be forced to undo : And therefore did he send the Earl of *Worcester*, a great Nobleman of *England*, and a Catholick, into *Ireland*, with private Commissions and Instructions, authorizing him to make a clandestine Peace with the *Irish*, therein including their Satisfaction concerning Religion ; which if discovered, he might, at his Pleasure, disavow, as after it came to pass, when by the Accident of finding the Copy of that Peace in the Bishop of *Thurme's* Pocket, (if at least that Story be true) it came to his Parliament's Knowledge.

That this Means having failed, and his Affairs in *England* still pressing more and more, he made use of my Lord of *Ormond's* Power and Faction in the Kingdom, to force those that would not assent to such a Peace as he would have : Which Game my Lord of *Ormond* play'd so dexterously, especially, in making use of the Divisions, betwixt the Old and New *Irish*, thereby setting Catholick against Catholick, many preferring that Interest, before the Splendor and Dignity of their Religion, as that shameful Peace (to use his own

Words) was at last concluded, himself and the Clergy in vain opposing; besides a great Number of the Laity: Wherein, what shuffling, Breach of Promise, and Betraying of Trust had been used, would be too long to speak of. That the Motive, which had induced so many of the *Irish* Nobility and Gentry to vote that Peace, and which the Principal of that Faction used to persuade the others, was, that the King would make good those Conditions granted by the Earl of *Worcester*, with his Commissions and Authority, however he had been forced, for the Satisfaction of his other Protestant Subjects, openly to disavow them; and which was secretly implied by those Words in the Peace, of referring Conditions for Religion unto the King's good Will and Pleasure.

That before the Sealing, and long before the Publication of the Peace, the King had voluntarily cast himself into the Power and Mercy of the *Scottish* Army, where he was detained as a Prisoner, and thereby rendered incapable of the Power, if he had the Will, ever to satisfy that Expectation. To conclude, the Catholick *Irish*, that were a hundred for one Protestant, had always been so desirous of uniting themselves under the Royal Authority, as if his Majesty would in any Time, being at Liberty, and *Sui Juris*, have given his Royal Assent to their just Petitions and Demands for Religion, and their Churches, with what belonged unto them, they had so much Confidence in his Justice and Goodness, as they would have insisted on no other Security for the Thing granted, than his Royal Word and Promise: But now, that he had put himself into the Power of his, and their mortal Enemies, where he was Prisoner, and consequently unable to Protect them, and out of whose Hands he should never get, but by a Composition made to their Destruction; there was left no imaginable Way to secure any Accord should be made, but by giving them a Catholick Governor; such a one, as he himself should have just Reason to trust; of which he had many Noble *English* Men, and of them they would refuse none. For, as for my Lord of *Ormond*, they neither would, nor ever could think themselves secure under him; who if he were so valuable, as to be esteemed more than the Union of all that Nation under his Obedience; if through that, there came Inconvenience to his Affairs; it was not their Fault, the Law of God in Conservation of their Religion, not a Religion founded but Yesterday, in the Opinion of particular Men, but a Religion they had received from their Ancestors Time out of Mind; and the Law of Nature in preserving their Throats from Cutting, being above all other Laws

whatsoever. To all this my self did then make such Objections, as I could remember : As, that it was no Wonder, if the King were backward in relying or trusting on them, who had not only rebelled, but in their Rebellion had proceeded with such Cruelty against his *English* Protestant Subjects amongst them.

That the King, and all other *English*, had Cause to suspect General *Oneale*, and those that adhered to him, to have Design for Extirpation of the *English*, shaking off the Government, and drawing in the *Spaniard*.

That the King was no Enemy to Catholicks ; but being to rely upon his Protestant Subjects for Re-establisment into his Throne he durst not seem to favour them, but was forced to pretend to the Contrary.

That the Church of *England* purely considered, and abstracted from those other Sects, did agree in that which was Essential to *Catholic* Religion, in most of their Tenets, and did acknowledge herself to be descended from the *Catholicks*, and from them to have received both the Scriptures, and their Ordination of Bishops and Priests.

That it was not to be wonder'd at, if the King sought an Agreement with his Parliament, rather than to continue a Civil War, which must destroy so many of his Subjects, and of which the Event is always doubtful.

That concerning the King's Declaration against, and disavowing his Commissions given to the Earl of *Worcester* ; First, it was but a bare Affirmation of the Earl's, that the Commissions were such ; the Business passing only between the King and him. Secondly, those Commissions, were either all, or for the most Part, Blanks ; which if the Earl did fill up otherwise than he should, the King was not bound to justify ; and as the principal Reason that moved the King, to send him into *Ireland*, was, to appear in granting such Things concerning Religion, wherein my Lord of *Ormond* would not ; so was he not to do any Thing therein, but with my Lord of *Ormond*'s Knowledge and Consent.

That it was not strange, if when the King thought fit to make a Peace with the *Irish*, he ought to make such a one, as he thought might conduce, and be most advantageous to him, in the present Condition wherein he was, to which the Grants of their Demands for Religion in that Conjunction of Time, had been as he conceived, so destructive, as it would have made his other *Protestant* Subjects, fall from his Obedience, and leave to assist him in the Recovery of his

Regal Power, and Authority ; and therefore he made use of my Lord of *Ormond*, his Governor of that Kingdom, to produce such a Peace, as he might justify : In contriving of which, by all such Means, as his Interest in that Kingdom gave him, my Lord of *Ormond* had done but his Duty to the King in obeying his Orders and Commands, and to his own Conscience, being a *Protestant*, not to give his Consent, that the *Roman* Bishops and Clergy should be possess'd of the Churches, and Church Livings in *Ireland* ; and consequently, his own Bishops and Clergy excluded ; which was also the King's Care.

That the late Peace, advantageous, or disadvantageous, or however it was brought to pass, was on the one Side concluded by Authority of the great Seal of *England* ; and on the other, by the Assent of the major Part of the Votes, orderly taken in an Assembly of the *Irish* Nation, according to their own Constitutions ; by which, Power was given to those Commissioners of their own Choice, to conclude a Peace ; who according to the Commissions given them (which were extant) had proceeded ; which Peace so made, no after Accidents could invalidate, for so all Agreements, and Contracts made in the World, would be little to the Purpose : And therefore, the Allegations made of the King's putting himself into the Power of the *Scott's*, and the Consequences like to grow thereby, were not effectual.

That if they thought themselves unsecure under the Government of my Lord of *Ormond*, because he was a *Protestant*, which Objection might also be made against the King himself, how much more Cause had the King to doubt his own Security, being now in the Hands of his Parliament, if he should avowably give them a *Catholic* Governor ? And therefore they should do well, not to exact any such Thing from him, which he could not do, either with the Safety of his Crown or Person.

To all this it was replied, that as no Rebellion is justifiable, so was there never any more excusable than that of the *Irish*, for the Matter, though not for the Manner ; for their Rebellion was not against the King, but against their Fellow Subjects, and mortal Enemies to them, and to their Religion, who under the Name of a Parliament, had then actually in their Pay, an Army of *Scottish* Rebels ; by the Terror of which, they did as it were, hold a Dagger at the King's Throat, forcing his Consent to such pernicious Demands as they suggested to him : And for the Manner, as it was not defensible, so was it that, which all Governors must expect from Those, whom they hold in the

Nature of Slaves, and not of Subjects, which was the *Irish* Condition; which reckoning yet they had paid to the uttermost Farthing, the *English* Army sent thither by the Parliament, not only exceeding them in all inhuman Acts of Cruelty, but indeed all others that we have heard, or read of.

That General *Oncale* his Power, was wholly derived from the Nuncio and Clergy, from whom he principally received the Means of levying and paying his Men, who if they were satisfied in their Demands for Religion, he would yield to reasonable Conditions. And concerning that of bringing in the *Spaniard*, it was a Bugbear to affright Children; all wise Men being too well acquainted with the *Spanish* Condition at that Time, who had too much on his Hands already, to embroil himself with a new War; that being an Invention of the *French* Agents in the Kingdom of *Ireland*, who sought all they might to divert the King from putting himself on the Assistance of his *Catholick* Subjects, but rather to embrace that of the *Scotts*, their ancient Allies; as also, out of this Supposition, that the *Irish* and *English* Catholicks are more affected to the *Spaniards* than to the *French*; and consequently, if the King should be by their Means re-established, his Inclinations would lead that Way.

That, how the King's Affections to *Catholicks* stood, they did not know, but this was manifest, that if he could have compounded with his Parliament, he would have sacrificed them all.

That they could not distinguish the Church of *England* from the Rest, neither by their Writings, nor Actions; for out of no Country, since the Beginning of these modern Heresies, had issued Books more virulent against the Pope, and Catholick Religion, written by Bishops and Doctors of that Church; neither was there any Place in the World, where such cruel Laws had been made, and put in Execution against Priests, and Catholicks of the same Nation, as those made by Men living in, and under the Government and Communion of that Church.

That no Man can doubt, but my Lord of *Worcester's* Commissions were real, all signed with the King's Hand and Seal, in which he promised on the Word of a King, to make good whatsoever he should conclude; and that my Lord of *Worcester* was ready to justify, that he had exactly followed his Instructions; and particularly, that concerning my Lord Lieutenant, whom he had made acquainted with all, that he transacted with the *Irish*, of which he could produce Proof.

That not only in his Opinion, but in the Opinion of others as

wife, and who wished the King's Re-establishment as much as any; the surest Way to that Re-establishment had been, by granting their just Demands for Religion, to rely on the Assistance of his *Catholic* Subjects, which Demands only extended to a Toleration in *England*, and the Face of the Church settled in *Ireland*, without imposing any Thing on himself, or *Protestant* Subjects, who should be as free amongst them, as themselves; nor refusing to joyn with any his other Subjects of what Religion soever, in his Assistance for Recovery of his Authority, and all those Prerogatives enjoy'd by his Ancestors; which Assistance as it was more certain, being to come from People in Union; so was it more powerful, not only consisting in *Ireland*; which if the King had been pleased to take a Course accordingly, would soon in Spight of all his Enemies and theirs, have been united in his Obedience; but also in the Pope, who in his Particular, would have contributed much himself; and both would and could in that, have joined all the Clergy, in all the Christian Countries.

That as the King's Counsels and theirs, on whom he rely'd, have always gone upon contrary Principles, the Effects of which have been, that he is now fain to submit himself to the Mercy, and throw himself, as it were, at the Feet of those, who had been the Beginners and Contrivers of all his Misfortunes; who had branded his Person and Family with the basest Slanders; and being his Enemies, and the Enemies of his Church, were also the most mortal and irreconcilable Enemies of Catholics and Catholic Religion. So no Body must think it strange, that now he had left himself in a State, no longer to be able to Protect them, if they fought their own Preservation, which could not be, but by having a Catholic Governor.

These Reasons, with others to the same purpose, I heard sometimes from the Nuncio, sometimes from the Bishop of *Clohar*, esteemed one of the ablest Men of that Nation; which how effectual they are, I leave to the Reader's Consideration; who out of them may possibly draw something, which may the better make him to judge of the whole Matter. And now to say something briefly of my Lord of *Insequeen*, who being of that ancient Family of the *Obrians*, a Young Man of Spirit and Courage; when the *English* Army sent by the King and Parliament first came over, had raised a very good Regiment, and done considerable Service against his Countrymen: After, when that Army was recalled, he in Person came into *England*, together with his Regiment, intending, as it seems, to serve the King; but whether distasted for being refused, the Presidentship of *Munster*



being, as I have heard, promised to the Earl of *Portland*; or inclinable to the Presbyterian Faction, which is no impossible Supposition, having been bred under Sir *William St. Leger*, President of *Munster*, whose Daughter he Married; whatsoever the Cause was, he returned into his Country, and there took up Arms for the Parliament, by whom he was made their President of *Munster*. And having, with the Help of the Lord *Brohill*, Son to the Earl of *Corke*, possess'd himself of *Youghall*, *Kingsale* and *Corke*, whereof two are Haven Towns, all considerable in *Munster*, he did, with Assistance of Men and Money from the *English* Parliament, make War on the Confederates, who lay nearest in his Way, prevailing often upon them, and taking divers Towns and Castles, whilst I was there. And after the Surrender of *Dublin*, and before my coming away, in a pitch'd Battle, being given by Consent of both Sides in mutual Letters, overthrew my Lord *Taste*, then General for the Confederates, with his Army, killing many, amongst the rest, that famous *Alexander Macdonnel*, otherwise *Coll-kito*, and taking many Prisoners, with much Baggage, and in that Victory, breaking the very Heart of the Confederates Affairs: This falling out not long after *Preston's* Overthrow by *Jones*, which I mention, because there is nothing of it in the Discourse before, to which it was not pertinent.

And now for Sir *Charles Coote* and *Monroe*, I shall not need to say much more of them, than I have already, more than the first was the Son of that Sir *Charles Coote*, Provost Marshal of *Ireland*, of whom it is said, that he would bid his *Irish* Prisoners blow in his Pistol, and then would discharge it. *Monroe*, an *Irish* Scot, as I think was he, to whom the Faction in the *English* Parliament would willingly have consign'd the Command of the Army, sent over against the *Irish*; but that being oppos'd by the rest, it was carried for *Parsons*, and *Borlacie*, their then Commissioners for the Government of *Ireland*; which in Effect was all one, as to their Purpose.







A DISCOURSE  
OF  
MY JOURNEY INTO IRELAND,  
*AND MY EMPLOYMENT THERE.*



**T** HIS Majesty, the late King my Master, being a Prisoner at Holmby, and all Negotiations for his Deliverance and Re-establishment being rendred fruitless; it was thought fit by the Queen, and Prince of Wales, with their Council, that some Body should be sent into Ireland, with Letters and Instructions to my Lord of Ormond, for the Settling of a Peace in that Kingdom; and for that Purpose, I was by her Majesty chosen, and accordingly received these Instructions following, signed by the Queen.







## Her Majesty's Instructions.

---

I. **Y**OU shall with all convenient Speed imbark your self for the Kingdom of Ireland ; and after your Arrival there, you shall with all possible Speed repair to the Place, where you shall understand the Lord Lieutenant and Lord Digby to be, and to them you shall deliver all such Letters, as are directed to them from Us and the Prince.

II. You shall inform the said Lord Lieutenant, how sensible We and the Prince are of the present Troubles of that Kingdom, as well in Consideration of the King's Affairs in general, as particularly out of the Apprehension of the great and imminent Danger, that may thereby happen to those, which yet remain under the Obedience of him the said Lord Lieutenant ; and how desirous We and the Prince are, to contribute all that is in our Power, to reconcile the Things in Question, between the said Lord Lieutenant, and the Confederate

Catholick Subjects in Ireland; whereby all of them may be firmly united under the Authority of our dearest Lord the King; and thereby enabled to defend themselves against the Common Enemy, and seasonably assist the King in his other Dominions.

III. You shall shew unto the Lord Lieutenant all the Papers and Dispatches wherewith you are charged, and particularly our Letter to the Nuncio now in Ireland, and the Clergy; as likewise, these your Instructions: And you shall, from Us and the Prince, acquaint the Lord Lieutenant, that these Preparations, as likewise all that is hereafter mentioned to be agitated by you with the Nuncio, Clergy and Confederate Catholick Subjects of that Kingdom, are not intended as any conclusive Opinions from hence; much less, as any positive Directions from Us and the Prince; but are only propounded by Us to the Lord Lieutenant, as probable Expedients to be considered of, resolved, varied, used or rejected by the Lord Lieutenant, as he upon the Place (best able to judge) shall think fit.

IV. You shall likewise acquaint the said Lord Lieutenant from Us, and from the Prince, that if he shall think fit to make use of any of these Expedients, before, or hereafter mentioned; or to direct the

Delivery of any of the said Letters or Dispatches ; or to appoint you to pursue all or any of these Instructions, or any others, that the said Lord Lieutenant shall give you in their stead ; that then both We and the Prince will always avow and justify the same, as Our Advice and Directions, in such Manner as the said Lord Lieutenant shall propound, and think proper for the Service.

V. When the said Lord Lieutenant shall have read and considered of the said Letters and Dispatches, you shall either deliver them according to their Addresses, or suppress them as he, the Lord Lieutenant shall think fit ; and you shall in Our Name, and the Name of the Prince, deliver Civilities to any Person, or Persons, according as he, the said Lord Lieutenant, shall advise you : As likewise, you shall vary from, and pursue the rest of your Instructions in such Manner, as the Lord Lieutenant shall think fit ; and in all other Things, you shall govern your self according to the Advice and Orders of the said Lord Lieutenant.

VI. If he, the said Lord Lieutenant, shall direct you to repair to the Nuncio, or the Assembly of the Clergy, or to the Supreme Council of the Irish, or to

their General Assembly now met at Kilkenny, you shall, upon all Occasions, when your Discretion shall think fit, publish, avow, and declare, the great Inclinations, which We and the Prince have, to contribute effectually all that shall be proper for Us and Him, to the speedy concluding a happy Peace in Ireland ; and how willing and desirous We and the Prince are to advance that good Work, as well by Our Mediation with the King in their Behalf (as there shall be Cause) as otherways in what We may.

VII. You shall further let them know, how seasonable to the King's Affairs, a good Conclusion of a Peace in Ireland would be ; as also, upon all fit Occasions you shall press and insist upon the Necessity of it, with Relation to themselves, and the great Honour and Advantage, which the whole Irish Nation will have by such a Peace ; and on the contrary, what Use the Common Enemy will make of the Continuance of these Distractions, even to the endangering of the whole Nation and Catholick Religion there.

VIII. You shall apply your self, as you shall see Cause, to such Persons amongst the Irish, as you shall find to have Credit and Power amongst them, and Inclination to conclude a Peace upon more moderate



Conditions ; and shall let them know from Us and the Prince, how acceptable to the King, Our Self, and the Prince, such their Endeavours are, and will be ; and how ready We will be, really to express Our good Acceptance of their Service therein, by such Marks of Our Favours, as shall be most suitable to their Condition, and most proper for them to receive.

H. R.

These were one Sort of Instructions I received, which were not to be kept so private, but that they were in some Cases communicable. Those that follow were not so.







## Private Instructions.



I. **Y**OU shall deliver to the Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, Fourteen Blanks now given into your Possession by Us and the Prince ; Six others are Signed by Us alone, and the other Six by the Prince alone.

II. You shall acquaint the Lord Lieutenant, that We and the Prince do authorize and appoint him, to fill up all the said Blanks in such Manner, and to such Purpose, and with such Contents, as he shall think most proper for the Service of our dearest Lord the King in his Irish Affairs : And you shall assure him, the said Lord Lieutenant, that as We and the Prince repose this Trust and Confidence in him, that he shall make such Use of them, as he shall think fit, for the Advancement of the Peace in Ireland ; so will both of

Us at all Times avow and justify those Instruments so to be filled up by him, as Our own Acts, and as done by Our particular Directions and Command.

III. You shall more particularly acquaint the Lord Lieutenant from Us and the Prince, that if in the Treaty of the Peace, or in the Conclusion thereof, he desires to be assisted with any further Authority, grounded upon any Letters sent to him from the King, or otherwise in Our Power, then We desire him, the said Lord Lieutenant, to fill up the Blanks Signed by Us or the Prince, or any other of the said Blanks Signed either by Us or the Prince, with such Authority from Us, or from Us and the Prince, or from the Prince only, in such Manner as he shall find most proper and conducing to such a Peace.

IV. You shall likewise particularly acquaint him, the Lord Lieutenant, that if he shall think it proper for the Advancement of the Peace there, that your self, or your self with any others now in Ireland, should in Our Name and authorized by Us, repair to the General Assembly now held at Kilkenny, or the Supreme Council of the Irish, or to any other Body, or Persons, with the Overtures of a Treaty, or any Particulars, in

order to, concerning or conducing to the same, Our Desire is, and We hereby authorize him the said Lord Lieutenant accordingly, that he should fill up one or more of the said Blanks signed by Us, in the Nature of a Commission, Letters or Instructions, with such Authority from Us, and in such Manner, as he shall think fit; and that he would accordingly, insert the Name of such Person, or Persons, as he shall think fit to be joyned with you, in this Employment from Us.

V. You shall acquaint the Lord Lieutenant, that upon Advertisement of the Restraint made on the Person of the King at Newcastle, We enter'd into a serious Debate of his Affairs; and particularly considering of the Proposition made to Us formerly by the Lord Digby, when he came from Ireland; and that thereupon, both We, and the Prince do much incline to the Opinion then delivered to Us by the Lord Digby; That after a Peace made in Ireland, it will be fit for the Prince in Person to repair to Ireland; and there, by his Presence, to unite that Nation under the King's Authority, and imploy Forces from thence for his Assistance, as his Affairs in England and Scotland shall require. Therein you are to desire the Lord Digby from Us, and from the Prince, to send Us

speedily his Opinion and [Advice: And if he shall approve those Propositions, that he order his Business accordingly.

VI. You are to acquaint the Lord Lieutenant with the Proposition made to Us by the Earl of Craford in the Name of the Marquis of Montross himself, and many other Persons of Quality and Condition in the Highlands of Scotland; and shall thereupon assure him, that Our Zeal to serve the King in the Recovery of his Liberty, and Defence of his Crown, now in Hazard, is such, that if the Design (after the Peace shall be made in Ireland, and that Nation shall appear in Arms for the King's Assistance) shall be approved by his Judgment, as the most probable to attain the End aforesaid; We shall be willing to give Our Consent to the pious Inclinations and Desires of the Prince, to expose his person to all the Danger and Accidents, that are to be expected in such an Attempt, in hope thereby, to bring real Succours to the Distresses of the King his Father: In the mean Time you are to propound to the Lord Digby Our Opinion; that the Irish should be encouraged all that may be, to send such sufficient Succours to the Earl of Antrim in Scotland, as may continue a Footing there, and so confirm the King's Party in that Kingdom, as to render

that Design practicable, when it shall be proper to attempt it.

VII. These Particulars you are to communicate to none but the Lord Digby, and Lord Clanriccard; unless the Lord Lieutenant shall think fit to give you other Orders concerning the same.

H. R.









Then follows the Prince's Approbation of all the Instructions of both Sorts; with his Command to put them in Execution, in these Words.

### Charles, Pr.

We have perused, and do fully approve of your Instructions, bearing Date herewith, and signed by our Royal Mother; and do appoint and authorize you, so far as you shall find Us named therein, to put the same in Execution.

### Charles, Pr.

We have perused, and do fully approve of your private Instructions, bearing Date herewith, signed by our Royal Mother; and do hereby appoint and authorize you, so far as you shall find Us named therein, to put the same in Execution.



With these Instructions, and many Letters, not only to my Lord Lieutenant, Lord Clanriccard, and Lord Digby; but also from the Queen to the Nuncio, and Clergy, to Oneale and Preston, with all the considerable Persons then amongst the Irish, I parted from Paris about the 16th of March, 1647, in Company of my Lord of Craford mentioned in the Instructions. At Orleans finding by Letters, as also by the Print from London sent after me, that my Lord of Ormond was deeply engaged in a Treaty with the Parliament, so as possible I might not be able to come to him at all, if Dublin were surrendered before my Arrival; and in that Case having Nothing in my Instructions, I took the Boldness to write to her Majesty, desiring to know what it was her Pleasure I should then do, if that should so fall out, to which at Nantz, I received this Answer.

**T**Rusty and well Beloved We greet you well; upon Consideration of what you writ unto Us since your Departure, We have thought fit hereby to signify unto you, that at your Arrival in Ireland, if you find the City of Dublin besieged in such Sort, as you cannot have Access to Our Right Trusty, and entirely Beloved Cousin, the Marquis of Ormond, or that it be surrendered to the Rebels; in such Case, you forbear not the present Delivery of your Letters to the Nuncio, and Confederate Catholicks of Ireland, to whom We have written by you; and you are to assure them from Us, that as the Consideration of the Service of our dearest Lord the King, and the Interest of Catholick Religion, hath continually inclined Us, most passionately to desire the Peace of that Kingdom; so is there nothing that may conduce therein to their Satisfaction and Security, wherein We will not contribute Our best and promptest Assistance. You shall not fail before long, to receive further Directions from Us; in the mean Time you are to pursue those We have already given you, and execute the same with all possible Diligence; whereof, We remain Confident: And so We commit you to the Protection of the Almighty. From the Lovre at Paris, March the 19th, 1647.

With this Letter I received another from the Secretary as follows :

SIR,

**I** send you herewith an Answer of your Letter to her Majesty, whereby you will receive full Light and Satisfaction of what you write : And by her Special Command I am to advise you, to make all fitting Application both to the Nuncio, and Others the most considerable Persons amongst the Clergy, to possess them with a real Belief of her Majesty's Cordial and Affectionate Intentions to comply with and further on her Part, whatsoever may set forward the happy Settlement of that Kingdom, to their Satisfaction and Security in Point of Religion ; which being her chiefest Aim, and sufficiently provided for, her Majesty expects in the winding up of that Bottom, those fitting Regards towards his Majesty's Affairs, and present Condition, as may justify to her and the World, the Merits of their publick Professions and Proceedings. Her Majesty will be very sensible of particular Deservings in this Kind, and resent them with the uttermost Effects of her Favour, or Mediation for their Desires, &c. March the 19th, Lovre.


It was about the latter End of March, that we parted from Nants, (for, no sooner could we find a Passage) in an Irish Merchant's Vessel of some 200 Ton, heavily laden, and without any considerable Danger, more than being very much affrighted, got into Ireland about six or seven Days after at Waterford, and yet so unluckily, as the Assembly at Kilkenny, after it had resolved Things as opposite to the Means of attaining those Ends for which I was come thither, as could be, broke up that Night at Ten of the Clock, which they would not have done, had they first heard of my Landing, for so Mr. Baron, who had been Agent here in France for the Confederate Irish, and to whom I sent a Post so soon as I was in Waterford, writ back to me. Indeed, I was very Unfortunate, for the Assembly had

both Power and Means to do or undo what they had done, to the Prejudice of a Treaty, which the Supreme Council, limited within Bounds by the Assembly, afterward had not. At Waterford I had Notice that my Lord Digby, with my Lord of Castlehaven, lay secretly within a Mile or two of the Town, ready to set Sail for France; to my Lord Digby I sent presently, and had Answer, that Mr. Slingsby, his Secretary, would be with me the next Morning, which he was, and told me, that he looked for my Lord very soon. I stayed from Sunday until Wednesday, in that Expectation, at Waterford, which is but twenty Miles from Kilkenny; but then fearing to give the Council Jealousy, who at that Time beheld my Lord Digby as their Enemy, and who was come secretly into their Quarters without a Pass, I parted toward Kilkenny, my Lord of Craford being gone before, where the next Morning I was, by Mr. Baron, brought to the Council; to whom (after they had caused me to sit in a Chair, not far from my Lord of Antrim their President, nor would they hear me until I had done so) I delivered the Cause of my Coming thither, which was, the Queen and Prince's Desire of a Peace in that Kingdom; and for the Queen, she was not only moved to it for the King's Interest, but also by her Zeal to the Catholick Religion, and Good of the People; that for the Catholick Religion, she did not conceive (abstracting from miraculous Providence) how it could be preserved from Ruin, but by a Peace; to which End her Majesty had made Choice of me, a Catholick, before any other, to send thither with Instructions and Letters to my Lord of Ormond, who was the Kings Lieutenant over that Country, to whom I was first to make my Address: And therefore I had for the present, no other Particulars to communicate with them, more than desire their Pass, with a Warrant for Post-Horses, and Convoy for my Safety to the Borders of their Quarters. After this, being so advised by Master Baron, I did rise and go out, and not long after had Orders for what I desired, and the next day parted for Dublin, being fifty Miles, whither I came the Day after, and was that night brought to my Lord of Ormond, to whom I delivered such Letters

as were for him ; and then said, "That I was sure those Letters expressed Civilities from the Queen and Prince, much better than I could ; and that therefore I had nothing more now to say, until I had deciphered such Instructions as I had, which were many, and would take up some good Time ; and by which his Lordship would find the Confidence her Majesty and the Prince had in him, which was great, as no Reports could shake, though we had Weekly News of Treaties with the Parliament, for the Delivery up of those Places under his Command." To which his Lordship Replied, "That Confidence shall never deceive them ; and, that he, who had ventured himself, his Wife, and all his Children in the King's Service, would make no Scruple of venturing or casting away one Son, when there shall be Cause (this he spake because his Son was then Hostage with the Parliament) yet if there be Necessity, he should give up those Places under his Command rather to the English Rebels than the Irish Rebels, of which Opinion he thought every good English Man was." To this I replied nothing, but after some Questions and Answers concerning Things in France, parted from his Lordship to my Lodging ; and after two Days (for so long it was before I could decipher my Instructions, a Work to which I had not been accustomed) I returned to his Lordship with them, written out in mine own Hand, which having read unto him, I gave them, together with the fourteen Blanks, into his Lordship's Possession, and so returned towards my Lodging ; where, by the Way, I met with my Lord Digby newly alighted, who told me he had neglected his Voyage at the present for France, desirous to see what Fruits my coming thither would produce ; and, after I had given him Letters, we parted. The next Day being Wednesday, I intended to wait on my Lord of Ormond at Dinner ; but at Eleven of the Clock, I was sent for by my Lord Digby, and told by him, that it was my Lord of Ormond's Pleasure I should forthwith go to Kilkenny, and move the Council for renewing the Cessation (which would expire on Saturday following at Twelve of the Clock) for three Weeks longer, which Order I obeyed ; and

in the Afternoon, coming to receive my Lord Lieutenant's further Commands, he delivered me the Cessation signed on his Part. I desired to know what I should say, in Case they should object that my Lord did it, but to gain Time, that he might receive more Forces from the Parliament. He answered, I should receive Orders for that on the Way, if, on Consideration, there were Cause. I desired to know his Lordship's Pleasure, what I should do with those Letters I had to the Nuncio, Clergy and Others, with the Confederates; he told me I should follow my Lord Digby's Directions. So I parted that Night with my Lord Digby to Leslip: and there my Lord Digby thought fit I should deliver all those Letters. The next Day, on the Way, a Post overtook me from my Lord Lieutenant, with these Letters from his Lordship.

SIR,

 **N** further Consideration of the Discourse we had Yesterday touching a Cessation, I think fit to give you Power, to undertake to the Confederate Party, that if a Cessation be agreed on, I will not receive, into the Garrisons under my Command, Forces from the Parliament, during three Weeks, to begin from Saturday next the 17th of this Month, the Cessation being agreed upon until then: But you are desired to use your uttermost Endeavour to procure a Cessation without this Condition, or at least that it be kept private; which last you are to engage them in, before you consent to the said Condition. And so I rest your Affectionate Friend, Ormond. Dublin Castle the 15th of April, 1647.

On Friday I came to Kilkenny and after Discourse had with the French Agents, Monsieur du Moulin, Monsieur de la Monerie, and Monsieur Tallon, whose Advise I was to receive in it; the next Day in the Morning I moved the Council, from whom I had Answer to this Purpose: That their Army was well advanced on its March to Carlogh, (a strong Castle in my Lord's Quarters) and that they did

not know what to do with it for Three Weeks, but must so long keep their Army on Foot to no Purpose. But if my Lord would have a Cessation for six Months, on the terms agreed upon by them, they would agree. The Propositions themselves were as follow.









Overtures for an Accommodation delivered by Doctor  
Gerard Fennel, and Geofrie Baron, Esquire,  
from the General Assembly of the Confederate  
Catholicks, the 3d of March 1646.

I. **T**HAT each Party should continue their respective Govern-  
ments independent of each other, within such Quarters  
as by the Accommodation shall be agreed on, until a  
Peace.

II. That both should join in a War both by Sea and Land, against  
the Enemies of his Majesty and this Nation; and that neither Party  
shall make Peace, Cessation, or other agreement, or enter into any  
Commerce or Traffick with the said Enemies, without the Consent of  
the other, until a Peace.

III. That Dublin and the other Garrisons within your Lordship's  
Quarters, may be secured against the said Enemies.

IV. That the Confederate Catholicks within the Quarters that  
shall be agreed on by this Accommodation to be left to your Lordship,  
shall be secured of the free enjoying of their Religion, Lives, Estates  
and Liberties.

V. The like for all other Catholicks in the said Quarters.

VI. That your Lordship shall suffer none to live within your  
Quarters, but such as shall Swear the Performance of the Accommo-  
dation.

VII. That your Lordship shall enjoy the Profit of your Estate in the Quarters of the Confederate Catholicks, paying such Contributions out of it, as the Confederates shall do out of theirs.

VIII. That the Confederates will contribute to the Maintenance of your Lordship's Charge in a competent Way.

IX. That during the Accommodation, no Outlawries be prejudicial.

With the Paper above-mentioned, relating to these Propositions, I departed from Kilkenny towards Leslip Castle, Sir Nicholas White's House, six Miles from Dublin, where my Lord Digby was ; to him I delivered it, who two Days after returning from my Lord Lieutenant with this following Answer, but not signed, my Lord Lieutenant giving the Reason, because the Propositions sent before from the Assembly to him, were not signed.





Answers to the Overtures from the Confederate  
Catholicks, sent by Gerrard Fennell and  
Geofrie Baron, Esquires; and likewise, to the  
last Paper of the 10th of May, 1647, sent by  
relative to the  
former.

THE two first Propositions are such, as appear fitter to be treated in a League Offensive and Defensive between neighbouring Princes, than between his Majesty's Governor of a Kingdom, and his subjects of the same, declined from their Obedience, with whom it is inconsistent with his Majesty's Lieutenant to join, otherwise than by their Return to their Obedience, and Submission to his Majesty's Authority.

To the 3d, when they are thus returned to their Obedience, and have submitted to his Majesty's Authority, it will be then seasonable to consider of securing the Garrisons in this Article mentioned, against all Enemies of his Majesty and the Nation.

That the five other Propositions are such, as may be fit to be considered in case of a Cessation, which when they shall propose unto us, we shall take into Consideration, and give such Answer thereunto as shall be reasonable.

That since in their last Paper they declare, that they resolve to insist positively upon the Votes of the late Assembly, which, as we understand them, are inconsistent with those Grounds, on which there can be any Hope of ever settling any Peace in this Kingdom. If

they have any real Desire of the same, they will take the Course to be freed from their Obligation of insisting upon those Votes, if any such be upon them ; and to be invested with Power to propose such Things, as may with Honour and Safety be hearkened unto.

This last my Lord added, because of their Votes in the Assembly against the last Peace, without Recalling of which, and Submission to the said Peace, my Lord Lieutenant was resolved not to treat with them, on any Terms ; and this my Lord Digby told me, of whom when I demanded, why my Lord Lieutenant would do nothing in order to those instructions, with so many Blanks signed by the Queen and Prince, as I had brought him ; his Lordship's Reply was, that my Lord Lieutenant was wiser. If I shall deliver my Opinion, it is, that my Lord Lieutenant having received a legal Commission from the King to conclude a Peace, and that Peace concluded and broken by the Irish, he did not think it safe, without a new Authority, as legally founded, to make another Peace, and therefore it was, that my Lord Digby answered me he was wiser. I then desired of my Lord Digby to know what it was, that my Lord Lieutenant would have ; and that he would draw up something for me to carry to the Council, by Way of Proposition to them ; to which my Lord consented, and presently writ out a Paper and gave me ; but the next Morning, before my Departure, called for it back, saying he was fearful I might be surprized by some Horse on the Way ; and therefore I must find some Way to preserve it in my Remembrance, without the Writing ; whereupon I was forced to set down two or three words only in the Beginning of a Line, so to help my Memory, and parted towards Kilkenny, and the third Day came to Clonmell in Munster, whither the Council were removed ; there I gave them my Lord Lieutenant's Answer, and desired that a Committee might be appointed to speak with me, which was done ; and soon after the Bishop of Limerick, my Lord Muscrey, and Mr. Nicholas Plunket, appointed for that Purpose, met me ; to whom, after some Discourse, I delivered in this Paper, which I had, as well as my Memory would serve me, drawn up according to my Lord Digby's Sense.



Propositions made by me to the Committee, about  
the 18th of May, 1647.

I. **I**f you do intend a Submission of the whole Catholick Party  
to his Majesty's Authority.

II. If you intend to do it by going on the Foot of the former  
Peace, the only Way which in Possibility is left, either for your  
Security, or any Body's else, that is to deal with you; the King's  
Condition being such as it is.

III. If for such other Agreements, as either are in the Marquiss of  
Clanriccard's Engagement, or such further Advantages as may be  
obtain'd from the Queen and Prince, you will take such Security as  
may be reasonably devised, and will give the like for what concerneth  
you.

IV. If you be not enabled of your selves to go thro' with a Peace,  
you will, when it shall be seasonably proposed, accord to the Calling  
of an Assembly.

V. If you will presently in Order to this, send to obtain a Cessation  
from Month to Month for six Months, one Month only to be known,  
on reasonable Conditions for both Parties; one whereof I suppose  
on my Lord's Part will be, such an Enlargement of his Quarters, as  
may serve for the reasonable Maintenance of his Men, in Case there  
be a Breach with the Parliament; which Quarters shall be secured  
to be restored if there be Cause; during which Cessation, Things

may be negociated in France, with the Queen and Prince ; mutual Securities agreed on, and my Lord have Time to disengage himself.

VI. If you will trust me, and some one or two Persons more, that you shall think fit, with the Entrance into the Manage of this Business, as long as there shall be Reason to keep it secret.

VII. Lastly, if you will proceed on these Grounds speaking generally ; then I will do my best to bring all This to pass, and have Reason to be Confident I shall perform it.



After this was read, Mr Plunket objected, that the Foundation of all my Propositions was impossible to be laid; and that was, the Proceeding on the last Peace, which had been voted against by the Assembly, and all the Adherents to it excommunicated by the Nuncio. I replied, that what one Assembly had voted, another might unvote, if they should see Cause; that the Nuncio's Excommunication against the Adherers to the Peace, was not, that there was any Thing evil in that Peace, in which there were many excellent Provisions for the Benefit of the Nation; but that there was not so much Good, in it for the Securing of Catholick Religion, as he thought necessary; and when he should see that reasonably secured any other Way, it would be all one to him, and the Excommunication might be recalled: After some other Discourse, we parted, they promising to render an Account of the Thing to me speedily. Three or four Days after, the Council sent for me, and did speak to this Purpose; That though it was a very unusual Thing to treat with a Person that shewed no Kind of Commission or Authority, yet they were so Confident of me on the one Part, and so desirous on the other, to lay hold on any Thing might tend to a Peace, as they had taken my Propositions into Consideration, and had agreed concerning an Answer, which for the present I could not receive, but was desired to go along with the Bishop of Clohar, to Kilkenny, some 20 Miles off, where the Nuncio then was, and there I should have it. So the Bishop and I parted together, who by the Way told me, that when we had been at Kilkenny, we must go to General Oneale, that lay with his Army some 30 Miles beyond. After we had been some two Hours in Kilkenny, the Bishop found me out, and told me that my Lord Nuncio he feared would be some Stop to our Proceedings; and that I should do well my self to speak with him, which I presently did, my Lord of Clohar being Interpreter. The Nuncio began, saying, that he would willingly consent to the making of a Peace, but not a Cessation, for that, Cessations had been the Reason why the Irish Affairs had no

better Progress; and that my Lord of Ormond did it, but to gain Time, that so he might receive more Forces from the Parliament. I reply'd, that now there could be nothing possible done without a Cessation, the Additions for Religion being to be transacted into France and back again: As also a new Assembly was to be called for Confirmation of Things agreed on. And as for the Landing of Parliament Forces, I did not doubt, but the Council had sufficiently provided for that, in the Conditions of the Cessation, which once signed by my Lord Lieutenant, would be infallibly kept. He answered, that my Lord Lieutenant had deceived him, and he durst not trust him. And after some other Discourse, in which I could see he was not my Lord Lieutenant's Friend, in the End I wished him to be advised what he did, in hindring of an Act decreed by the Supreme Council, that gave so great Hopes of a Future Peace, whereof if Ill should come, it would be attributed to him. He desired me to rest satisfied untill to Morrow, when he would again speak with me; in the mean Time he would write to the Council. The next Day he came to my Chamber and told me, that the Council had by their Letters signified their Consent to his Desire; which was, that it might be deferred untill Friday come Fortnight, when he would call a Convocation of all the Clergy of Limerick; alledging to me how much better it would be, that it were done by the Council and Congregation together, than by the Council alone; desiring me that I would signify as much to Dublin: I reply'd, I feared that Delay might prove fatal, for that I was most assured, the Parliament Commissioners with good Forces and Instructions to satisfy my Lord of Ormond in all his Demands, lay at the Water-side, expecting nothing but a Wind; who, if they arrived in the Interim, it would be too late afterwards to talk of any Agreement. What the Nuncio's Reason was for this Delay, I cannot certainly tell; whether he really intended, not to have a Thing of so great Consequence done without the Consent of the Clergy of the Kingdom; or whether having no Intention to conclude with my Lord of Ormond on any Terms, he had no other Way to break off the



Council's Decree, to which Oneale himself, had been consenting, I know not ; but this I believe, that this Delay, was the Cause that rendered all my Labours fruitless : For, the Council and Oneale, of whose Intentions I was advertised by David Oneale, having agreed to the Cessation, as was desired, by which the Parliament Forces would have been excluded from Landing, all the Rest would have followed. My Opinion is, that the Latter was the Cause, and that he and the Bishop of Clohar would run any Hazard rather than accord with my Lord of Ormond ; against whose Person, I found in the Nuncio, great Animosity ; my Lord of Clohar being a better Hider of his Thoughts. Soon after I signify'd what had been done, by an Express, to my Lord Digby, and with my Letters, sent a Copy of the Propositions I made to the Council : From whom not long after, I received this Answer.

SIR,

**Y**OURS of the 27th May I received not until Yesterday Night, and whenever it had come unto my Hands, you may be sure I should have hasten'd my Answer to you, since here is nothing that possesseth me more, then the importance of this Business we have in Hand, concerning which you have collected, and represented very rightly my Sence in the Paper you sent me ; unto which upon further Thought I can add nothing, but that I daily grow more confident of my being able to do good, if in any Time these People you have to deal with, will enable me in any proportion of reasonableness. I am very glad of the Assembly of the Clergy at Limerick, and should be gladder of a general Assembly ; for I can never hope to extract any Usefulness out of this Kingdom, but by an unanimous and entire Consent of the Catholick Party, to whatsoever settlement shall be made. I expect with impatience the Result of the Assembly at Limerick, in Way of Answer to the Propositions, of which I am sure you will not be slow to advertise me. As for Daniel Oneale's Proposition, if it be meant for all the

Accommodation, is for the present aimed at, without Relation to the former Peace, is ridiculous ; but if there be intended by it, that the former Peace stand valid, and unusually submitted to, such a Kind of Government Assistant to their Quarters, may be continued till they be secured in the conditional Concessions that shall be agreed on, the Proposition in that Sense may not be very unreasonable ; but this you must lay as a Ground, that without preserving good the former Peace, (I mean, without Prejudice to any Additionals) not my self, much less my Lord Lieutenant, can meddle at all in any Conjunction with them, since it is that alone, that can restore them to the Quality of such Subjects, as the King's Lord Lieutenant can joyn with. I shall add nothing at this present, but only desire you to hasten unto me, if possible, Security for Repair, and Residence in their Quarters, and the Transportation mentioned to you ; since, if this Traffick between us should take vent, I do not know how soon I might run Hazard in these Parts ; when as, if once I have my Retreat secure, I shall be bold : besides that there may be suddenly such an Opportunity of drawing Men away from the Parliament, as if once lost, cannot be recovered. God send you in your Endeavours, the Success that is wished by your affectionate Servant,

GEORGE DIGBY.

Leslip, June  
3d, 1647.

That which I observe in this Letter is, that my Lord acknowledgeth me to have rightly digested his Sense into Propositions. Secondly, whereas he mentioneth a Proposition made by Daniel Oneale (not spoken of before, and which I have not by me) it was something of a joint Government, as one may perceive by the Letter, whereby my Lord Lieutenant should have governed by Assistance of the Confederate Council in their Quarters, until the Peace had been perfect. With his Uncle Owen Oneale's Consent, Daniel Oneale came on Purpose with it to Clomell, with Intention to propose it to the Council,

where he was made Prisoner for coming without a Pass. To me he gave it, when I came to see him, and I to the Council; to which nothing was said, because the other Propositions were then on Foot; how ever it was, and what soever it had been, there was nothing to be done without recalling the former Peace, as is Thirdly to be observed in my Lord's Letter; a Thing very difficult, if not impossible, for a new Assembly must be called to unvote, and the Nuncio perswaded to recall his Excommunication; all which did not dishearten me so, but that I still had hopes, until I received this second Letter from my Lord Digby, which was as followeth:

SIR,

**Y**ESTERDAY the Parliament Commissioners landed with 600 Horse, and 8 or 900 Foot; they hastily and infinitely press my Lord Lieutenant's Performance of Conditions and Surrender of the Places, with as much Eagerness, as if they feared something might thwart them out of England. If I receive not from you within five Days, positive and reasonable Resolutions unto what I proposed, it will be too late to hope any Good in the Main; besides, this Place will grow too hot for me: I do therefore desire you to hasten unto me a safe Conduct from the Irish, to pass and embark in their Quarters; and to reside for a while, and embark such men as I can draw away from hence; which if they will presently allow, I am confident I can in a short Time draw away the better Part of the Parliament Forces, and if I might secretly lye for some Time, in some private Place, in their Quarters to confer with you and them, they would not repent it. I have nothing more to add, but to desire you to hasten an Answer to your Affectionate Servant,

GEORGE DIGBY.

P.S. If you find them likely to be reasonable, send me Word in what Condition their Armies are, to march suddenly, if Occasion should be. June the 8th, 1647.

I was, two or three Days before the Receipt of this Letter, come to Clomell, to attend the Resolutions of that Congregation the Nuncio had called, intended at Limerick, but by Accident transferred to Clomell, and so longer deferred, than was at first spoken of by the Nuncio, to me ; sent for by the Nuncio and Clergy, they had made some Objections to me concerning the Propositions, but insisted especially on the Impossibility of having any Thing to do with the former Peace, which had been condemned by the Clergy and People of the whole Nation ; and no wonder (to use their own Words) since whatsoever Provision had been made for the Temporal Part, there had been so little for Religion, as that God was not once named in it. My Reply was something long, but resolved into these two Heads, that my Lord Lieutenant neither would or could treat on any other Foundation, the King's Condition being as it was ; That all the Peace being good for the Nation, the Defects in securing Religion might be provided for some other Way, to their Contentment.

Being returned to my Lodging, I received these Letters from my Lord Digby above-mentioned, with which I went presently to the Council ; and having told them that was come to pass, which I had so long feared, and which they did enough believe : I read such part of my Lord Digby's Letter to them as I thought fit, and then spoke to this Effect :—"That there was now no longer time for Delay, near two Days of the five limited in the Letter being expired ; that if they would delay to do, he would no longer delay to speak freely to them, though I had little Hope that should prevail, if their own imminent Danger, in the Loss of those Places under my Lord Lieutenant's Power, to the Parliament, did not move them : That the King my Master being in that Condition, as they did well know, had given the Queen and Prince of Wales Power to treat and conclude in the Business of Ireland ; who accordingly had been pleased, not only to send me with Letters and Instructions to my Lord Lieutenant ; but also with Letters to all the principal Persons and Corporate Towns amongst them ; whereby they might see the real Intentions of the Queen and Prince, to contribute all that lay in

their Power to such a Peace as might be for the King's Service, and Good of the Nation, and particularly of the Queen, for Advantage of Catholick Religion : That I had now been in the Kingdom more than two Months, and seen very little Effects of those Protestations they had entered into, of their Obedience to the King, which they could not otherwise shew now (especially in the present Conjunction of Things) but by Demonstration of their Desire to return under the Authority of his principal Governor my Lord Lieutenant : That my Commands being to come back so soon as I should see no Hopes of their Union with my Lord Lieutenant, I was resolved very soon to return and give an Account according to the best of my Understanding of the Irish Affairs, which had not been the less Cause of my Sending thither ; the Queen having been pleased (though unworthy) to make Choice of me, not only as an honest Man, but as a Catholick, who therefore was not likely to give a worfe Colour to the Proceedings of the Confederates than they deserved ; but that as yet I could say Little for their Advantage, unless they did, in this Instant of Time, do Something that might alter my judgment in their Favour."

After this I withdrew ; and two Hours after my Lord Muscrey, and another, whose name I have forgotten, were sent to me with these Answers to my Propositions.

I. **T**O the first we do intend it.

II. When we understand the Matter, and Assurance of the Additional to the late Peace, we shall then call an Assembly, who only have Power to proceed upon the Foot of the late Peace, and to conclude therein, as they shall find Cause.

III. We intend to take and give such Security for the additional Advantages, as shall be agreed upon until a Settlement in Parliament.

IV. We will, when it shall be seasonable, call an Assembly.

V. We will agree to a Cessation for two Months, the one visible, the other secret, until the Expiration of the first; and in Case there be a clear Resolution of a Breach with the Parliament, we shall then treat upon Enlargement of Quarters, or other Consideration for Maintenance of those of his Lordships Soldiers, as adhere to the King, upon Security of Restitution as is offered. We also agree to mutual Security during the Cessation and Negotiation with the Queen and Prince.

VI. We agree to this.

VII. Needs no Answer.    June the 11th.

With these I received the Copy of a Cessation, importing three Things; First, a Cessation from all Hostility, according to the usual Manner in such Cases. Secondly, obliging my Lord, during the Time, to receive no more Forces from England or Scotland into any of his Ports, Cities, or Garrisons. Thirdly, That my Lord should not, during the Time, assist the Enemies of the Confederates in Ulster or elsewhere in Ireland, nor receive Forces from them.

With these Papers I presently departed, and came the next Night to Ballisnonnon, the Castle of Mac Thomas, fifty Miles from Clomell, and twenty from Dublin, the outermost Garrison of the Confederates, which I thought the fittest Place for me to lye in, for the hearing from both Parties. From whence I sent away, by Sir Richard Barnel, the Answers to the Propositions, with the Cessation to my Lord Digby, with so much Speed, as it came within the Time he had limited; which Messenger was no sooner parted, but I had a Letter from my Lord Digby's Secretary, in which, amongst many others, were these Words.



Y Lord Lieutenant hath written to my Lord yesterday, that all his Conditions were fully assented unto by the Parliament; and that if he heard not from the Irish on Tuesday or Wednesday at Night, he would put it past Recovery, &c.

And again, Nothing is more certain, than that my Lord Lieutenant will put himself and all his Party into their Hands, if now they give him not such an Answer as may in Security and Honour invite him to treat with the Irish, whereby the Law will be in their own Hands. Leslip, 12th of June, 1647.

Soon after I received another from the same Hand, wherein, after he had informed me of Fairfax his taking the King from Holmby, he concludes with these Words : For God's sake make haste to come or write to us your Irish Decrees : now they make themselves and us happy if they will but comply a little. Leslip, the 15th of June, 1647. A Day or two after I received these,

SIR,

**U**PON Tuesday last, the Lord Lieutenant being fiercely press'd by the Commissioners to Surrender, and both needing and desiring the Assistance of his best Friends, with Hazard in the doing, and with great Disturbance since, I got into the Castle at Night, where I now am, and where I received Yesterday your Dispatch of the 14th, unto which, in Regard of our present Distractions, I can return at this Time but a very short Answer ; which is, that the Answer you sent carries a Shew of so much more reasonable Disposition in the Council there, than I have met with heretofore, that I shall willingly engage my self to deal with you farther upon it, and I will hazard my Life, or secure such a Suspence in the Lord Lieutenant's giving up the Government, as shall allow Time to see whether it may be brought to good Effect ; and I conjure you be not disturbed with any Thing you shall hear from any Body but my self, for the Matter here is exactly secret, pray God it be so there, or else all will be undone ; it will be impossible, without ruining all, for me to come into those Quarters, and to return to these ; but by that Time you shall have sent me the Pass I desired for my self and the Gentleman depending upon me, to Leslip, I am confident I shall have settled the Business of the Cessation, and be


ready to come thither for good and all, till I pass into France to perfect all Things. Whatever the Event be, be assured of the clear and faithful Endeavour of your affectionate humble Servant,

GEORGE DIGBY.

P.S. I pray be sure, whatsoever you direct to me, to send it by safe Hands, and carefully writ in Cypher. If the Irish Forces could suddenly press us at Trim, or any where but here, it would help us much, but let them beware coming near Dublin. June 17, 1647.

I think after this Letter (though Matters in Dublin were brought to that narrow Straight) yet I had not Cause utterly to despair of Success to my Endeavours: I did not know that the Face of Things in England were changed; the King in a Kind of Liberty at Hampton Court; the Parliament, which had been hitherto Presbyterian, and with which my Lord Lieutenant had held his Treaty, was become now Independent, quite another Thing; so that I was confident my Lord of Ormond would be very wary of parting easily from his Government, without fresh Commands from the King, which, whatsoever they were, I was contented. Full of these Hopes, I presently writ to the Council for my Lord Digby's Pass, and his other Desires; as also letting them know, I doubted not of good Success; desiring that their Army under General Preston, might with all speed, be put into a Posture of marching, for that I thought we should have sudden Occasion to use them; from whom some two Days after, I received Answer, that it should be done. About the same Time this Letter came to me from my Lord Digby's Secretary.

SIR,

AKE all the Speed that can be, in procuring the Lord Digby's Pass and Desires, for till that come he will not stir; and the whole Business runs a great Hazard by Delay. You must also make it your Business to draw the Irish



Forces to Trim, or some other Garrison (Dublin excepted) immediately ; If these Things be effected speedily and well, doubt not at all of the Success of the Matter in the End. I rest, Yours, &c.

Friday Noon, Leslip.

P.S. Send all your Dispatches hither to me upon all Occasions : Let me hear speedily of your Receipt of this, and what you intend to do in the whole Matter. Deal both with Preston and Oneale ; hasten Oneale to Trim, and Preston to the Nas, and Minouth ; but let him there stop and come no nearer Dublin. This will be well done whatsoever be the Event, and 'tis great Weakness to neglect it. This Letter was presently seconded by an other from the same Hand.

SIR,

THIS Morning yours of the 19th, came to my Hands, I am glad to hear of General Preston's Resolution ; but all will yet be nothing, unless Oneale also do his Part : Therefore, make it your Business, and let the Irish look upon it as theirs, to see it done out of Hand ; Let no private Animosities, or particular Interest or Design, divert Oneale from the Work, nay, nor delay him ; for if this Moment of Time be lost, it will be for ever irremediable : Therefore do you, and let the Council lay all their Strength to perswade him to it ; if he refuse, the Ruin and Desolation of Ireland, and his Nation will be his Guilt. This is the Place where the Parliament will lay the Ground of the War, and it will prove an irresistible Torrent, to drown the Kingdom without Remedy, unless they be weeded out now presently. If these Garrisons were taken in, and the Irish Armies lodged in these Quarters, the Parliament would soon be starved, and reduced to Nothing that Way, if neither the Peace took, nor Dublin were taken. These Parliament Ambassadors have already sent into Denmark for 40000 Barrels of

Rye, and intend to block the Irish Harbours out of Hand, to prevent all Supply of Ammunition from them: They may here perceive how great a Storm hangs over them; yet, if they will but engage their two Armies together in the Work, and resolve secondly, and heartily to embrace the Means, with its Appendances; and if they will send a full, and unquestionable Pass speedily, all will yet do well; that otherwise, any of that trifling will make fall to Nothing. Be not startled at any Thing you shall hear of the Lord Lieutenant, who hath given them the Power of the Army, and keeps the Sword and Castle for five weeks; in which Time and less, all must be done that will be, with and by the Irish. I rest, Yours, &c. The inclosed is for General Preston; let me hear what you have done, and hope from Oneale.    Leslip Jun. 20th, 1647.

The next Day after my Receipt of his Letter, arrives the Writer himself, and shews me a Letter of Credit from my Lord Digby, written in Limons, not to be read untill it was warm, in these Words; Least outward Appearance should beget Distrust, I have thought fit to send this Bearer unto you, to acquaint you at large with the Grounds of every Thing; I pray you give him full Credit, from your affectionate Servant, George Digby, 21st of June, 1647. He made a long Narration to me, which I thought fit, in a Business of so great Concernment, to make him set down in Writing; which he did under his own Hand, and is as followeth, Word for Word.

“That the Commissioners being landed before any Return to the Propositions came, and possess’d of Dublin, and all other Garrisons, with Master Powers, they having Store of money, and the Marquis of Ormond none at all, with which to feed the Soldier; and lastly, having brought him a full Performance of all Conditions, even of those, whereon he did most ground the Hope of an Evasion; and now being fiercely press’d to a Surrender on his Part, was resolved to perform his Engagement immediately, and writ so to the Lord Digby; who had in several Letters perswaded his Delay, to see if yet any good might possible be done: But now finding nothing but a

personal Interview, and most serious Conference able to hinder the Marquis of Ormond any longer from accomplishing the Work, he notwithstanding the most imminent Hazard of the Attempt, ventured by Night, to steal into Dublin Castle, to prevent the Surrender the next Day intended ; where, upon his Arrival, (which procured a very great Disturbance) he wrought so effectually upon the Marquis of Ormond, that he brought him the next Day to declare to the Commissioners (under Pretence of doubting the Authenticalness of their Powers, and of Expectation of the Parliaments solemn Engagements of the Faith of both Houses, for the Security of himself, and all his Party, whether perhaps excepted or not excepted) that unless they would yet give him five Week's Time to hold the Sword and Castle in order to his Satisfaction in these Particulars, he would rather die in the Gate with a Halbred in his Hand, than give it up. In which Resolution the Commissioners finding him positive, at last assented, that if he would surrender into their Hands the Militia forthwith, they would permit him the Sword and Castle, together with any three Companies he should chuse for his Guard for the fore-mentioned Time. This was all that could possibly be done in order to a Suspence, they having already, by Reason of their Money, and overpowering Number, all Things else in their Hands. The Answers to the Propositions intervening, have given good Hopes by the reasonable Face of them, that the Irish may, yet upon Terms, be brought yet to his Majesty's Obedience, and so both serve him, and preserve themselves ; of which, whilst the Marquis of Ormond can in Reason cherish a Thought, he will not willingly run on in this extreme Course, which the former Proceedings of the Irish did necessitate him unto ; and that so far, that they suffered him to engage almost beyond Recovery, before they did make any Overture of any better Disposition. Now, the only remaining Ways of effecting this are ; First, That if in this Time the Distractions in England grow to that height, that the Parliament Party here, may see themselves deprived of Hopes of Supply, and unable to subsist, should court the Marquis of Ormond to continue here, and so both reduce

the Power into his Hands, and give him Time to treat and perfect a happy Accomodation. Secondly, That if, in this Time, Monsieur Tallon come back from France, furnished so with Monies and other Things, which the Marquis of Ormond verily expects, he shall soon be able to regain his own old Forces, and ruin theirs, who are far more amenable than his, having most of them served the King in his Armies in England; and so by this Means re-investing himself both in the Military and Civil Government, give both Power and Time to make a Peace. Thirdly, if in this Time, he can work either upon any of the Commissioners, or Chief Commanders of their Forces, and so reduce both them and the Power into his own Hands. Fourthly, And indeed, of all the Rest the most present and certain, if in this Time, the Irish can march into these Quarters so strong and considerable, as to take the Out-Garrisons (of all which the Marquis of Ormond wishes they could possess themselves) and distress Dublin so, as to make the Commissioners desire a Cessation, which the Irish refusing to Assent unto, unless the Marquis of Ormond would take it upon himself the visible Power, and give him Time, according to the Length of the Cessation, more or less, to continue and perfect the desired Union, and re-establish the King's Government: Now in Order to bringing this last Means about, you are desired to let the Council know, the unavoidable Danger that hangs over them, and their Nation, if they lay not immediately aside, all by Ends and private Interests and Animosity, to attend this Business, to make them sensible that the other Forces of Ulster, Munster, and Connaught will only be kept a Foot, by the Parliament to divert and distract their Powers; but that here, in Leinster, they intend to lay the great Foundation of a War; here to keep their grand Army; here to place their Government; and here to erect their Magazines of Ammunition and Victual. You are desired to inform them, how that they have already sent into Denmark for huge Provisions of Corn; how 30000l. per Month, is set aside of Contribution in England for the War of Ireland; how the Parliament intends to endeavour the blocking up of all their Harbours. Hereby you

will do well to let them see, that this is the only and last Opportunity, that ever will be offered them to make their own Preservation, by killing the Disease in the Beginning, before it grow too strong; and before, by the Marquis of Ormond's quitting, a Peace with the King become impossible. You will also let them know, how certainly the Parliament is like to grow to an irresistible Strength, if this Occasion be let slip, and how easily they might now distress and destroy them, before great Forces, and those great Provisions they expect, come. It were fit they did know, that supposing their Armies come down considerably strong, how much Master they must needs be of these, who cannot possibly make above 6000 Foot, and 1000 Horse; and what certain Advantages they will be sure to get by taking all the adjacent Garrisons, and possessing the English Quarters: But you are, if possible, to engage them, that they will grant a Cessation whensoever the Marquis of Ormond shall think it necessary; and if a Cessation be demanded by the Parliament, they will not accept it, but by his appearing in it, likewise to oblige them, that without the Marquis of Ormond's Permission (unless by a Siege, or some other Accident, he be reduced unto a Condition, that is not possible to be known) they will make no Attempt upon Dublin; and to prevent the Worst in such a Case, as that he should be necessitated to call them to that Work; or they, seeing an Opportunity, should, contrary to their Ingagement, and his Desire, lay hold of it; that you would, after you have set their Armies forward (which must be done in the first Place) descend to Particulars with them concerning Additional to the Peace to be made as reasonable as you can, and to engage them under their Hands, that with those Additional under such Security, they will entertain the Peace, acknowledge the King's Government, and admit the Marquis of Ormond for the King's Lieutenant, whensoever he shall assent unto them, notwithstanding, that in the mean Time, those Holds should come into their Possession.

"It is requisite that you press all that may be possible, to bring Owen Roe, as well as General Preston, to the Work, that with more

Speed and Security it may be performed. If this cannot be effected, that General Preston may, if possible, be made up 10000 Foot, and 2000 Horse, or near unto it; and without Delay, by special Order directed thither, and instructed in all reasonable Things, to follow the Advice of the Marquis of Ormond and the Lord Digby. Lastly, a main part of your work must be to create a confidence in them of the Marquis of Ormond and the Lord Digby's good Intentions to them, which both of them, and especially the latter, with so much personal Hazard hath made appear. Instruct them also to let the Marquis of Ormond and Lord Digby see they have a Confidence in them, and assure them it is the best Way to do their Work, and all they wish for will, beyond Expectation, be done to their Hands, if with a generous Resignation they will cast themselves and their Business upon them. You must needs procure a full, free and indefinite Pass for the Lord Digby in his publick Capacity to come to their Quarters, with a competent Number of Attendants, and to embark for France, or what Place he please, without Interruption under what Pretence soever. I need not tell you how you are to inculcate Secrecy unto them, nor to warn you to give in no Paper concerning it, with the Marquis of Ormond, or Lord Digby, expressly named in it: If they make Scruple how he can, in Respect of his Hostage, go thro' here with them, you can satisfy them in that Particular, what Way he hath left to do it."

These were the Instructions given me by the Secretary, grounded upon his Letter of Credit from my Lord Digby, and indeed very contrary to my Expectation, considering the Letters I had from his Lordship but three days before, of the 17th, wherein he made no Doubt of concluding the Cessation, which also I had written to the Council, as also for a Pass for him as he desir'd; and I do wonder how they should think that I, who had never shewed any Commission from the Queen, or Prince, nor was so much as to use either of their Names, how or from whence the Credit should come, that must support me, not only to treat with, but to manage the Council in such a Line of Method as was given me by these direc-

tions, on which I will forbear to comment, my meaning being to write here only Matter of Fact. Well, I shrunk up my Shoulders, and presently departed from Ballisonon towards Kilkenny, whither the Council were now come from Clomell; where, about the 25th of June, I arrived; and the Council not being all come together, it was the 28th, before I could move them, which then I did in all the Particulars before mentioned, of which, after I had spoken, I gave them in a Paper abbreviated as I thought fit; to which, the next Day, they replied, that General Preston should, within ten Days, be ready to March so strong, as there should be no Need of General Oneale, with other Things, magnifying their own Army, and despising the Parliament Forces. I then, after I had been with several particular Persons, went again to the Council, earnestly importuning Oneale's coming, insisting principally on these two Reasons; first that a Business that so much concerned them, could never be done too surely; that I conceived there was great Danger in the English Horse, though against double their Number. Secondly, that my Lord Lieutenant would never think himself sure enough; for, whenever he should stir, if he made it not good, no less than his Life would pay for it. But all would not do, so much did their Hatred, for to nothing else can I ascribe it, to the old Irish, over-balance their Reason. As for the Nuncio, however possibly he might be content the Parliament should rather have those Places, than my Lord of Ormond stay in the Kingdom, which yet I do not aver for a Truth, howbeit, most certainly he was very willing that Oneale should have his Part of the Enterprize; who himself was so desirous (of which I am most certain) as he forbore proceeding on his Design against Sligo, in Expectation to be summoned to that Business, then lying idle in Connaught, with an Army of 10000 Horse and Foot. Indeed I was press'd by some Gentlemen of good Quality in that Country, to write myself to Oneale, they assuring me he would March on my Letter; whether it were so or no I know not, but I thought it not fit to try, nor durst I offend the Council. In this Interim I received a Letter from General Preston as followeth.

SIR,

**I** RECEIVED yours of the 21<sup>st</sup>, and do expect such a Number of Forces, as I shall go without any great Danger to effect any Thing I take in Hand. I understand General Oneale's Forces are advanced into Connaught, and himself at Athlone ; whether he will return or not, is yet unknown to me. My Army is daily mustering, and will, God willing, suddenly be in a Body ; if then any Occasion, with Assurance, shall be offered, I shall be ready to answer it, or any other Service that may tend to his Majesty's Advantage, and the Good of this Nation. In the mean time you shall have timely Notice before I move, who am your humble Servant. Camp 21<sup>st</sup> of June.

And not long after, another written to him by my Lord Digby's Secretary, in which he desires him, after his reading it, to send it to me, it seems for the News sake ; for there he tells him, that "the King was come to London, &c. And then, I send you this to rejoice, for I know you love the King, and all that love him, in our Nation. The Commissioners in Dublin sate all Night, admitting no Access unto them." And this in Cypher, "Make haste in your Business, and lose no Time in your March to these Parts, but come as well accoutred as you can. This is the Scene, &c. July the 1<sup>st</sup>, 1647."

Another of the 3<sup>d</sup> to me, from the same Hand.

SIR,

**I** WONDER exceedingly I have not heard from you all this Time, you knowing to how short a Limit we are confined : The Distractions in England are grown to so great a Perfection, that it is believed really the King is in London, and the Parliament dissolving. I beseech you press the Irish to be quick in



the whole Business ; principally their Advance, and the Pass ; at least, let us know speedily the Result of their Councils. My Lord is affectionately yours, and commands it to be signified by your, &c. July the 3d, 1647.

Then another.

SIR,

**I** RECEIVED just now, yours of the last of June, and thank you for it. The Mutiny the other day at Dublin, may sufficiently let you see the Importance of the Irish Advance into these Parts ; for had they been within eight miles of Dublin, ready to march at an hour's Warning, I do not know why much of that we aim at, might not then have been compassed ; but I make no question, if they be at that Distance suddenly, nearer than which they must not come yet, unless they mean to unite them all, and make them attempt the Destruction of those, on whom our Hopes depend : Such Opportunities will daily be offered, but I fear the Delays : for a little more Force will make us loose them all, &c. July the 4th, 1647.

About the 13th of July, General Preston sent me this Copy of a Letter he had received from the fore-mentioned Secretary, with another Copy of a Letter to be signed and written by him to my Lord Lieutenant, of which I was to have the Council's Approbation, and had it ; being drawn by the said Secretary. Take this first to Preston. "If there was not a Fate of Distruction hung over this Kingdom, it were impossible that your Army could have stayed so long out of these Quarters, into which, if you had briskly advanced, you might infallibly e'er this, have had most of the Garrisons but Dublin, or have forced the Commissioners to have put back all theirs, into the Marquis of Ormond's Hands, and enabled him and others to haue compassed that Good for the Kingdom which they most

heartily desire : And yet, if they advance a good Way the next Week, it is probable, that our End may be compassed of preserving this Nation ; but I fear I shall find it their Fate, that they must not contribute unto the re-establishing of his Majesty's Authority so much as here ; but that on the contrary, when the Affairs of England shall have re-settled my Lord Lieutenant here, without your Help, which is confidently believed before the Time prefix'd for his quitting will be ; then your Armies will be ready to March and make War upon him, however that you see Things now omitted here, that might enable us to preserve Ireland from Calamities that threaten it. The Pressures for your Advance are renewed now in the only Minute of Time for you to advantage your selves, and to merit from the King at one Time. The inclosed Draught of a Letter is offered unto you, as very requisite to be sent by you to the Marquis of Ormond. When you are 'upon your March, you will do well to send the copy of it to                      and the Council, that it may be dispersed in Print, soon after you have sent the Letters to Dublin. I pray you also send to                      a Copy of this my Letter to you, to peruse privately. The Affairs of England go on well. Your most faithful humble Servant, &c.

“P.S. Lose no Time, I conjure you ;  
will further you in all Things ; there can nothing be thought of so advantageous to your Business, nor so plausible to the World, as your sending this Letter when you come, than this, which Preston was, upon his March, to send to my Lord Lieutenant.”

*(Enclosed Draught.)*



My LORD,

**B**EING now upon my March with an Army beyond the Limits of the Confederate Catholick Quarters ; I have thought it my Duty to his Majesty, and your Excellency his Lieutenant, to declare unto you, that the Ground of my Advance into these Quarters, is my Understanding that the Power and Command in them is no longer in your Excellency, nor in any deriving Authority from his Majesty, but on the contrary, in the Hands of Parliamentary Rebels, the Supplanters of his Power in the three Kingdoms ; that as we think our selves bound, both by Allegiance, in Relation to our Sovereign, by Conscience in Relation to our Religion, and by the Law of Nature for Self-Preservation, to prosecute War against them to the uttermost of our Lives and Fortunes, which by the Grace of God we shall do, renouncing all Treaty or Correspondency with such : So on the other side, I do sincerely profess unto your Excellency that I, and all under my Command, are so sensible of the most unhappy Misunderstanding, since the last Peace, and so passionately desirous, if possible, of redeeming the said Misfortune, that could I be so happy as to receive from your Excellency any Assurance, that yet the Power and Authority from his Majesty remains in you, and that there might be any Hope of our being admitted to his Service upon such Terms, as may be consistent with our Religion, and natural Freedom of Subjects, that I should be so far from proceeding a Step in any Act of Hostility, that on the contrary I shall most gladly embrace any Way of Treaty or Cessation, that may tend to that blessed End (and for which alone we will ever fight) of settling a happy Peace in this Kingdom, in perfect Obedience to his Majesty ; which shall be testified to the World by the Actions of your Excellencies most humble Servant, &c."

About the 15th of July, General Preston having sent this Letter by

a Trumpet, advanced into the English Quarters with an Army consisting by the Pole, of between 7 and 8000 Foot, and about 1100 Horse; the Foot, as lusty appearing Men, and as well accoutred with Arms and Cloaths, as ever I did see; and the Horse in Appearance equal to our ordinary Troops in England; and hearing that the Enemies Horse were advanced to the Nas, a Garrison of theirs some 8 Miles, as I remember, from Dublin, marched towards them; the Enemy drawing out their Horse, which were presently charged by the Irish Horse, and after some Time forced back into the Town; which the Irish entring with them, they quit, as their Foot had done before, and so retreated towards Dublin, Preston having much ado to restrain his Horse from the Pursuit; who it seems feared their whole Armies being drawn out to second them, his Foot being not yet come up: But it was not so, for the English Horse despising the Irish, had some 4 or 500 of them drawn out from the Rest of their Strength, and had paid dearly for their Bravado; if Preston had not been too wise: However this gave more Wisdom to the English, and more Folly to the Irish; The First not so confident as before; the Latter more confident after, than there was Reason. In the mean Time I received this Letter from the Secretary.

SIR,

**I** Had yours of the 8th, the Time prefix'd, for my Lord's Surrender of the Sword and Castle draws so near, that if by fair Means we cannot compass our Ends, we must try it by Force; but to this there is something absolutely necessary; to wit, that you have a positive Assurance from the Council, that if the Power shall be again recovered into my Lord Lieutenant's Hands, that we shall be sure of a present Cessation for 3 or 4 Months, in which to procure from the King the Powers and Conditions for a Peace; for this, that you have a solemn Engagement under their Hands, we expect to be suddenly certified; without which, we shall not venture on any Act of Violence, to recover the Power; the Irish

are not wise if they stick at any Thing. Let me have your Answer speedily ; there is no fresh News out of England ; we have Reason to be confident, that by this Time, Things are at a good Issue there. July the 15th.

In the mean Time it seems the Council had Notice by some coming out of Dublin, that my Lord was not Master of the Castle, into which, as those informed, he had admitted some Companies of Parliament Foot ; so that when I came to move them about the Assurance demanded in the last Letter from the Secretary ; they told me of their Informations ; as also, that my Lord had never meant in good Earnest, but that I had been deceived ; which, however they seemed to believe I was not willingly ; nor meant I to deceive them. Soon after which, they sent me a Paper by the Bishop of Limerick in Answer to those Assurances, and other Things I demanded of them, which what they were, may be collected out of the former Instructions and Letters ; which Paper I have lost : But by the Copy of a Letter of mine, the Substance may be guess'd at ; my Letter was thus to the Secretary.

SIR,

THE Copy of the Letter I received in yours, is consented unto, and dispatched away. In mine of the 8th, I gave you Reasons for the Council's Delay in returning me Answer to those your Desires, by me proposed to them ; as also, that they had now promised me a speedy Resolution, in Order to which, Yesterday my Lord of Limerick gave me a Paper ; the Substance of which was, that as they had hasten'd their Army's Advance to those Ends and Purposes desired, all that might be, so was it now well forward on its March, so strong as they doubted not at all, it would be able to do the Work, without the Help of General Oneale ; that as for those other Things desired, which were of Substance to the main Business

in Hand (and what those Things are, I doubt not but you can easily collect) the general Face of Affairs had received great Alteration since my Delivery of these last Propositions in two Things, which were not then known. The First, that my Lord had not only divested himself of the Power of the Militia, but also, that he was not at all Master of the Castle; of which last, they were most certainly informed by the Examination of Divers, that they were lately come out of the Castle, and Town of Dublin, tho' they did believe I did not know it, when I gave in the Propositions. The Second was, the late Alteration of his Majesty's Condition, whose Orders they did not know, my Lord Lieutenant in this Vacation of Time, would not be slack to send for, and being come, would do his best to obey them, what Obligation soever of doing, or not doing, this, or that; in the mean Time they should put on themselves; and that therefore, it should be great Imprudence in them, to oblige themselves to any Thing further than the present Condition of their Affairs required, untill such Time as some Person interested would appear; and be likewise, as there should be Cause, obliged. That they had already given great Testimony of their good Desires, and Intentions to do any Thing, tending to their Submission to his Majesty's Authority, in their Answers given to my Propositions; which altho' authorized by no Body that appeared, nor undertaken by me further than *His Verbis*: I would do my best Endeavour to bring them to pass; yet they had in a full Council and Congregation assembled, answered fully to every one of them. That howsoever, when it should appear to them, that my Lord was re-invested with his former Power, to which End he should command the Assistance of their Army when he pleased, they would be ready to do any Thing, in Order to the making good of those Answers, they had given to my first Propositions. Lastly, concerning the desired Pass for my Lord Digby, as they had much Expectation of the good Offices his Lordship might do in these Businesses, being in a Place so near my Lord Lieutenant, so were they loth to give him any Encouragement to come away, before they might see what Issue

Things would have, which had been the true Reason of delaying it so long. But if that, by any Accident, he should be in the mean Time occasioned to come into their Quarters, he should not doubt of finding Safety and Protection there, for him and his, and Permission to go to Sea, when and whither he would. Kilkenny, July 18th.

This Answer of the Council was not without Grounds; nor their Information of Things in the Castle of Dublin false, though as then I would not believe it: But within 3 or 4 Days I was put out of my Doubt by this Letter from my Lord Digby, which should have come 3 Days sooner.

SIR,

**H**AVING received certain Information of the State of Affairs in England, from one employed thither by me, who hath had Access to the King himself; and finding Things there, tending to sudden and entire Settlement, but so much to the King's Advantage as was hoped: And the Discovery to the Parliament Commissioners out of the Irish Quarters of all Things formerly in Transaction between us; I hold it absolutely necessary that I should confer with you, to let you see the true State of every Thing, and to new mould our Business, that no Accident may raise a Suspicion of your not being dealt sincerely with: You are conjured to hasten hither to Leslip, in which there cannot be the least Danger for you, the Parliament Army lying as it doth, or advancing nearer as it intends this Day. Leslip, July 19th, 1647.

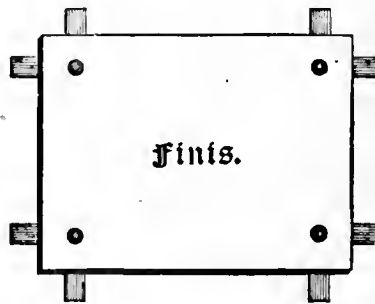
That Day I received this Letter, being the 23d, I parted from Kilkenny, and the next arrived to my Lord Digby, from whom I had this: "That the Commissioners having Notice, from I know not whom, of our Intelligence, had seized Colonel Barie, and my Lord Taffe in the Town, and had gone presently to my Lord in the

Castle, letting him know their Suspicion, demanding Assurance by Permission of some Companies of their Soldiers to enter the Castle, which my Lord had accorded to them, resolved now to proceed in his Agreement with the Parliament. And the 28th of July, the Day prefix'd, to deliver the Sword and Castle into their Power; that yet for all this I could not be troubled, for he had notwithstanding my Lord's Departure, great Hopes nevertheless of doing the Business." I replied, "That I could not chuse but be troubled, yet must be contented whether I would or not; that I was of his Opinion, there was yet much Good to be done, of which I was glad his Lordship did not Despair; but yet, that would now prove difficult, which before had been easy. From Leslip I went to Preston's Army, who after taking the Nas, leaving there a Garrison, marched to Minouth, a Castle of my Lord of Kildare's, I think not above 4 or 5 Miles from Dublin; and after 2 or 3 Days, took that by Assault; there likewise leaving some Men, he went and sate down before Trim: where I found him much troubled at my Lord of Ormond's Surrender, and very little confident of any Thing I could say to him, though I informed him of what Numbers about Dublin consisted; that they intended to march to him, so soon as the Scots were come to them, whom they expected every Day, being 2000 Horse and Foot; that I did yet hope we should find some Means or other to introduce the King's Authority amongst them on Conditions to their liking." He answered, "He should be very glad of it, and that there was nothing he and that Army could do should be wanting." I told him likewise, "That my Lord Digby would be accountable for Leslip, which he had forborn to take in, upon my Lord's undertaking that Charge." From thence I went with Monsieur Monerie the French Agent, who was likewise there, to a Knight's House, who was Brother in law to my Lord Lieutenant, whose Name I cannot remember, Ten Miles off, where, by Appointment, we were to meet my Lord Digby, and my Lord Taffe, who both accordingly came thither. The next Day my Lord Digby desired me to return to the Army, and if it might be, to procure a meeting between the Bishop of Ferne, with Mr. Plunkett,



then Commissioners from the Council with the Army, and my Lord Digby and my self, about laying a new Foundation of our Business; I found them very incredulous and backward; yet they agreed, upon my Importunity, to meet the next Day at a certain Place, whither my Lord Digby, my Lord Taffe, and I, were no sooner come, but we had Notice that Jones was drawn out of Dublin with his Army marching behind us; and soon after a Note from the two Commissioners, that they could not come for the said Reason. So we parted, my Lord Digby to Leslip, my Lord Taffe and I towards Kilkenny, all of us expecting the Event of that Battel, which all of us feared was towards; I say feared, for we had done our endeavour to dissuade Preston from fighting, both my Lord Taffe and I alledging, the Danger of the English Horse, as also the Coming up of the Scots the Night before. But my Lord of Ormond's Action had rendred Preston and the rest so distrustful, as they believed every Thing the less, because it came from any they conceived to have been of the Party; but it had been better for them they had believed; for within five Days after Preston was Overthrown, and 4000 Men killed on the Place, and almost all his Commanders Prisoners, he himself escaping very hardly: and with the Ruin of this Army were all my Hopes, as to the doing any further good in Ireland, likewise ruined; for that I resolved, although I had received no new Order from the Queen, with next Conveniency to depart for France. But my Lord Digby, for the whom I had, notwithstanding all this, procured a Pass to come to Kilkenny, though with much ado, desired me not to stir untill I heard from him out of France; alledging that there was no Body but my self left to do the King's Business there, whatever Resolution should be taken. I told my Lord, I would not stay at any Desire, but if he would Command me, I would Obey, being so tied by my Instructions. He did so, with promise to recommend my good Endeavours to the Queen and Prince, and that I should soon hear from him, and so we parted, he to Sea, and I, not long after, to Galloway, where then my Lord Clanriccard was, who invited me so kindly, as from that Time, which might be about the End of August,

I never left him until March, that I set Sail to France. At my Lord Clanriccard's, about the Beginning of November, I received a Command from the Queen for my Return, whose Date was more than three Months old, which I did not presently obey, expecting to hear from my Lord Digby, which I did about February, to this purpose: "That he did see no farther Occasion for my Stay in Ireland, and that I might come when I pleas'd." And about the latter end of March following, in the soonest Passage from Galloway I could find, in Company of my Lord of Worcester and my Lady, we set Sail, arriving at Havre de Grace in five Days.



"Inter Folia Fructus."

THE  
CHARACTER  
OF A  
MODERN WHIG,

OR

An Alamode True Loyal Protestant.

~~~~~  
(1681.)
~~~~~

"HISTORY IS BUT THE UNROLLED SCROLL OF PROPHECY."

—JAMES A. GARFIELD.



PRIVATELY PRINTED  
FOR THE CLARENDON HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

1886.

*This edition is limited to 120 large paper, and 400 small paper copies,  
for Subscribers only.*



## The Character of a Modern Whig,

OR

AN ALAMODE TRUE LOYAL PROTESTANT.



HE is a Certain Insect bred in the Corruption of the late Rebellion, and is (for the most part) a Traytor *Ex traduce.*

At his Majesties happy Restauration he lay stupified without Sense or Motion, but began by little and little to crawl with new life in the warmth of the Act of Oblivion, and afterwards wantonly basked himself in the Rays of Royal Indulgence and Toleration, till the old Poisonous Ferment began to work and float afresh, and furnished him with Vigour, and Insolence sufficient to hiss Venom in the Sacred Face of his Great and Gracious Preserver. And though he be sufficiently Conscious of the black Ingratitude, and repeated Provocations, with which he hath all-along abused and affronted the King's God-like Patience and Forbearance, yet the Fool hath had the Impudence to flatter himself with *Agag*, and say, *Surely the bitterness of Death is past*; little thinking that he is still reserved to be hewed in pieces before the Lord.

His Aspect is generally Meagre and Malicious, as representing on the one side the Puritanical Fool, on the other the Political Knave. His Profession (I cannot call it Religion) is of the *Geneva*-Stamp; not that his Conscience, or Prudence ever engaged him in a judicious Inquest, or sober Tryal of this or any other; or that his Wit and Judgment were ever capable Rationally to discern and choose, (for in Speculations of this kind, Nature and his Education have removed him but one degree from an Idiot) but his Father begetting him in the hot Zeal of this Persuasion, and his Dam all that while fixing her teeming Fancy with Adulterous lust on their able Holder-forth, he was moulded a strong *Presbyterian* in the very Womb, and so proves a rank Phanatick by the Pure force of Imagination and Extract: Nor hath he himself been since wanting to improve these natural Dispositions, and Exalt the Rebellious Genius he derived from his Sire and Dam; for observing (or rather being told) that the *Presbyterian* Principles stood in the greatest Opposition to the Established Government, he hath with irreversible Obstinacy Espoused the good Old Cause, and with the Sacred Solemnity of a Sacramental Vow hath devoted himself, Life, and Fortune, to the utter Extirpation of Prelacy, and the Royal Race of the *Stuarts*.

To effect all which, and that he may the more safely, and indiscriminably accomplish his perfidious Designs, he lies perdue in the unsuspected Covert of a *Protestant*; and though that word for ought he knows of the rise and reason of it, may be *Hebrew* for a Baboon, yet he assumes and affects it upon all occasions, because he fancies that it denotes, and signifies distinction and opposition; and he loves all things, and terms of Separation and Contradiction at his very heart. But farther observing that many wise and honest men have plainly discover'd that this Religion of his, and as he manages it, proves in the consequence of Affairs no better than an Antimonarchick-Herésie, therefore the better to supply all its defects, and answer all objections against it, he Palliates its apparent Falshood and Treachery with the specious Epithets of Truth and Loyalty, and

with unparallel'd Impudence he once for all roundly stiles himself, a true Loyal *Protestant*. He hath been hatching Rebellion, and working under-ground the Subversion of Church and State for these many years past, but hath bestir'd himself with all imaginable Application since the breaking out of the horrid *Popish*-Plot; as imagining that he might with more Success and Safety spring his own Mines (which he had carried on to the very Foundations of the Government) at a time when we were wholly taken up in detecting the Trains and Treacheries of the *Romish* Pioneers: And this hath afore-time in all Ages since the Reformation been his Usage, then more especially to disturb and divert his Governours with Petitions, Grievances, Toleration, Comprehension, and a thousand Tricks and Artifices, when he hath seen their Endeavours and Intentions bent and busied another way, and engaged in Rescuing us from the Imminent Dangers of our *Popish* Adversaries.

The Plot, Party, and Arbitrary Government is his daily Out-cry, the Common place and burden of his Seditious noise and clamour, and the Pretences of his impertinent Fears and Jealousies; whatever his Factious humour dislikes is *Popish*, and where the Case will not admit of a positive direct Plea, then *Popishly* affected doth the business; and any thing that bridles and restrains his Licentious Insolence, and Seditious Practices is Arbitrary, and Tyrannical. But for all the loud Hue and Cry he makes after the Plot, himself hath proved the chiefest hinderer of its full and home discovery, so that 'tis now almost quite spent and lost in running down a Channel of almost three years distance from its first Spring and Fountain. He plainly foresaw that 'twould thwart and prevent his Designs, if it had forthwith been Traced to the Fountain-head, and there stopt and ended presently (as it might very easily have been) when we were at the near distance of 78, and 79; he rather Chose to Wire-draw it at length with Tricks and Finesses, as having many Stages of devices that were to run parallel with it, and many Plots and Stratagems of his own that he cou'd never Accomplish without this Pretence and

Exclamation, that, there hath been, and is still a horrid *Popish* Plot, &c. That, is Still, doth his business.

And thus he hath kept the Plot at Bay for these three years to amuse and divert us, whilst all the while he is in the hot and eager Pursuit of other Game.

He endeavours to Poison the people, and Scare the Nation into Rebellion by Libelling the best King and Government in the world; insinuating malicious and groundless Suggestions of imminent *Popery* and Tyranny, by horrid Stories of *Smithfield* Flames, *Irish* Massacres, &c. by the Villanous Prints of *Carr*, *Curtiss*, and a whole Pack of scurrilous Scoundrels, and by a Thousand Artifices daily hammer'd out on the Forge of *Faction* by Republican Operators in their respective Cabals: In a word he hath done all he can to reduce the State of these Kingdoms to present Blood-shed and Desolation, hoping thereby to make his own Markets, purchase his Revenges, and glut his Malice, or at least hide his abominable Head (due long since to Publick Justice) in the general Confusion. Again, our true Loyal *Protestant* to shew how highly he Values his Sovereigns Content and Quiet, is frequently tormenting him with his impertinent Petitions, and that about things as much beyond the reach and judgment, as they are beside the duty and proper business of the Sawcy Petitioner; especially since he knows how that his Majesty hath Proclaimed not an Aversion only, but a general Prohibition to such Dangerous and Seditious Muster-Rolls, and Factious Pragmatical intermedlings: But his greatest Artifice and the Court Bugbear as he thinks, is the perpetually making the King's Ears ring with Clamours about the Succession; so that instead of a Joyful and Dutiful Exclamation of *Vive le Roy*, he is dayly Saluting him with a *Memento mori*: This was so harsh and grating to Queen *Elizabeth*, that she returned a sharp *Reprimende* to such as motion'd it, telling them besides, That it was to dig her Grave before she was Dead. Our Modern *Whig*, I say, would lay these Kingdoms in



Blood and present Desolation, the better forsooth to prevent the imaginary Evils of a (pretended) *Popish* Successor, and such *Chimeras* as his factious Fancy only hath Conceived in the Womb of Futurity and bare Possibility. His tender Conscience can easily dispense with Disinheriting a Royal Prince of his undoubted Right to three Crowns, upon a supposition only of being of an Opinion different from himself; and yet nothing can serve his own turn, but Repealing Acts of Parliament to indemnify his Scismatical Separation, and that he may neglect the Service of God, and break the Laws of the Land with absolute Impunity: This he prettily Stiles, Uniting his Majesties *Protestant* Subjects, though in effect and intent 'tis no better than admitting the *Trojan* Horse (a Magazine of mischiefs) within the Walls, and we should quickly find that a *Ruit alto a Calmine* would be the Fatal Consequence in our Church. He knows well enough that he hath Blasphemed his *R. H.* beyond all hopes of Pardon, and therefore his *All* is at Stake, there is now no Retreat, his Case is desperate, and he must now push it home in his own Defence.

This is our True *Protestants* Loyal Behaviour towards the Children of that Royal Father who was so lately Murdered by his Faction, whereas if he had but the least Grain of his so much boasted Loyalty, or indeed of Christianity, he would strive to Expiate that loud-Crying-Guilt, and shew his deep abhorrence of that Fact, by paying strict Allegiance to the present Possessor of the Throne, though he were the worst of Tyrants, and by not opposing his *R. H.* the rightful Successor, though he were a profest *Mahometan*.

He hath along Danced to the *Jesuits* Pipe, and steer'd by his Compass we know, but of late he hath openly profest, and avowed such Doctrines as these: That 'tis lawful to take any Oath whatsoever with a Mental *Salvo* for the sake of the good Old Cause. That no Faith is to be kept with the *Tory-Party*. That the selfsame Evidence in one Case is Truth and very Oracle, in another Perjury, and Subornation; and, that Truth, and Justice may *Salva Conscientiâ* be nipt

## 8 The Clarendon Historical Society Reprints.

---

in the bud by *Ignoramus*, when *Billa Vera* wou'd be in an ill President, prove prejudicial to the Cause, and of bad Consequence when his nearer and dearer Friends turn comes to be Concerned, &c.

To Conclude, a Modern *Whig* is the very Spawn of *Antichrist*, the Counterpart to *Popery*, the *Jesuits* Burn-Crack, the Shame of the Reformation, and the Scandal of Christianity.



"Inter Folia Fructus."

# A LETTER

FROM

His Excellencie the Lord  
General Monck,

AND THE OFFICERS UNDER HIS COMMAND,

TO THE

## *PARLIAMENT*

IN THE NAME OF THEMSELVES AND  
THE SOULDIER'S UNDER THEM.

~~~~~  
1659.
~~~~~

"HISTORY IS BUT THE UNROLLED SCROLL OF PROPHECY."

—JAMES A. GARFIELD



PRIVATELY PRINTED  
FOR THE CLARENDON HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

—  
1886.

*This edition is limited to 120 large paper, and 400 small paper copies,  
for Subscribers only.*

A  
LETTER

From His  
EXCELLENCIE

THE  
LORD GENERAL  
MONCK,

And the Officers under his Command,

TO THE

Parliament;

In the Name of Themselves and the  
Souldiers under Them.



LONDON :  
Printed by John Macock. 1660.





*A Letter of His Excellency  
and his Officers, &c.*



*Mr. Speaker,*

**W**E cannot but with thankfulness acknowledge the wonderful Goodness of God to you, in your Return to the Discharge of your remaining Trust; and to ourselves, and your Forces under our Commands, (after some difficulties) in bringing of us, by a tedious March, in such safety to this place, to wait upon you in asserting the Freedoms of our Native Country : and being here, (as we have to our utmost Hazard and Power been instrumental in your Return, so) we shall be still ready to pursue your Commands so far as possibly we may. To evidence which, we have observed and executed your late Orders in relation to the Chains, Posts, and Gates of the City; which was something grievous to Us, and to the Officers and Souldiers under our Commands; and that because we do not remember any such thing was acted upon this City in all these Wars; and we fear that many sober people are much grieved at it, and apprehend further force to be offered to them, while they seem principally to desire the speedy filling up of the House, which you have declared for, as well as we have express'd our just desires of; and are apt to doubt, lest, what we have done, may be so far from answering the expected end, as

that it may encrease the discomposure of mens spirits in the Nation. Upon this occasion, it comes fresh into our minds, that when by the treachery of some Officers of the Army you were interrupted, we declared to the world, That *the Ground of our undertaking was not onely your return to your Trust*, but also, *the Vindication of the Liberties of the People, and the Preservation of the Rights of our Country, the Protection and encouragement of the Godly and Faithful therein, as the establishment of the Peace of these Nations*. Which Declarations made before the Lord, Angels and Men, in the day of our Extremity, we (as we expect the blessing of the Lord upon our future Undertakings) cannot but still own, and stand by.

We finde that the asserting of the just Liberties of the People, is that which the generality of the Nation is much in expectation of; and that many sober people (together with our selves) are under fears lest this great price that God hath put into your and our hands, (as your Servants) should not be improved, but that we shall run in Confusion again. Therefore we humbly crave leave to present before you, some Grounds of our Fears: We are affraid that the late wonderful and unparalleld Deliverance, is not so publicly and solemnly acknowledged as it might be, that the Lord (who wrought so stupendiously) may have the Glory of all: We are troubled that some as yet do sit in the House, who are impeached of Treason: We cannot but observe that divers Members of your House, (who contrary to their Trust, acted in that Illegal and Tyrannical Committee of Safety) are not actually disabled from sitting there: notwithstanding Colonel *Lambert* hath onely the Vote of Indemnity to secure him from as High Crimes as have been committed in this Nation, and is not obedient to your Orders, yet he seemeth to be winked at. We understand that Sir *Henry Vane* upon bare pretence is permitted to stay about the City, to the great Dissatisfaction of your best Friends; that there are dangerous Consultations, and that of those who had a chief hand in your late Interruption, and the hazarding of the whole Nations, contrary to our Expectation. VVe find continued



in the Army some Persons of dangerous Principles, and such who were active enough in the late Defection. Though we are far from wishing the ruine of any, yet we could desire that your signal Indulgence to late Notorious Offenders, did meet with that Candid Reception from them as to be so much the more ingenious in their professed Repentance: but we observe that many of them do seek to justify themselves, and are not without their Agents in print to palliate their foul enormities; which maketh us yet to suspect that we are in some danger of returning into the late distempers that You and the Nation are but newly delivered from.

We are not ignorant, that there are those who lately struck at the Root of *English Parliaments* in Practise and Design, thereby have inflamed the Nation, and given great advantage to the Common Enemy, yet they are not without a strange confidence to precipitate men into a belief, that they are the only Persons against the One, and for the Other. With grief of heart we do remember and would lament over the too palpable Breach of Engagements in this Nation; Therefore we should think it a duty rather to mourn over the same, than to promote any new Oath to be taken at this time: Yet we perceive that there is a design to provoke the Parliament to enforce an Oath upon the Nation, and do take notice, that amongst others, there are some who are most forward to promote the said design, who have made the least (if any) Conscience in keeping Engagements already taken. Here we must not silence our deep resentment of a bold Petition, and of dangerous consequence, which was lately presented to You, the consequence whereof (if You should answer their desires) would be to exclude many of the most conscientious and sober sort of men from serving under You in Civil and Military Employments, who have and would prove themselves most faithful; and a door would be opened in design to retrieve the Interest of those who have (by the just Hand of our Gracious God) made themselves so apparently obnoxious. Moreover (which is not the least part of the Venome of that Petition) we

clearly see the same Spirit, which of late would have pull'd away the by-you-declared-just Maintenance from Ministers, would now provoke You by an Oath to endanger the forcing away of many of the most Godly from their maintenance. In urging our fears from the premises that concerns some of different principles from us, we would not be thought to (as we do not) design any thing that may incur the censure of unjust rigidity. We freely profess our desires, that tenderness of Conscience may have its full just liberty, but we cannot in judgement, accompt that tenderness of Conscience which will not scruple at treachery it self, or any Unrighteousness to carry on corrupt Designs.

Having presented You with our fears, we shall adde our Resolution, That by the help of God we shall stand by You in the pursuance of what we have declared for; And therefore do make this humble Request to You: We could desire, That whilst You sit, Your utmost endeavours may be to manifest your affectionate desires for the Publique Good of these Nations; Our further desire is, That those Regiments under your consideration (whose Officers are not) may be speedily pass'd. And in regard we find that the Grand Cause of the present Heats and Dis-satisfactions in the Nation is, because they are not fully Represented in Parliament; and seeing no other probable Expedient whereby to keep the Nation in peace, then by filling up your Number; We must therefore make this our main desire, upon which we cannot but insist, that you would proceed to Issue forth Writts in Order to Elections: For the better effecting whereof we entreat, That You would conclude upon due and full Qualifications, that not only those who have been actually in Arms against the Parliament may be excluded, but also such who in the late Wars betwixt King and Parliament have declared their dis-affection to the Parliament: And because the distracted condition of this Nation is at this hour so evident and pressing, we are constrained for the just maintenance of Your Authority and the satisfaction of all true English Men, earnestly to desire, That all the Writts may be Issued forth by Friday next, returnable at the usual and legal time; For we think it

convenient to acquaint you, that to pacifie the minds of this Great City, in the prosecution of your late Commands, the Chief of Us did give an assurance thereof.

And we must not forget to remember you, that the time hastens wherein you have declared your intended Dissolution; which the People and our selves desire you would be punctual in. Hereby the Suspicion of your Perpetuation will be taken away, and the People will have assurance that they shall have a Succession of Parliaments of their own Election; which is the undoubted Right of the English Nation: You have promised and declared no less: Both the People and your Armies do live in the Hope and Expectation of it. That we may the better wait, for your full and free Concurrence to these just Desires on the Nations behalf, upon Mature Deliberation, we have thought it our duty as to continue the usual Guards for the safety of your sitting, so for the present to draw the rest of the Forces under our Command into the City, that we may have the better opportunity to compose spirits and beget a good understanding in that great City, formerly renowned for their resolute adhering to Parliamentary Authority, and we hope that the same spirit will be found still to breath amongst the best, most considerable, and interested persons there. This Action of ours, as we hope it will (through the blessing of God) be of good use for the present peace, and future settlement of these Nations. These are our thoughts which we communicate to you, in the Names of our selves, and the Officers and Souldiers under our Commands,

We are,

*Your Honors most  
humble Servants,*

*White-hal  
Feb. 11. 1659.*

*George Monck.  
371*

*Tho. Sanders. Tho. Read.*  
*Leon. Litcot. Ra. Knight.*  
*Jo. Clobery. Dan. Redman.*  
*Jo. Hublethorne.* } Colonels.

*Ethelbert Morgan, Lievt. Coll.*

*Nathaniel Barton, Major.*

*Tho. Johnson.*  
*Jer. Smith.*  
*Tho. Pryme.*  
*Fran. Nichols.*  
*Peter Banister.* } Majors.

~~~~~  
The End.
~~~~~

EXPLANATORY NOTES

OF

A PACK OF

Cavalier Playing Cards

TEMP. CHARLES II.

FORMING

A COMPLETE POLITICAL SATIRE

OF

THE COMMONWEALTH.

BY

EDMUND GOLDSMID, F.R.H.S.,

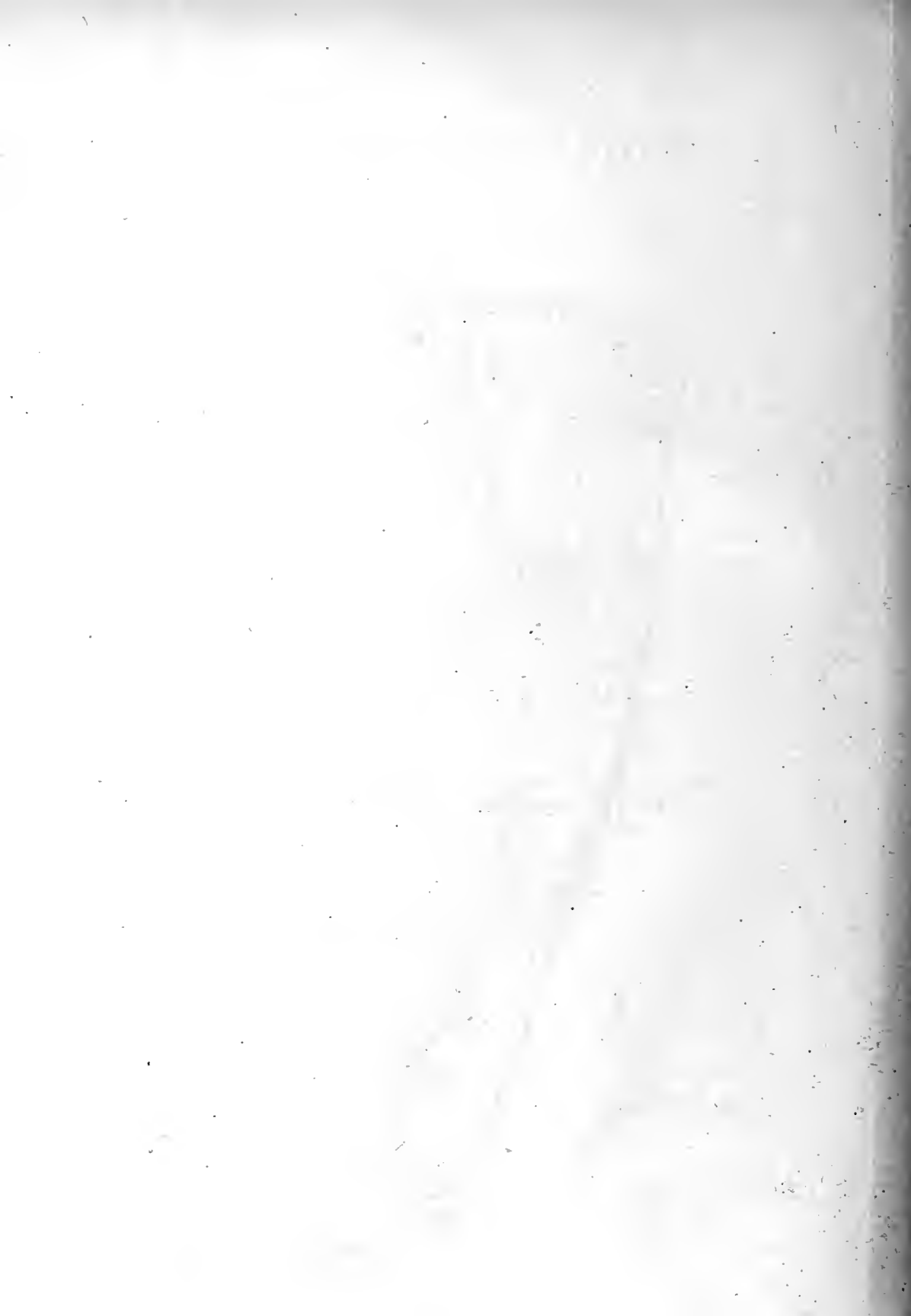
F.S.A. (Scot).



Edinburgh:

E. & G. GOLDSMID.

1886.



## Introduction.



THROUGH the courtesy of Lord Nelson, the very curious Pack of Cards here presented in *facsimile* was placed at the disposal of the AUNGERVYLE SOCIETY OF EDINBURGH. The Committee of this Society were very anxious to reproduce these extremely quaint memorials of a by-gone age, but on enquiry it was found that the cost of re-engraving the fifty-two cards on copper, the only really satisfactory method, would be far beyond the means of a Society then barely numbering 120 members. Being Honorary Secretary both the Aungervyle and Clarendon Historical Societies, I suggested that the work should be undertaken at the joint expense of the two Societies. This was rather outside the plans of the Clarendon, but the Committee at length agreed to provide a portion of the necessary funds on condition that after the fifty-two cards had been re-produced in thirteen plates, accompanied by a small explanatory pamphlet, a second series of the Cards, the precise *fac-simile* of the originals, should be presented to each member of the two Societies. There still remained, however, a considerable sum to be raised. I thereupon proposed, after satisfying the above conditions, to purchase the plates from the Societies. These are now in my possession. The work, executed by the firm of Murdoch and Son, of this City, is perfect in every detail, and heavy though the cost has been, I feel sure that in this case at any rate, the object aimed at has been fully attained. Not a line, not a stroke of the original, but appears in exact counterpart in the reprint.

Lord Nelson, unfortunately, had lost, or never had in his possession, two Cards, the ace and three of hearts. After much trouble, these have been supplied from another source, and, with the exception that the figures of Cromwell and Fairfax in the latter are on a somewhat smaller scale than those on the threes of the other suits, it would be difficult to suspect that they did not belong to the original pack.

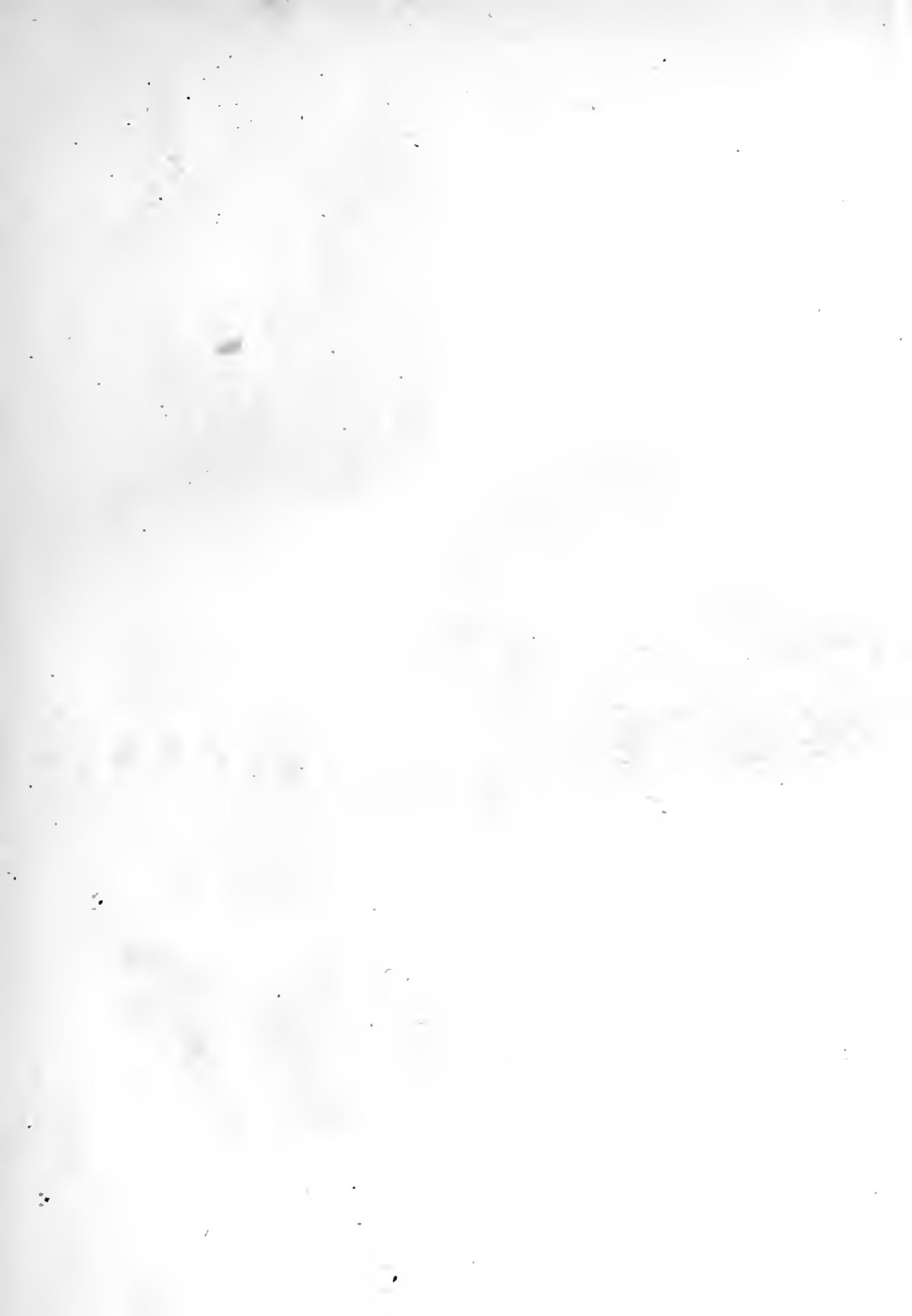
In the following notes, I have merely attempted to explain the allusions contained in the Cards. A few however remain riddles to me.

EDMUND GOLDSMID.

EDINBURGH, 12th October 1885.









# A PACK OF CAVALIER PLAYING CARDS.

(Circa 1660.)



## 1. Ace of Hearts.

*Cromwell, Ireton and Hudson all in y<sup>e</sup> same boate.*

In 1650, Cromwell was named Commander-in-Chief in Ireland; Ireton, his son-in-law, his deputy; and Hewson or Huson (here misprinted Hudson) governor of Dublin. In the plate they are sailing away from the sun of loyalty towards the night of treason. The portrait of Cromwell at the stern is not to be mistaken. Next to him is Hewson distinguished from Ireton by his older features.



## 2. Ace of Clubs.

*A Free State or a Toleration for all sorts of Villany.*

In the *Mystery of the Good Old Cause*\* (London 1660) a Royalist attack on the leading members of the Long Parliament, the author says of the Roundheads, "Their pretences were no doubt the most specious and plausible that could be imagined, . . . but, alas! never were these things more pretended to, and less in reality

---

\* Reprinted by the Aungervyle Society. Second Series.

designed ; greatness, wealth and command were the inducements of the most hypocritical persons in the world to profane the name of God . . . . to murder many innocent persons . . . . to ruin many noble families, etc., . . . . but let destruction be the reward of our destroyers, let the prey be torn out of their teeth, let the blood they have shed fall upon their own heads, and let their names be detested and infamous to all posterity !”

---

### 3. Ace of Spades.

*Bradshaw, the jaylor and ye hangman, keepers of the liberty of England.*

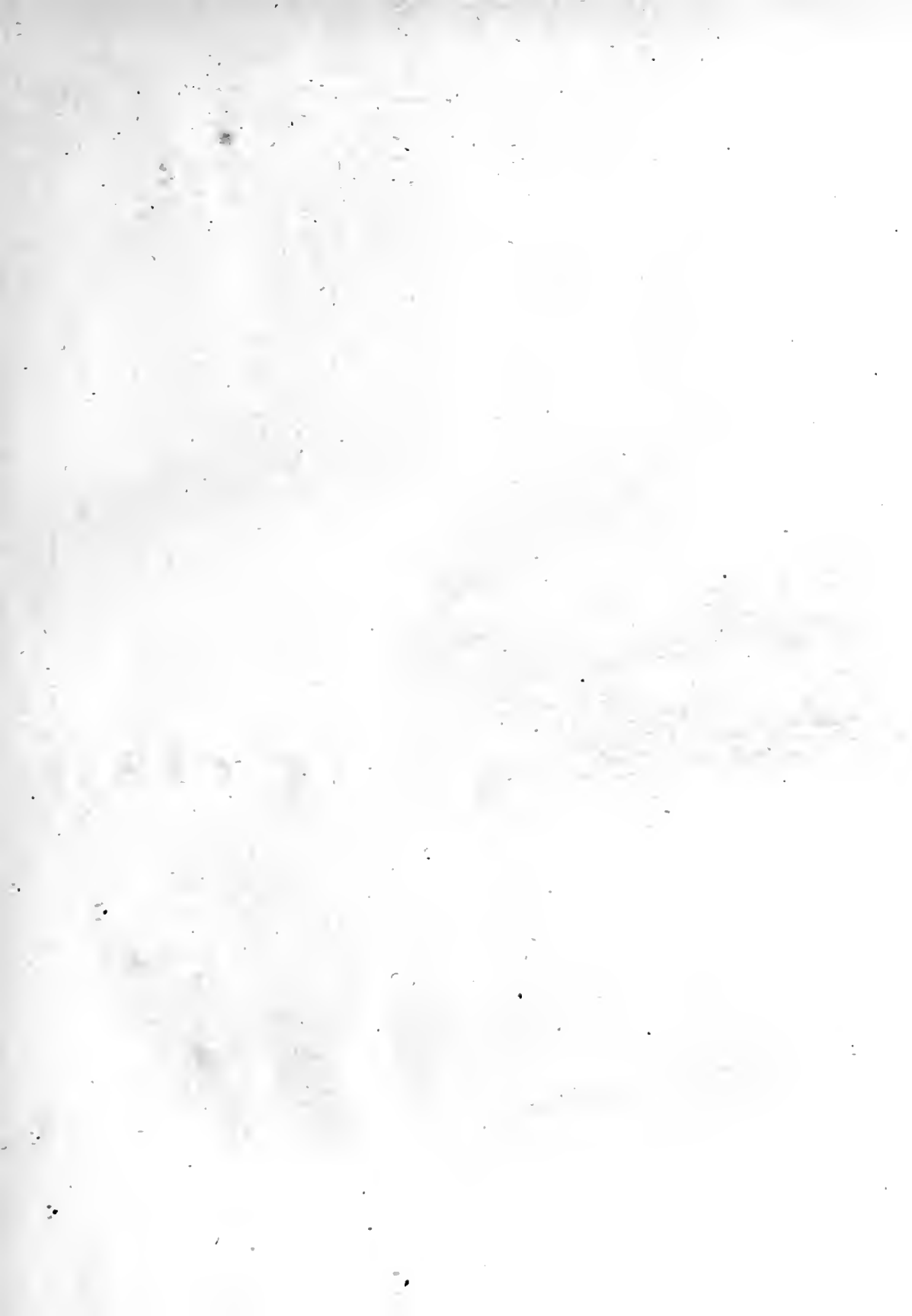
Bradshaw was appointed president of the High Court of Justice in 1648, a year “of reproach and infamy above all years which had passed before it ; a year of the highest dissimulation and hypocrisy, of the deepest villany and most bloody treasons, that any nation was ever cursed with or under : a year, in which the memory of all transactions ought to be erased from all records, lest, by the success of it, atheism, infidelity and rebellion, should be propagated in the world.” (*Clarendon's History of the Rebellion*, vol. iii. p. 154, Oxford 1726, folio). He was born in 1586, died in 1659, and his body exhumed and hung in chains at the Restoration. He was a cousin of Milton, who has written a Eulogy of him in his *Second Defense of the People of England*.

---

### 4. Ace of Diamonds.

*The High Court of Justice or Oliver's Slaughter-House.*

“The charge and accusation, upon which they resolved to proceed against the King, being thus settled and agreed upon, they began to consider in what manner and form to proceed, that there might be





some appearance of justice. . . . A new form they did erect never before heard of. They constituted and erected a Court that should be called the High Court of Justice. The number of the Judges named was about an hundred and fifty . . . . Bradshaw . . . . was named president . . . . and with great humility accepted the office, which he administered with all the pride, impudence, and superciliousness imaginable."—(*Clarendon's History of the Rebellion*, vol. iii. p. 138-139).

---

## 5. II of Hearts.

*Onsley. Father and Sonne.*

This is evidently a misprint for Onslow. Sir Richard Onslow, Kt., "of the old stamp, a gentleman of Surrey, of good parts and considerable revenue," successfully weathered the tempests of the period. He was commander at the siege of Basing House, was driven from the House of Commons by Pride's Purge, and was afterwards at the head of a Surrey regiment at Worcester. He spoke strongly in favour of Cromwell's becoming king. Later he became a member of the Convention Parliament which restored Charles II.

---

## 6. II of Clubs.

*Lenthall. Father and Sonn.*

William Lenthall, of Lincoln's Inn, a Counsellor at Law, and Speaker of the House of Commons. "Oliver (Cromwell) once made a sponge of him, and squeezed him out of £15,000. Who turning him and his tribe out of doors, he veered about to save himself and his great offices; and he that had been so long bell-weather in the Commons House, was thought, for his compliance and his money, to deserve to be one of the herd of Lords in the Other House," (*Mystery of the Good Old Cause*.) John Lenthall, son of the speaker, was knighted by Oliver Cromwell, made a Colonel of foot, and Governor of Windsor Castle.

## 7. II of Spades.

*Parry. Father and Sonne.*

Query, Sir George Parry, one of the Commissioners for Dorsetshire, who with those of Somerset and Cornwall, met Prince Rupert at Bridgewater shortly before the Battle of Naseby?—(*Clarendon's History of the Rebellion*, vol. ii. p. 393).

## 8. II of Diamonds.

*Vane. Father and Sonne.*

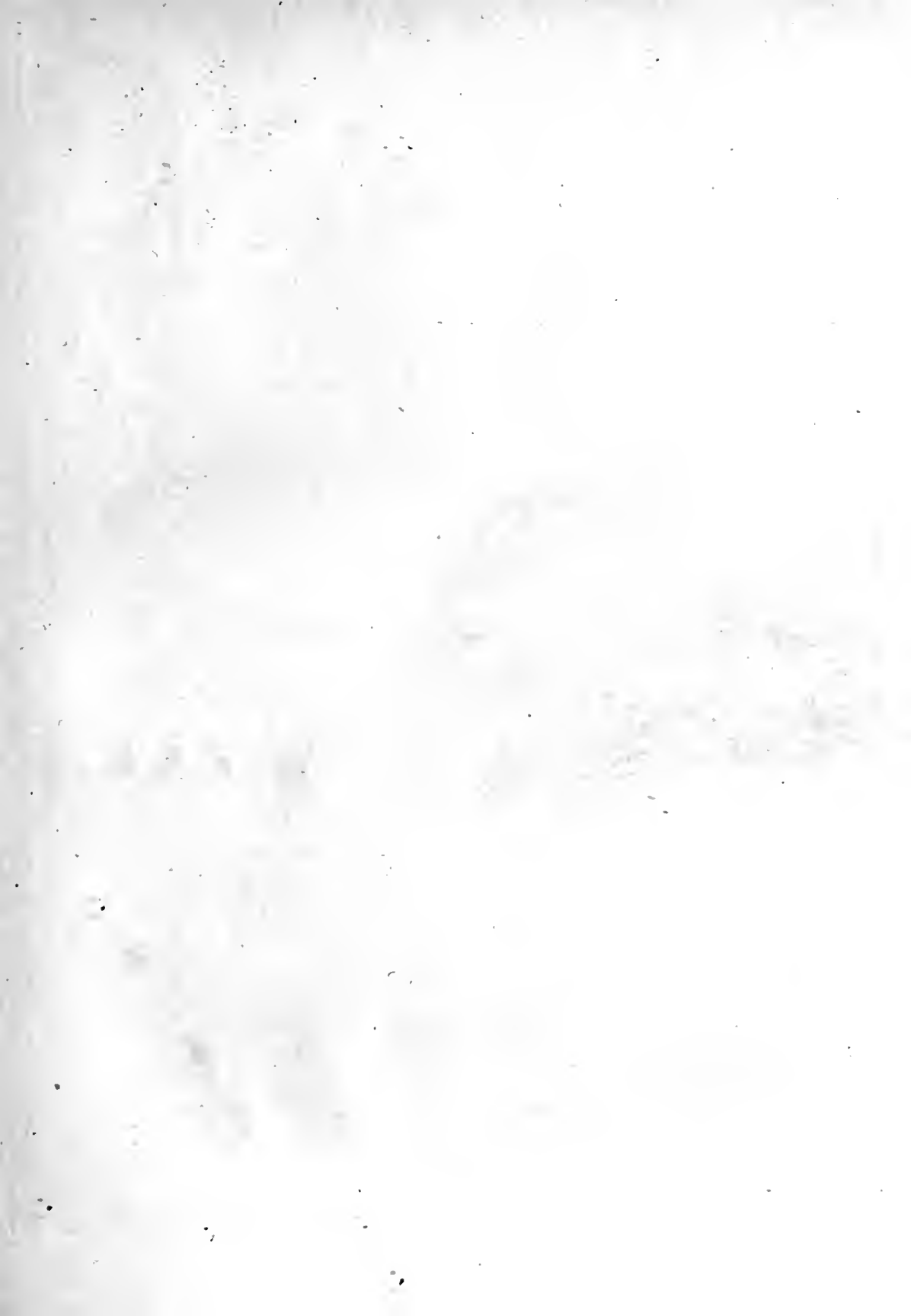
"Sir Henry Vane was of very ordinary parts by Nature, and had not cultivated them at all by art, for he was illiterate. But being of a stirring and boisterous disposition, very industrious and very bold, he still wrought himself into some employment. . . . His malice to the Earl of Strafford transported him to all imaginable thoughts of revenge, . . . and that disposed him to sacrifice his honour and faith and his Master's interest, that he might ruin the Earl, and was buried himself in the same ruin; for which, being justly chastised by the King and being turned out of his service, he was left to his own despair. . . . He grew into the hatred and contempt of those who had made most use of him; and dyed in universal reproach, and not more contemn'd by any of his enemies than by his own son; who had been his principal conductor to destruction."—(*Clarendon's History of the Rebellion*, vol. ii., p. 132).

Sir Harry Vane, the younger, "was a man of extraordinary parts. . . . He was chosen to cozen a whole nation which was thought to excel in craft and cunning,\* which he did with notable pregnancy and dexterity."—(*Clarendon's History of the Rebellion*, vol. ii., p. 233). "He totally ousted Sir William Russel. He was a discontent during all Oliver's and Richard's government. He is, no doubt, a man of much religion, and would have become one of the rulers in Israel, if the intended match between his son and Lambert's daughter had not been spoiled by the restitution of the Rump."—(*Mystery of the Good Old Cause.*)

---

\* The Scots.







## 9. III of Hearts.

*"Cromwell pypeth unto Fairfax."*

Cromwell is here represented playing the pipe and tabor to Fairfax, who is performing a Morris dance. This dance was brought to England in the reign of Edward III., it is said by John of Gaunt. It was originally a military dance, in which bells were jingled, and swords clashed. The word *Morris* is a corruption of *Moorish*. In ancient times it used to be danced by five men and a boy, but in the reign of Elizabeth, we have an instance of Kempe, one of Shakespeare's colleagues at the Globe Theatre, having danced alone all the way from London to Norwich.—(*Kemp's nine daies wonder*, reprinted in Goldsmid's *Collectanea Adamantæa*, No. 29). Thomas, Lord Fairfax, warmly espoused the cause of the Parliament when the rupture with the King took place. He was, however, opposed to the execution of the King, and became a warm advocate of the Restoration. He died in 1671.

## 10. III of Clubs.

*"Bulstrode and Whitlock present to Oliver the instrument of Government."*

On the 26th of June, 1657, the ceremony of conferring the protectorate on Cromwell took place. "After a short speech, . . . Withrington, the Speaker, with the Earl of Warwick and Whitlock. vested him with a rich purple velvet robe lined with crmines; . . . then the Speaker presented him with a fair Bible of the largest edition, richly bound; then he, in the name of all the people, girded a sword about him; and lastly, presented him with a sceptre of gold, which he put in his hand, and made him a large discourse of those emblems of government and authority. Upon the close of which, there being little wanting to a perfect formal Coronation but a crown

and an Archbishop, he took his oath, administered to him by the Speaker.—(*Clarendon's History of the Rebellion*, Vol. III., page 343.) Bulstrode and Whitlock spoken of as two men on the Card, are one and the same. "Bulstrode Whitlocke, . . . before the troubles was an intimate friend to Sir Richard Lane, who, going to Oxford, entrusted him with his chambers in the Temple; of which, with all the goods and an excellent library, he hath kept possession ever since; and would not own that ever he knew such a man, when Sir Richard's son was brought to wait upon him in his greatness . . . Under Dick he was made Commissioner of the Seal; and, he being discarded, wheeled about and worshipped the Rump. . . . He hath a good fleece, and heir to Lilly the Astrologer."—(*Mystery of the Good Old Cause*).

---

### 11. III of Spades.

"*H. Martin defends Ralph, who design'd to kill the King.*"

"Henry Martin, colonel of a regiment of horse and a regiment of whores. He had given him £3000 at one time, to put him upon the Holy Sisters, and take off from the Levellers. He had the reputation of a precious saint from his youth, in reference to all kinds of debauchery, uncleanness, and fraud, having sold his estate three times over."—(*Mystery of the Good Old Cause*).

---

### 12. III of Diamonds.

"*Simonias sland'ring y<sup>e</sup> High Priest to get his place.*"

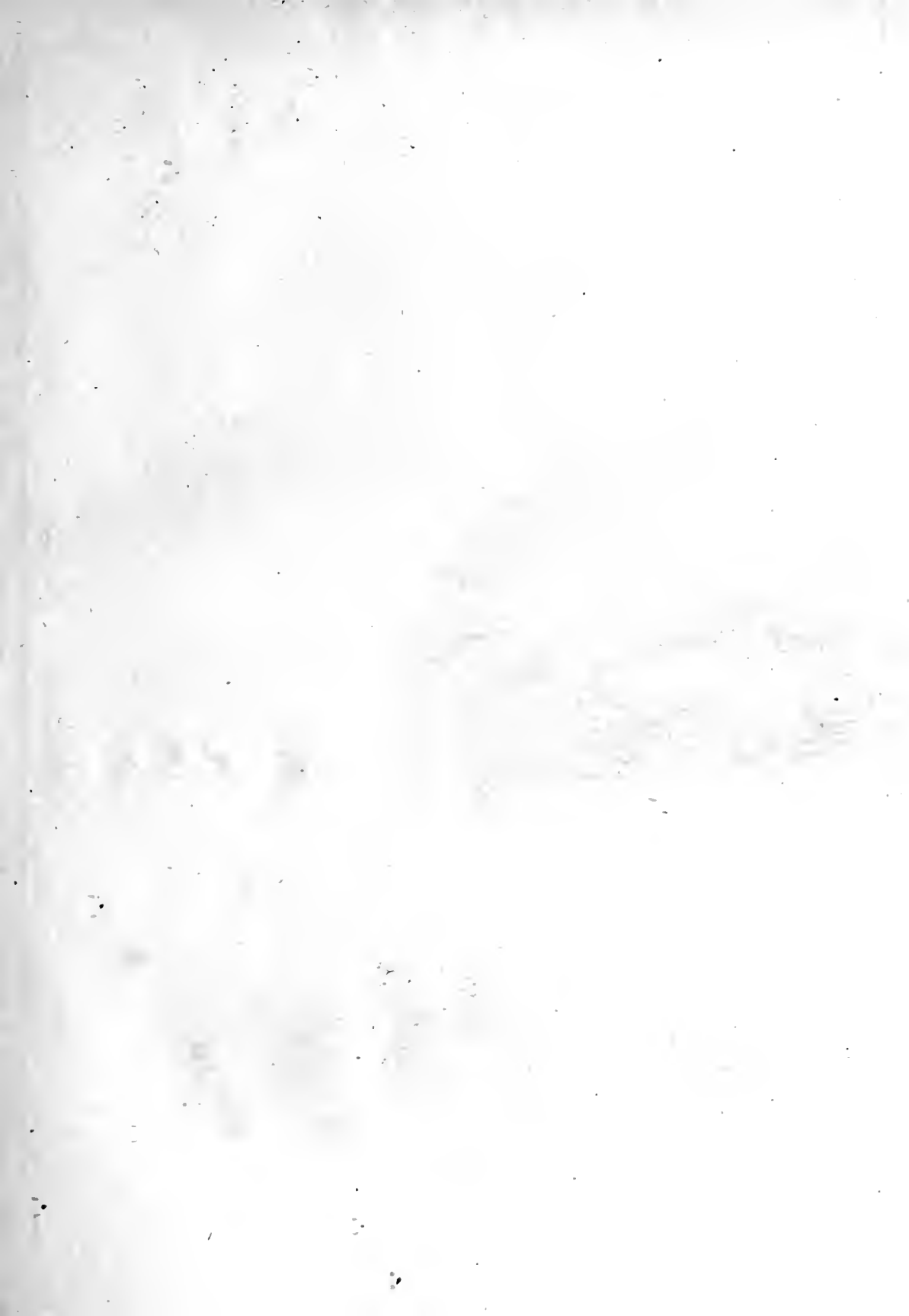
One of the riddles I have spoken of in the Introduction, unless it refers to Cromwell having urged the trial of the King.

---

### 13. IV of Hearts.

"*The Rump roasted salt it well it stinks exceedingly.*"

The long parliament, not proving itself sufficiently complacent,





Colonel Pride entered the House with two regiments of soldiers, imprisoned 60 members, drove 160 into the streets, and left only 60. These were called the Rump. The name was revived in the Protectorate of Richard Cromwell, and to distinguish the two, the former was called the *Bloody Rump*, and the latter the *Rump of a Rump*.

"The few,  
Because they're wasted to the stumps,  
Are represented best by rumps."

(Butler's *Hudibras*, Part iii).

## 14. IV of Clubs.

*"A Covenanting Scot and an English Independent differ about ye  
things of this world."*

"There was a wonderful difference, throughout their whole proceedings, between the heads of those who were thought to sway the Presbyterian Counsels, and those who govern'd the Independents, though they were equally masters of dissimulation, and had equally malice and wickedness in their intentions, though not of the same kind . . . . The Presbyterians submitted to their senseless and wretched clergy; whose infectious breath corrupted, and govern'd the People, and whose authority was prevalent upon their own wives, and in their domestic affairs in order to corrupt and seduce them. . . . whereas Cromwell and the Independents . . . . considered what was necessary to their main end; and then, whether it were right or wrong, made all other means subservient to it; couzen'd and deceiv'd men as long as they could induce them to contribute to what they desired; and when they would keep company with them no longer, compelled them by force to submit to what they should not be able to oppose: and so the one resolv'd, only to do what they believ'd the People would like and approve; and the other, that the People should like and approve what they had resolv'd." (*Clarendon's History of the Rebellion*, vol. iii., pp. 63-64).

## 15. IV of Spades.

*"Argyle a muckle Scotch knave in gude faith Sir."*

Archibald Campbell, Marquis of Argyle, a zealous partisan of the Covenanters, and the opponent of Montrose. Born in 1598 he succeeded to his fathers titles in 1638. In the same year he was called to London with other Scotch Nobles, and advised the abolition of Episcopacy in Scotland. In 1641 he was created Marquis. He acquiesced in the Protectorate of Cromwell, and for this at the restoration he was committed to the Tower. In 1661 he was sent to Scotland, tried for high treason and beheaded.

## 16. IV of Diamonds.

*"Laird of Warriston an arrant knave An my Soul man."*

"It was agreed that the committee of safety should consist of three-and-twenty persons, . . . men try'd, and faithful to the public interest . . . besides three or four others who had been the kings judges, with Warreston, Vane, Steel, and Whitlock."—*Clarendon's History of the Rebellion*, vol. iii. p. 402).

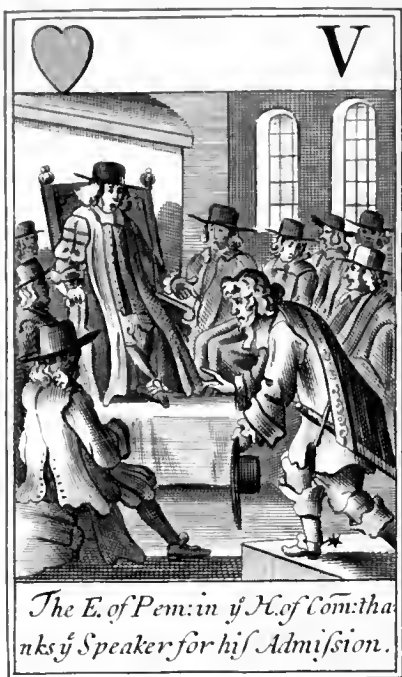
## 17. V of Hearts.

*"The E. of Pem.: in ye H. of Com. thanks ye Speaker for his Admission."*

On the 29th of January 1643, a letter was addressed by Members of both Houses at Oxford to the Earl of Essex. Clarendon observes "This letter was subscribed by His Highness the Prince, the Duke of York, and three-and-forty Dukes, Marquises, Earls, Viscounts, and Barons, and 118 Members of the House of Commons; . . . so that the numbers at London were very thin; for there were not above two-and-twenty peers, who either sat in the Parliament, or were engaged in their party; that is to say, the Earls of Northumberland, Pembroke, Essex, etc."—(*Clarendon's History of the Rebellion*, vol. ii. p. 274).







According to Clarendon, vol. ii. pp. 127-128, the Earl of Pembroke was a weak man with a great sense of his own importance, whom disappointed ambition "Got into actual rebellion, which he never intended to do."

---

### 18. V of Clubs.

*"Sir H. Mildmay beaten by a foot boy, a great breach of privilege."*

It is said that in the year 1642, Sir H. Mildmay got mixed up in a brawl in Fleet Street. Whether this Card alludes to that fact or not, I cannot tell. Clarendon states that Sir John Danvers and Sir H. Mildmay were the only two members of the High Court of Justice, whom the King knew besides the officers in the army.—(*Clarendon's History of the Rebellion*, vol. iii, p. 144).

---

### 19. V of Spades.

*"Nye and Godwin, Oliver's Confessors."*

In "an ordinance appointing Commissioners for approbation of *Publique Preachers*," printed by "William Du Gard and Henry Hills printers to His Highness the Lord Protector" 1653, appear the names of Dr. Thomas Goodwin and Mr. Philip Nye as Commissioners for such approbation. A copy of the pamphlet is in my possession, and it will be reprinted by the Clarendon Historical Society at an early date.

---

### 20. V of Diamonds.

*"Sir W. Waller looses two armys yet getts by ye bargain."*

Sir William Waller was defeated at the battle of Roundway Down by Lord Wilmot, losing 600 killed, 900 prisoners, all their cannon, arms, ammunition and baggage. He was again defeated at Cropredy

Bridge, by the army under the King in person, when he again lost all his artillery. He was however, subsequently named Lieutenant of Ireland.—(*Clarendon's History of the Rebellion*, vol. ii. p. 179; p. 311; and vol. iii. p. 70).

---

## 21. VI of Hearts.

*"Worsley an Inckle Weaver A man of personal valor."*

Worsley, one of Cromwell's Major-Generals, and a most dear friend of his, was the first M.P. for Manchester, and his statue is in the Town Hall. . . . The *inckles* were tapes; and the word comes into Shakespeare's *Winter's Tale*. The word is now very little known, except in a proverb, "As thick (*i.e.* as intimate) as Inckle-weavers." I do not see this pack mentioned in the History of Playing Cards. Can the date of publication be proved? It looks as if they were intended to keep up the spirit of the Cavaliers in depressed times.—*Communicated by John Bailey, Esq., F.S.A., Manchester.*

---

## 22. VI of Clubs.

*"Desbrow Olivers Champion haueing a cannon in each pocket."*

With reference to the proposal in Parliament to elect Cromwell King, Clarendon observes: "That which put an end to the present debate was that some of his own family who had grown up under him, and had their whole dependance upon him, as Desborough, Flectwood, Whaley, and others, passionately contradicted the motion."—(*Clarendon's History of the Rebellion*, vol. iii., page 339.)

---

## 23. VI of Spades.

*"Skippon a waggoner to Sr. F. Vere one of Olivers Hectors."*

Major-General Skippon was left in charge of the Army by the











Earl of Essex, when the latter fled from Fowey to Plymouth. Skippon surrendered all his Artillery, 100 barrels of powder, and about 6000 arms (muskets) on condition that the officers should be convoyed in safety to Poole or Southampton. Skippon was originally a waggoner, as stated in the Card.—(*Clarendon's History of Rebellion*, vol. ii., page 327.)

---

## 24. VI of Diamonds.

*"Kelsey, a sneaking Bodice maker a gifted Brother."*

On October 17th, 1645, a "summons to surrender was sent to the Garrison (of Langford House, near Salisbury) and *fair and equal conditions* were speedily agreed upon, Lieutenant Colonel Hewson and Major Kelsey being deputed to act for Cromwell."—(*Godwin's Civil War in Hampshire*, page 248.) This is probably the individual alluded to.

---

## 25. VII of Hearts.

*"Nathaniel Fiennes whereby hangs a tale."*

"Colonel Nathaniel Fiennes, brother of Lord Say and Sele, who had been educated at Winchester College, and had been admitted to a Fellowship at New College, Oxford, in quality of Founder's kin, surrendered Bristol to Prince Rupert on 26 July (1643.) and on the last day of the same month reached Southampton, at the head of 80 horse, each of whom had a woman riding behind him."—*Mercurius Aulicus*, August 5th, 1643.) This, I presume, is the tale alluded to.

---

## 26. VII of Clubs.

*"Harrison the Carpenter cutting down ye horne of ye beast in Daniel."*

Harrison was the son of a butcher near Nantwich, in Cheshire, and he it was who, with Ireton, succeeded in bringing the King

before the High Court of Justice.—(*Clarendon's History of the Rebellion*, vol. iii., page 141.) Of the beast in Daniel, it is said, "I beheld, and the same horn made war with the Saints . . . but the judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy it unto the end."—(Daniel, chap. vii., verses 21 and 26.)

---

## 27. VII of Spades.

*"Feek the seer."*

Feek was one of Cromwell's officers, who at the celebrated meeting at Windsor, in 1648, declared that in a vision the Almighty had appeared to him and announced that Monarchy should never more prevail in England.—(*The Saints Triumph*, 1648, page 3.)

---

## 28. VII of Diamonds.

*"Marshall curseing Mevoz."*

At Edgehill, "the reverend and renowned Master Marshall, Master Ask, Master Mourton, Masters Obadiah and John Sedgwick and Master Wilkins, and divers others, eminently pious and learned pastors rode up and down the army through the thickest dangers and in much personal hazard most faithfully and courageously exhorting and encouraging the soldiers to fight valiantly and not to fly, but now, if ever, to stand to it and fight for their religion and laws."—(*Jehovah Jirah*, by John Vicars, p. 200.)

---

## 29. VIII of Hearts.

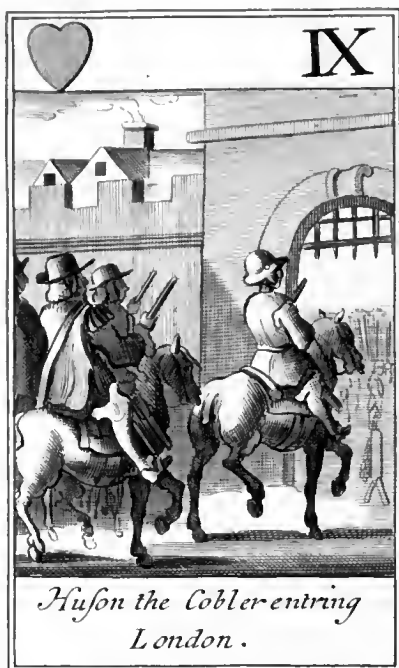
*"Lambert Kt. of y<sup>e</sup> golden Tulip."*

When Lambert was cashiered by Parliament, he and eight other officers of the Army conspired to wrest the power from Parliament. The badge adopted by the conspirators was a yellow tulip.









## 30. VIII of Clubs.

*"Pride Oliver's drayman."*

Parliament not proving willing to condemn Charles I., was *purged* of its unruly members by Colonel Pride, (who was said to have been originally a drayman) who entered the house and drove 160 members into the streets, leaving 60 of the *faithful* to govern the kingdom and murder their monarch.—(Imprisonment and death of King Charles I., Aungervyle Society reprint, p. 58).

---

## 31. VIII of Spades.

*"Scot Oliver's clerk or tallyman."*

Scott was one of the members of the long parliament, and with Robinson was sent to Monk to "give some check to that license of addresses and resort of malignants."—*Clarendon's Rebellion*, vol. iii. p. 410.

---

## 32. VIII of Diamonds.

*"Don Haselrigg Kt. of ye codled braine."*

"Haselrigg was of a rude, and stubborn nature, and of a weak understanding."—(*Clarendon's Rebellion*, vol. iii. p. 401).

---

## 33. IX of Hearts.

*"Huson the cobbler entring London."*

Hewson, who had originally been a cobbler, became Lt.-Col. of Cromwell's Ironsides.

## 34. IX of Clubs.

*"The army entering the city pursuing the apprentices."*

Parliament had voted that "the militia of the city of London should be put into such hands as the army should desire. . . . Many thousands, apprentices and young citizens, brought petitions to parliament" in opposition. Parliament "durst not deny concurrence, the apprentices behaving themselves so insolently, that they would scarce suffer the door of the House of Commons to be shut."—(*Clarendon's Rebellion*, vol. iii. p. 36). The army assembled at Hounslow Heath, and Colonel Rainsborough having seized in the night the defences of London Bridge, "the army of horse, foot and cannon marched next day through the city."—(*Clarendon's Rebellion*, vol. iii. p. 39).

---

## 35. IX of Spades.

*"A Committee at Derby House to continue the warr."*

Parliament had appointed a committee "for the raising of men . . and listing in all places, companies of volunteers" which met at Derby House.

---

## 36. IX of Diamonds.

*"Lenthall runs away with his mace to the army."*

The Army having declared against the Committee of Safety, Lenthall the Speaker recovered his spirit and went into the city uniting with the army against the committee.—(*Clarendon's Rebellion*, vol. iii., p. 407.)

---







## 37. X of Hearts.

*"The Rump and dreggs of the house of Com. remaining after the good Members were purged out."*

The explanation of this Card will be found above. (See VIII of Clubs.)

---

## 38. X of Clubs.

*"Oliver seeking God while the K. is murdered by his order."*

Cromwell who signed the warrant for the Execution of Charles I., is said to have spent the night of the 29th of January, 1648, in prayer, and to have taken good care to let his fanatic followers know it.

---

## 39. X of Spades.

*"A comitte at Haberdashers hall to spoyle the caualeers, as the Jews did the Egyptians."*

Parliament, after the battle of Edgehill appointed a committee to sit at Haberdashers Hall to consider the fines to be imposed upon those of the King's adherents who had been taken prisoners there.

---

## 40. X of Diamonds.

*"A comittee for plundered ministers, Miles Corbet in the chaire."*

This card speaks for itself.

---

## 41. Knave of Hearts.

*"Hugh Peters shews the bodkins and thimbles giuen by the wives of Wappin for the good old cause."*

Hugh Peters was born at Fowey, publicly whipped and expelled from the University of Cambridge, and obliged to leave England for

adultery. After some years spent in Holland and America, he returned in 1641, and became chaplain to Lord Brooke's regiment. He was a most burlesque preacher, and actually performed the act stated on the card. He styled the king Barabbas and compared the army to Christ. He advised the destruction of Stonehenge. Clarendon calls him the "ungodly confessor" who contrived the tragedy of the two Hothams (*Rebellion*, vol. ii. p. 383). He is said to have been one of the masked executioners of Charles I. He was beheaded October 16th 1660, and certainly deserved his fate if any of the Regicides did.

---

#### 42. Knave of Clubs.

*"Ireton holds that saints may pass through all forms to obtain his ends."*

Ireton was born in 1610, and commanded the left wing of the Parliamentarians at Naseby. He married a daughter of Oliver Cromwell, whom he succeeded as Commander-in-Chief in Ireland, where he died in 1651.

---

#### 43. Knave of Spades.

*"Sir H. Vane finds a distinction betwixt a Legal and an Evangelical Conscience."*

Vane was the principal mover of the Solemn League and Covenant, but did not sit on the King's trial.

---

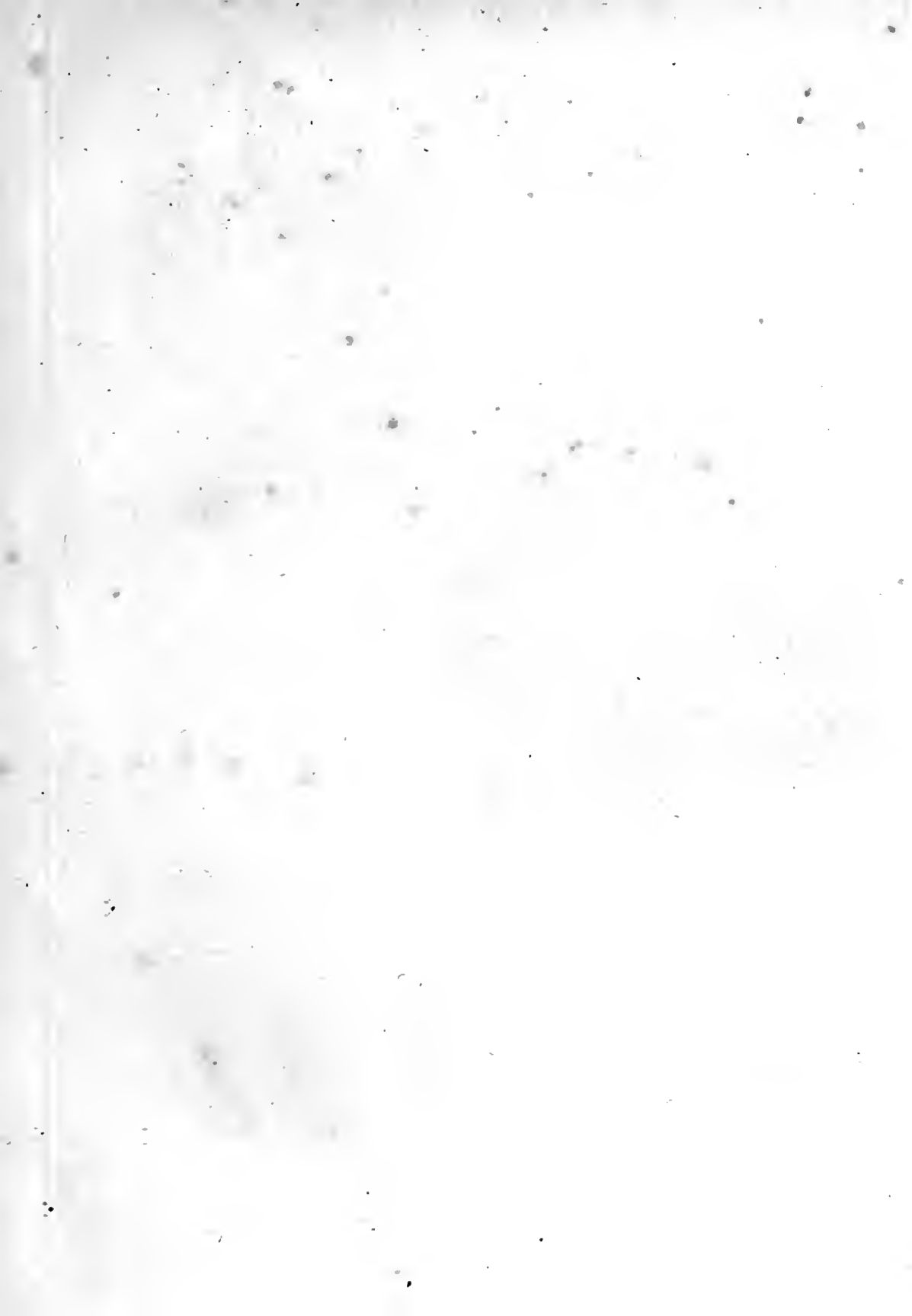
#### 44. Knave of Diamonds.

*"H. Martin moves ye House that ye King may take the Covenant."*

Martin, Vane and Hazelrigg were the principal supporters of the self-denying Ordinance.











### 46. Queen of Hearts.

*"The damnable engagement to be true and faithfull."*

The taking of the Holy League and Covenant. (See Queen of Diamonds).

---

### 47. Queen of Clubs.

*"Joane hold my staff Lady Protectoresse."*

Another riddle. Cromwell's wife's name was Elizabeth. *Query, what was Lady Lambert's name? (See next card).*

---

### 48. Queen of Spades.

*"The lady Lambert and Oliver under a strong conflict."*

It was said that an improper intimacy existed between Cromwell and Lambert's wife, but although the Protector is known to have been somewhat profligate in his youth, this charge seems to be mere calumny.

---

### 49. Queen of Diamonds.

*"The Takeing of the Holy League and Covenant."*

The Holy League and Covenant between England and Scotland was solemnly adopted by Parliament on the 16th of November 1643. It was accepted by Charles II. in 1650, but repudiated by him at his Restoration, and declared to be illegal by Parliament.—(*Clarendon's Rebellion*, vol. ii. p. 229).

---

## 50. King of Hearts.

*"The saints think it meet that the Rump make a league with Oneale."*

Lord Broghill, president of Munster, and Sir Charles Coote, president of Connaught had shewn enmity to the Rump, who thereupon coquetted with the Irish party.—(*Clarendon's Rebellion*, vol. iii. p. 434).

---

## 51. King of Clubs.

*"Oliver declares himself, and the Rebels to be the Gadly party."*

This card needs no explanation.

---

## 52. King of Spades.

*"Bradshaw in ye High Court of Justice insulting of the King."*

"The King demanded by what authority they brought him thither, the President answered that they derived their authority from an act made by the Commons . . . The King demurred to the jurisdiction of the Court, but the President overruled this." When the iniquitous sentence was read, "The King would have spoken something before he was withdrawn, but being accounted dead in law immediately after sentence was pronounced, it was not permitted."—(*Ludlow's Imprisonment and Death of Charles I.—Aungervyle Soc. Rep.* pp. 62-65).

---





## 53. King of Diamonds.

*"Sir H. Mildmay solicits a Cityzen's wife, for which his owne corrects him."*

On September 9, 1641, the House of Commons appointed Pym, St. John, Sir H. Mildmay, Sir H. Vane, and others (six to form a quorum), as a Committee, with extraordinary powers, to act during the recess, "To draw resort and reverence to them from almost all sorts of men." Mildmay is said to have used his political power to further his own projects of lust and greed.—(*Clarendon's Rebellion*, vol. i., pp. 168 *et seq.*).

**f i n i s.**

COLLEGE

LIBRARY  
F. MICHAELI & CO. LTD.







